



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



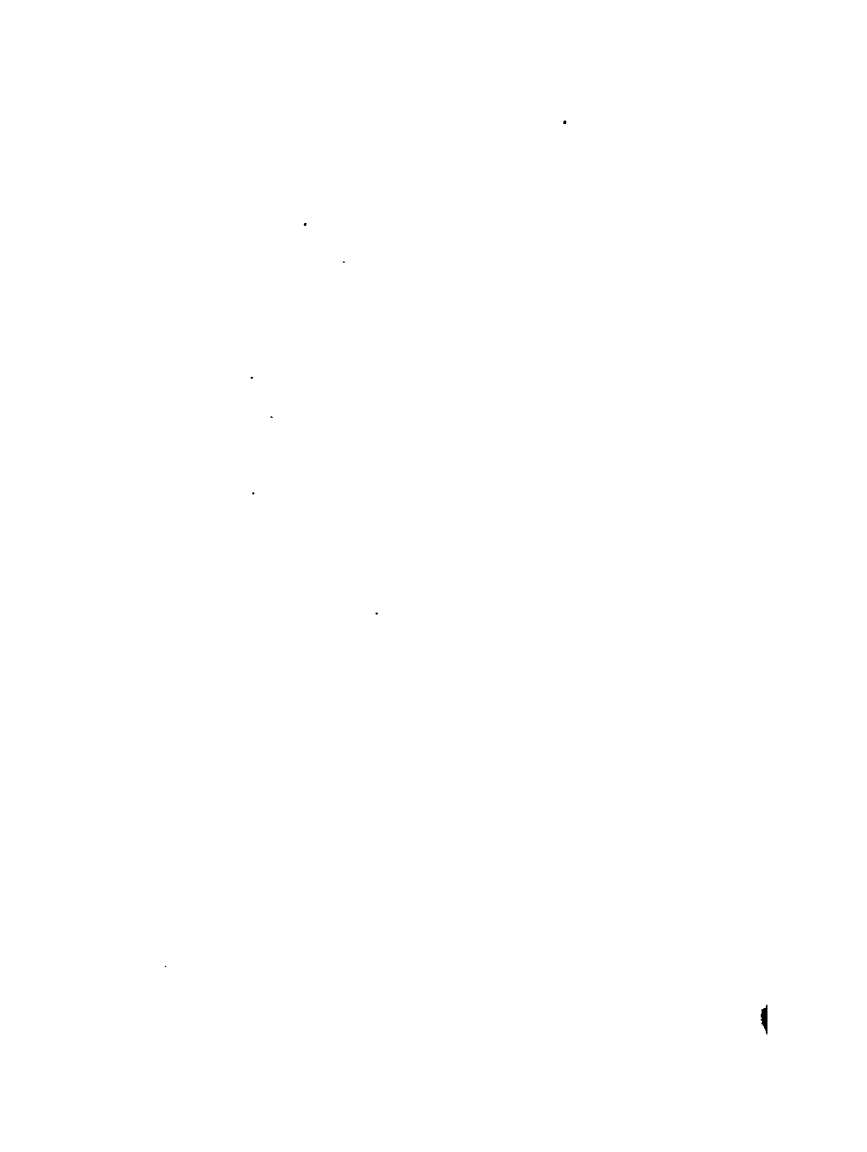
3 3433 07489281 5



\*KMP









**COLLECTION**  
**OF**  
**BRITISH AUTHORS.**  
**VOL. XLIII.**

---

**THE PLAYS AND POEMS OF SHAKESPEARE**

**IN SEVEN VOLUMES.**

**VOL. IV.**



THE  
PLAYS AND POEMS  
OF  
**WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE,**

PRINTED FROM THE TEXT

OF

J. PAYNE COLLIER, ESQ. F. S. A.

WITH THE LIFE AND PORTRAIT OF THE POET.

COMPLETE IN SEVEN VOLUMES.

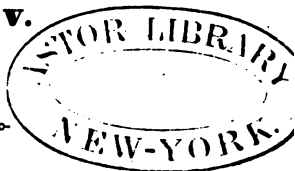
**VOL. IV.**



LEIPZIG

BERNH. TAUCHNITZ JUN.

1843.



15



## C O N T E N T S.

---

|                                             | Page. |
|---------------------------------------------|-------|
| THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI. . . . .        | 1     |
| LIFE AND DEATH OF KING RICHARD III. . . . . | 91    |
| KING HENRY VIII. . . . .                    | 201   |
| TROILUS AND CRESSIDA. . . . .               | 299   |
| TITUS ANDRONICUS. . . . .                   | 401   |

---





# T H I R D   P A R T

## O F

# K I N G   H E N R Y   V I.

---

### D R A M A T I S   P E R S O N Æ.

**HENRY THE SIXTH.**  
**ARD,** Prince of Wales, his Son.  
**S XI.,** King of France.

**OF SOMERSET,**  
**OF EXETER,**  
**OF OXFORD,**  
**OF NORTHUM-**  
**LAND,**  
**OF WESTMORE-**  
**D,**

} on King  
 Henry's  
 side.

**CLIFFORD,**  
**ARD PLANTAGENET,** Duke  
 ork.

**ARD,** Earl of March, af-  
 afterwards King Edward IV.

**IND,** Earl of Rutland,  
**GE,** afterwards Duke

} his  
 Sons.

larence,  
**ARD,** afterwards Duke  
 locester,

**OF NORFOLK,**  
**UESS OF MON-**  
**UE,**

} of the  
 Duke of  
 York's  
 party.

**OF WARWICK,**  
**OF PEMBROKE,**  
**HASTINGS,**  
**STAFFORD,**

**SIR JOHN MOR-**  
**TIMER,**  
**SIR HUGH MOR-**  
**TIMER,**

} Uncles to the  
 Duke of York.

**HENRY,** Earl of Richmond, a  
 Youth.

**LORD RIVERS,** Brother to Lady  
 Grey. **SIR WILLIAM STANLEY.**

**SIR JOHN MONTGOMERY.** **SIR**  
**JOHN SOMERVILLE.** Tutor to

Rutland. Mayor of York. Lieu-  
 tenant of the Tower. A Noble-

man. Two Keepers. A Hunts-  
 man. A Son that has killed his

Father. A Father that has killed  
 his Son.

**QUEEN MARGARET.**

**LADY GREY,** afterwards Queen to  
 Edward IV.

**BONA,** Sister to the French  
 Queen.

**ldiers,** and other Attendants on King Henry and King Edward,  
 Messengers, Watchmen, &c.

**ENE,** during part of the Third Act, in France; during the rest  
 of the Play, in England.

---

## ACT I. SCENE I.

London. The Parliament-House.

*Drums. Some Soldiers of YORK's party break in. Then, enter the Duke of YORK, EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Others, with white Roses in their Hats.*

*War.* I wonder how the king escap'd our hands.

*York.* While we pursued the horsemen of the north,  
He slyly stole away, and left his men:  
Whereat the great lord of Northumberland,  
Whose warlike ears could never brook retreat,  
Cheer'd up the drooping army; and himself,  
Lord Clifford, and lord Stafford, all a-breast,  
Charg'd our main battle's front, and, breaking in,  
Were by the swords of common soldiers slain.

*Edw.* Lord Stafford's father, duke of Buckingham,  
Is either slain, or wounded dangerous  
I cleft his beaver with a downright blow;  
That this is true, father, behold his blood.

*[Showing his bloody Sword.]*

*Mont.* And, brother, here's the earl of Wiltshire's blood,  
*[To YORK, showing his.]*

Whom I encounter'd as the battles join'd.

*Rich.* Speak thou for me, and tell them what I did.

*[Throwing down the Duke of SOMERSET's Head.]*

*York.* Richard hath best deserv'd of all my sons. —  
But, is your grace dead, my lord of Somerset?

*Norf.* Such hope have all the line of John of Gaunt!

*Rich.* Thus do I hope to shake king Henry's head.

*War.* And so do I. — Victorious prince of York,  
Before I see thee seated in that throne,  
Which now the house of Lancaster usurps,  
I vow by heaven these eyes shall never close:  
This is the palace of the fearful king,  
And this the regal seat: possess it, York;  
*For this is thine, and not king Henry's heirs'.*

*York.* Assist me, then, sweet Warwick, and I will;  
For hither we have broken in by force.

*Norfolk.* We'll all assist you: he, that flies, shall die.

*York.* Thanks, gentle Norfolk. — Stay by me, my lords: —  
And, soldiers, stay, and lodge by me this night.

*War.* And, when the king comes, offer him no violence,  
Unless he seek to thrust you out by force. [*They retire.*]

*York.* The queen this day here holds her parliament,  
But little thinks we shall be of her council.

By words or blows here let us win our right.

*Rich.* Arm'd as we are, let's stay within this house.

*War.* The bloody parliament shall this be call'd,  
Unless Plantagenet, duke of York, be king,  
And bashful Henry depos'd, whose cowardice  
Hath made us by-words to our enemies.

*York.* Then leave me not, my lords; be resolute,  
I mean to take possession of my right.

*War.* Neither the king, nor he that loves him best,  
The proudest he that holds up Lancaster,  
Dares stir a wing, if Warwick shake his bells.  
I'll plant Plantagenet, root him up who dares. —  
Resolve thee, Richard; claim the English crown.

[*WARWICK leads YORK to the Throne, who seats himself.*]

*Flourish.* Enter King HENRY, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND,  
WESTMORELAND, EXETER, and Others, with red Roses in  
their Hats.

*R. Hen.* My lords, look where the sturdy rebel sits,  
Even in the chair of state! belike, he means,  
Back'd by the power of Warwick, that false peer,  
To aspire unto the crown, and reign as king. —  
Earl of Northumberland, he slew thy father; —  
And thine, lord Clifford, and you both have vow'd revenge  
On him, his sons, his favourites, and his friends.

*North.* If I be not, heavens be reveng'd on me!

*Cliff.* The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn in steel.

*West.* What! shall we suffer this? let's pluck him down  
My heart for anger burns, I cannot brook it.

*R. Hen.* Be patient, gentle earl of Westmoreland.

*Clif.* Patience is for poltroons, such as he:  
He durst not sit there had your father liv'd.  
My gracious lord, here in the parliament  
Let us assail the family of York.

*North.* Well hast thou spoken, cousin: be it so.

*R. Hen.* Ah! know you not, the city favours them,  
And they have troops of soldiers at their beck?

*Exe.* But when the duke is slain, they'll quickly fly.

*R. Hen.* Far be the thought of this from Henry's heart,  
To make a shambles of the parliament-house!  
Cousin of Exeter, frowns, words, and threats,  
Shall be the war that Henry means to use.

*[They advance to the L*

*Thou factious duke of York, descend my throne,  
And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet  
I am thy sovereign.*

*York.* I am thine.

*Exe.* For shame! come down: he made thee duke of York.

*York.* 'T was my inheritance, as the earldom was.

*Exe.* Thy father was a traitor to the crown.

*War.* Exeter, thou art a traitor to the crown:

In following this usurping Henry.

*Clif.* Whom should he follow, but his natural king?

*War.* True, Clifford; that is Richard, duke of York.

*R. Hen.* And shall I stand, and thou sit in my throne?

*York.* It must and shall be so. Content thyself.

*War.* Be duke of Lancaster: let him be king.

*West.* He is both king and duke of Lancaster;  
And that the lord of Westmoreland shall maintain.

*War.* And Warwick shall disprove it. You forget,  
*That we are those which chas'd you from the field,  
And slew your fathers, and with colours spread  
March'd through the city to the palace gates.*

*North.* Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my grief;  
And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall rue it.

*West.* Plantagenet, of thee, and these thy sons,  
Thy kinsmen, and thy friends, I'll have more lives,  
Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

*Clif.* Urge it no more; lest that instead of words  
I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger,  
As shall revenge his death before I stir.

*War.* Poor Clifford! how I scorn his worthless threats.

*York.* Will you, we show our title to the crown?  
If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.

*K. Hen.* What title hast thou, traitor, to the crown?  
Thy father was, as thou art, duke of York;  
Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, earl of March.  
I am the son of Henry the fifth,  
Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop,  
And seiz'd upon their towns and provinces.

*War.* Talk not of France, sith thou hast lost it all.

*K. Hen.* The lord protector lost it, and not I:  
When I was crown'd, I was but nine months old.

*Rich.* You are old enough now, and yet, methinks, you lose.  
Father, tear the crown from the usurper's head.

*Edw.* Sweet father, do so: set it on your head.

*Mont.* Good brother, [*To York.*] as thou lov'st and honour'st  
arms,

Let's fight it out, and not stand cavilling thus.

*Rich.* Sound drums and trumpets, and the king will fly.

*York.* Sons, peace!

*K. Hen.* Peace thou, and give king Henry leave to speak.

*War.* Plantagenet shall speak first: hear him, lords;  
And be you silent and attentive too,  
For he, that interrupts him, shall not live.

*K. Hen.* Think'st thou, that I will leave my kingly throne,  
Wherein my grandsire, and my father, sat?

No: first shall war unpeople this my realm;

Ay, and their colours — often borne in France,  
And now in England, to our heart's great sorrow, —

Shall be my winding sheet. — Why faint you, lords?  
My title 's good, and better far than his.

*War.* Prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be king.

*R. Hen.* Henry the fourth by conquest got the crown.

*York.* 'T was by rebellion against his king.

*R. Hen.* I know not what to say: my title 's weak.

Tell me, may not a king adopt an heir?

*York.* What then?

*R. Hen.* An if he may, then am I lawful king;  
For Richard, in the view of many lords,  
Resign'd the crown to Henry the fourth,  
Whose heir my father was, and I am his.

*York.* He rose against him, being his sovereign,  
And made him to resign his crown perforce.

*War.* Suppose, my lords, he did it unconstrain'd,  
Think you, 't were prejudicial to his crown?

*Exe.* No; for he could not so resign his crown,  
But that the next heir should succeed and reign.

*R. Hen.* Art thou against us, duke of Exeter?

*Exe.* His is the right, and therefore pardon me.

*York.* Why whisper you, my lords, and answer not?

*Exe.* My conscience tells me he is lawful king.

*R. Hen.* All will revolt from me; and turn to him.

*North.* Plantagenet, for all the claim thou lay'st,  
Think not, that Henry shall be so depos'd.

*War.* Depos'd he shall be in despite of all.

*North.* Thou art deceiv'd: 't is not thy southern power,  
Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,  
Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud,  
Can set the duke up in despite of me.

*Clif.* King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,  
Lord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence:  
May that ground gape, and swallow me alive,  
Where I shall kneel to him that slew my father!

*R. Hen.* O Clifford, how thy words revive my heart!

*York.* Henry of Lancaster, resign thy crown.  
What matter you, or what conspire you, lords?

*War.* Do right unto this princely duke of York,  
Or I will fill the house with armed men,  
And, o'er the chair of state, where now he sits,  
Write up his title with usurping blood.

*[He stamps, and the Soldiers show themselves.]*

*R. Hen.* My lord of Warwick, hear but one word.  
Let me for this my life-time reign as king.

*York.* Confirm the crown to me, and to mine heirs,  
And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou liv'st.

*R. Hen.* I am content: Richard Plantagenet,  
Enjoy the kingdom after my decease.

*Clif.* What wrong is this unto the prince your son?

*War.* What good is this to England, and himself?

*West.* Base, fearful, and despairing Henry!

*Clif.* How hast thou injur'd both thyself and us!

*West.* I cannot stay to hear these articles.

*North.* Nor I.

*Clif.* Come, cousin, let us tell the queen these news.

*West.* Farewell, faint-hearted and degenerate king,  
In whose cold blood no spark of honour bides.

*North.* Be thou a prey unto the house of York,  
And die in bands for this unmanly deed!

*Clif.* In dreadful war may'st thou be overcome,  
Or live in peace, abandon'd, and despis'd!

*[Exeunt NORTHUMBERLAND, CLIFFORD, and  
WESTMORELAND.]*

*War.* Turn this way, Henry, and regard them not.

*Exe.* They seek revenge, and therefore will not yield.

*R. Hen.* Ah, Exeter!

*War.* Why should you sigh, my lord?

*R. Hen.* Not for myself, lord Warwick, but my son,  
Whom I unnaturally shall disinherit.

But be it as it may, I here entail  
The crown to thee, and to thine heirs for ever;  
Conditionally, that here thou take an oath  
To cease this civil war, and, whilst I live,  
To honour me as thy king and sovereign;



And neither by treason, nor hostility,  
To seek to put me down, and reign thyself.

*York.* This oath I willingly take, and will perform.

*[Coming from the Throne.]*

*War.* Long live king Henry! — Plantagenet, embrace him.

*R. Hen.* And long live thou, and these thy forward sons!

*York.* Now York and Lancaster are reconcil'd.

*Exe.* Accurs'd be he, that seeks to make them foes!

*[Sennet. The Lords come forward.]*

*York.* Farewell, my gracious lord: I'll to my castle.

*War.* And I'll keep London with my soldiers.

*Norf.* And I to Norfolk with my followers.

*Mont.* And I unto the sea from whence I came.

*[Exeunt YORK, and his Sons, WARWICK, NORFOLK,  
MONTAGUE, Soldiers, and Attendants.]*

*R. Hen.* And I, with grief and sorrow, to the court.

*Enter Queen MARGARET and the Prince of WALES.*

*Exe.* Here comes the queen, whose looks bewray her anger:  
I'll steal away.

*R. Hen.* Exeter, so will I.

*[Going.]*

*Q. Mar.* Nay, go not from me; I will follow thee.

*R. Hen.* Be patient, gentle queen, and I will stay.

*Q. Mar.* Who can be patient in such extremes?

Ah, wretched man! would I had died a maid,  
And never seen thee, never borne thee son,  
Seeing thou hast prov'd so unnatural a father!  
Hath he deserv'd to lose his birthright thus?  
Hadst thou but lov'd him half so well as I,  
Or felt that pain which I did for him once,  
Or nourish'd him, as I did with my blood,  
Thou wouldst have left thy dearest heart-blood there,  
Rather than have made that savage duke thine heir,  
And disinherited thine only son.

*Prince.* Father, you cannot disinherit me.  
*If you be king, why should not I succeed?*

*R. Hen.* Pardon me, Margaret; — pardon me, sweet son: —  
The earl of Warwick, and the duke, enforc'd me.

*Q. Mar.* Enforc'd thee! art thou king, and wilt be forc'd?  
shame to hear thee speak. Ah, timorous wretch!

thou hast undone thyself, thy son, and me,  
and given unto the house of York such head,  
as thou shalt reign but by their sufferance.

'o entail him and his heirs unto the crown,  
What is it, but to make thy sepulchre,  
and creep into it far before thy time?

Warwick is chancellor, and the lord of Calais;  
tern Faulconbridge commands the narrow seas;

he duke is made protector of the realm;  
and yet shalt thou be safe? such safety finds  
he trembling lamb, environed with wolves.

Had I been there, which am a silly woman,  
he soldiers should have toss'd me on their pikes,  
efore I would have granted to that act;

ut thou preferrest thy life before thine honour:

and seeing thou dost, I here divorce myself,

oath from thy table, Henry, and thy bed,

'ntil that act of parliament be repeal'd,

Whereby my son is disinherited.

The northern lords, that have forsworn thy colours,

Will follow mine, if once they see them spread;

and spread they shall be, to thy foul disgrace,

and utter ruin of the house of York.

Thus do I leave thee. — Come, son, let's away:

our army is ready; come, we'll after them.

*R. Hen.* Stay, gentle Margaret, and hear me speak.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hast spoke too much already: get thee gone.

*R. Hen.* Gentle son Edward, thou wilt stay with me?

*Q. Mar.* Ay, to be murder'd by his enemies.

*Prince.* When I return with victory from the field,  
I'll see your grace; till then, I'll follow her.

*Q. Mar.* Come, son; away! we may not linger thus.

[*Exeunt Queen MARGARET, and the Prince.*

*K. Hen.* Poor queen! how love to me, and to her son,  
Hath made her break out into terms of rage.  
Reveng'd may she be on that hateful duke,  
Whose haughty spirit, winged with desire,  
Will cost my crown, and like an empty eagle  
Tire on the flesh of me, and of my son!  
The loss of those three lords torments my heart:  
I'll write unto them, and entreat them fair. —  
Come, cousin; you shall be the messenger.

*Exe.* And I, I hope, shall reconcile them all. [*Exeun.*]

## SCENE II.

A Room in Sandal Castle, near Wakefield.

*Enter EDWARD, RICHARD, and MONTAGUE.*

*Rich.* Brother, though I be youngest, give me leave.

*Edw.* No; I can better play the orator.

*Mont.* But I have reasons strong and forcible.

*Enter YORK.*

*York.* Why, how now, sons and brother! at a strife?  
What is your quarrel? how began it first?

*Edw.* No quarrel, but a slight contention.

*York.* About what?

*Rich.* About that which concerns your grace, and us;  
The crown of England, father, which is yours.

*York.* Mine, boy? not till king Henry be dead.

*Rich.* Your right depends not on his life, or death.

*Edw.* Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now:

By giving the house of Lancaster leave to breathe,  
It will outrun you, father, in the end.

*York.* I took an oath that he should quietly reign.

*Edw.* But for a kingdom any oath may be broken:  
I would break a thousand oaths to reign one year.

*Rich.* No; God forbid, your grace should be forsworn.

*York.* I shall be, if I claim by open war.

*Rich.* I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear me speak.

*York.* Thou canst not, son: it is impossible.

*Rich.* An oath is of no moment, being not took  
'ore a true and lawful magistrate,  
at hath authority over him that swears:  
nry had none, but did usurp the place;  
en, seeing 't was he that made you to depose,  
ur oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous.  
efore, to arms. And, father, do but think,  
w sweet a thing it is to wear a crown,  
thin whose circuit is Elysium,  
d all that poets feign of bliss and joy.  
hy do we linger thus? I cannot rest,  
til the white rose, that I wear, be dyed  
en in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart.

*York.* Richard, enough: I will be king, or die. —  
 oother, thou shalt to London presently,  
 d whet on Warwick to this enterprise. —  
 ou, Richard, shalt to the duke of Norfolk,  
 d tell him privily of our intent. —  
 u, Edward, shall unto my lord Cobham,  
 ith whom the Kentishmen will willingly rise:  
 them I trust; for they are soldiers,  
 itty, courteous, liberal, full of spirit. —  
 hile you are thus employ'd, what resteth more,  
 t that I seek occasion how to rise,  
 d yet the king not privy to my drift,  
 r any of the house of Lancaster?

***Enter a Messenger.***

it, stay. — What news? Why com'st thou in such post?

**Mess.** The queen, with all the northern earls and lords, tend here to besiege you in your castle.  
He is hard by with twenty thousand men,  
And therefore fortify your hold, my lord.

*York.* Ay, with my sword. What! think'st thou, that we  
fear them? —

**Edward and Richard, you shall stay with me:  
brother Montague shall post to London.**

Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest,  
Whom we have left protectors of the king,  
With powerful policy strengthen themselves,  
And trust not simple Henry, nor his oaths.

*Mont.* Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear it not:  
And thus most humbly I do take my leave.

[*Exit.*

*Enter Sir JOHN and Sir HUGH MORTIMER.*

*York.* Sir John, and Sir Hugh Mortimer, mine uncles,  
You are come to Sandal in a happy hour;  
The army of the queen mean to besiege us.

*Sir John.* She shall not need, we'll meet her in the field.

*York.* What, with five thousand men?

*Rich.* Ay, with five hundred, father, for a need.

A woman's general; what should we fear? [*A March afar off.*

*Edw.* I hear their drums: let's set our men in order,  
And issue forth, and bid them battle straight.

*York.* Five men to twenty! — though the odds be great,  
I doubt not, uncle, of our victory.  
Many a battle have I won in France,  
When as the enemy hath been ten to one:  
Why should I not now have the like success? [*Alarum. Exeunt.*

### SCENE III.

Plains near Sandal Castle.

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter RUTLAND, and his Tutor.*

*Rut.* Ah! whither shall I fly to 'scape their hands?  
Ah, tutor! look, where bloody Clifford comes.

*Enter CLIFFORD, and Soldiers.*

*Clif.* Chaplain, away: thy priesthood saves thy life.  
As for the brat of this accursed duke,  
Whose father slew my father, he shall die.

*Tut.* And I, my lord, will bear him company.

*Clif.* Soldiers, away with him.

*Tut.* Ah, Clifford! murder not this innocent child,

Lest thou be hated both of God and man.

*[Exit, forced off by Soldiers.]*

*Clif.* How now! is he dead already? Or, is it fear,  
That makes him close his eyes? — I'll open them.

*Rut.* So looks the pent-up lion o'er the wretch  
That trembles under his devouring paws:  
And so he walks, insulting o'er his prey,  
And so he comes to rend his limbs asunder. —  
Ah, gentle Clifford! kill me with thy sword,  
And not with such a cruel threatening look.  
Sweet Clifford! hear me speak before I die:  
I am too mean a subject for thy wrath;  
Be thou reveng'd on men, and let me live.

*Clif.* In vain thou speak'st, poor boy: my father's blood  
Hath stopp'd the passage where thy words should enter.

*Rut.* Then let my father's blood open it again:  
He is a man, and, Clifford, cope with him.

*Clif.* Had I thy brethren here, their lives, and thine,  
Were not revenge sufficient for me.  
No; if I digg'd up thy forefathers' graves,  
And hung their rotten coffins up in chains,  
It could not slake mine ire, nor ease my heart.  
The sight of any of the house of York  
Is as a fury to torment my soul;  
And till I root out their accursed line,  
And leave not one alive, I live in hell.  
Therefore —

*Rut.* O! let me pray before I take my death. —  
To thee I pray: sweet Clifford, pity me!

*Clif.* Such pity as my rapier's point affords.

*Rut.* I never did thee harm: why wilt thou slay me?

*Clif.* Thy father hath.

*Rut.* But 't was ere I was born.

Thou hast one son, for his sake pity me,  
Lest, in revenge thereof, sith God is just,  
He be as miserably slain as I.  
*Ah! let me live in prison all my days,*

And when I give occasion of offence,  
Then let me die, for now thou hast no cause.

*Clif.* No cause?

Thy father slew my father: therefore, die. [*CLIFFORD stabs him.*

*Rut.* *Dii faciant, laudis summa sit ista tuæ!* [*Dies.*

*Clif.* Plantagenet! I come, Plantagenet!

And this thy son's blood cleaving to my blade,  
Shall rust upon my weapon, till thy blood  
Congeal'd with this do make me wipe off both. [*Exit.*

## SCENE IV.

The Same.

*Alarum. Enter YORK.*

*York.* The army of the queen hath got the field:  
My uncles both are slain in rescuing me;  
And all my followers to the eager foe  
Turn back, and fly like ships before the wind,  
Or lambs pursu'd by hunger-starved wolves.  
My sons — God knows, what hath bechanced them,  
But this I know, — they have demean'd themselves  
Like men born to renown by life or death.  
Three times did Richard make a lane to me,  
And thrice cried, — “Courage, father! fight it out:”  
And full as oft came Edward to my side,  
With purple falchion, painted to the hilt  
In blood of those that had encounter'd him:  
And when the hardiest warriors did retire,  
Richard cried, — “Charge! and give no foot of ground!”  
And cried, — “A crown, or else a glorious tomb!  
A sceptre, or an earthly sepulchre!”  
With this, we charg'd again; but, out alas!  
We bodg'd again: as I have seen a swan  
With bootless labour swim against the tide,  
And spend her strength with over-matching waves.  
[*A short Alarum within.*  
*Ah, hark! the fatal followers do pursue,*

And I am faint, and cannot fly their fury;  
And, were I strong, I would not shun their fury.  
The sands are number'd, that make up my life;  
Here must I stay, and here my life must end.

*Enter Queen MARGARET, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, and Soldiers.*

Come, bloody Clifford, — rough Northumberland, —  
I dare your quenchless fury to more rage.  
I am your butt, and I abide your shot.

*North.* Yield to our mercy, proud Plantagenet.

*Clif.* Ay, to such mercy, as his ruthless arm  
With downright payment show'd unto my father.  
Now Phaeton hath tumbled from his car,  
And made an evening at the noontide prick.

*York.* My ashes, as the phoenix, may bring forth  
A bird that will revenge upon you all;  
And in that hope I throw mine eyes to heaven,  
Scorning whate'er you can afflict me with.  
Why come you not? — what! multitudes, and fear?

*Clif.* So cowards fight when they can fly no farther;  
So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons;  
So desperate thieves, all hopeless of their lives,  
Breathe out invectives 'gainst the officers.

*York.* O, Clifford! but bethink thee once again,  
And in thy thought o'er-run my former time;  
And, if thou canst for blushing, view this face,  
And bite thy tongue, that slanders him with cowardice,  
Whose frown hath made thee faint and fly ere this.

*Clif.* I will not bandy with thee word for word,  
But buckle with thee blows, twice two for one.

*Q. Mar.* Hold, valiant Clifford! for a thousand causes  
I would prolong awhile the traitor's life. —

Wrath makes him deaf: speak thou, Northumberland.

*North.* Hold, Clifford! do not honour him so much  
To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart:  
*What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,*



For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,  
When he might spurn him with his foot away?  
It is war's prize to take all vantages,  
And ten to one is no impeach of valour.

[*They lay hands on YORK, who struggles*

*Clif.* Ay, ay; so strives the woodcock with the gin.

*North.* So doth the coney struggle in the net.

[*YORK is taken prisoner*

*York.* So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd booty;  
So true men yield, with robbers so o'er-match'd.

*North.* What would your grace have done unto him now?

*Q. Mar.* Brave warriors, Clifford and Northumberland,  
Come, make him stand upon this molehill here,  
That raught at mountains with outstretched arms,  
Yet parted but the shadow with his hand. —  
What! was it you, that would be England's king?  
Was't you that revell'd in our parliament,  
And made a preachment of your high descent?  
Where are your mess of sons to back you now?  
The wanton Edward, and the lusty George?  
And where 's that valiant crook-back prodigy,  
Dicky your boy, that, with his grumbling voice,  
Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?  
Or, with the rest, where is your darling Rutland?  
Look, York: I stain'd this napkin with the blood  
That valiant Clifford with his rapier's point  
Made issue from the bosom of the boy;  
And, if thine eyes can water for his death,  
I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.  
Alas, poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,  
I should lament thy miserable state.  
I pr'ythee, grieve to make me merry, York:  
What, hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine entrails,  
That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death?  
Why art thou patient man? thou should'st be mad;  
And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus.  
*Stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and dance.*

Thou would'st be fee'd, I see, to make me sport :  
 York cannot speak, unless he wear a crown. —  
 A crown for York! — and, lords, bow low to him. —  
 I told you his hands, whilst I do set it on. —

*[Putting a paper Crown on his Head.]*

Nay, marry, Sir, now looks he like a king.  
 Nay, this is he that took king Henry's chair ;  
 And this is he was his adopted heir. —  
 But how is it, that great Plantagenet  
 Is crown'd so soon, and broke his solemn oath ?  
 As I bethink me, you should not be king,  
 Till our king Henry had shook hands with death.  
 And will you pale your head in Henry's glory,  
 And rob his temples of the diadem,  
 Now in his life, against your holy oath ?  
 O ! 't is a fault too, too unpardonable. —  
 Off with the crown ; and, with the crown, his head !  
 And whilst we breathe take time to do him dead.

*Clif.* That is my office, for my father's sake.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, stay ; let's hear the orisons he makes.

*York.* She-wolf of France, but worse than wolves of France ;  
 Whose tongue more poisons than the adder's tooth,  
 How ill-beseeming is it in thy sex,  
 To triumph, like an Amazonian trull,  
 Upon their woes whom fortune captivates ?  
 But that thy face is, visor-like, unchanging,  
 Made impudent with use of evil deeds,  
 I would assay, proud queen, to make thee blush :  
 To tell thee whence thou cam'st, of whom deriv'd,  
 Were shame enough to shame thee, wert thou not shameless.  
 Thy father bears the type of king of Naples,  
 Of both the Sicils, an Jerusalem,  
 Yet not so wealthy as an English yeoman.  
 Hath that poor monarch taught thee to insult ?  
 It needs not, nor it boots thee not, proud queen ;  
*Unless the adage must be verified,*  
*That beggars mounted run their horse to death.*

'T is beauty that doth oft make women proud;  
 But, God he knows, thy share thereof is small.  
 'T is virtue that doth make them most admir'd;  
 The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at.  
 'T is government that makes them seem divine;  
 The want thereof makes thee abominable.  
 Thou art as opposite to every good,  
 As the Antipodes are unto us,  
 Or as the south to the septentrion.  
 O, tiger's heart, wrapp'd in a woman's hide!  
 How could'st thou drain the life-blood of the child,  
 To bid the father wipe his eyes withal,  
 And yet be seen to bear a woman's face?  
 Women are soft, mild, pitiful, and flexible;  
 Thou stern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorseless.  
 Bid'st thou me rage? why, now thou hast thy wish:  
 Would'st have me weep? why, now thou hast thy will.  
 For raging wind blows up incessant showers,  
 And, when the rage allays, the rain begins.  
 These tears are my sweet Rutland's obsequies,  
 And every drop cries vengeance for his death,  
 'Gainst thee, fell Clifford, and thee, false Frenchwoman.

*North.* Beshrew me, but his passions move me so,  
 That hardly can I check my eyes from tears.

*York.* That face of his the hungry cannibals  
 Would not have touch'd, would not have stain'd with blood;  
 But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,  
 O! ten times more, than tigers of Hyrcania.  
 See, ruthless queen, a hapless father's tears:  
 This cloth thou dipp'dst in blood of my sweet boy,  
 And I with tears do wash the blood away.  
 Keep thou the napkin, and go boast of this;  
 And if thou tell'st the heavy story right,  
 Upon my soul, the hearers will shed tears;  
 Yea, even my foes will shed fast-falling tears,  
 And say, — "Alas! it was a piteous deed." —  
 There, take the crown, and with the crown my curse,

And in thy need such comfort come to thee,  
 As now I reap at thy too cruel hand! —  
 Hard-hearted Clifford, take me from the world;  
 My soul to heaven, my blood upon your heads!

*North.* Had he been slaughter-man to all my kin,  
 I should not, for my life, but weep with him,  
 To see how inly sorrow gripes his soul.

*Q. Mar.* What! weeping-ripe, my lord Northumberland?  
 Think but upon the wrong he did us all,  
 And that will quickly dry thy melting tears.

*Clif.* Here 's for my oath; here 's for my father's death.

[*Stabbing him*

*Q. Mar.* And here 's to right our gentlee-hearted king.

[*Stabbing him.*

*York.* Open thy gate of mercy, gracious God!  
 My soul flies through these wounds to seek out thee. [Dies.

*Q. Mar.* Off with his head, and set it on York gates:  
 So York may overlook the town of York. [Flourish. *Exeunt.*

## ACT II. SCENE I.

A Plain near Mortimer's Cross in Herefordshire.

*A March. Enter EDWARD, and RICHARD, with their Power.*

*Edw.* I wonder, how our princely father 'scap'd;  
 Or whether he be 'scap'd away, or no,  
 From Clifford's and Northumberland's pursuit.  
 Had he been ta'en, we should have heard the news;  
 Had he been slain, we should have heard the news;  
 Or had he scap'd, methinks, we should have heard  
 The happy tidings of his good escape. —  
 How fares my brother? why is he so sad?

*Rich.* I cannot joy, until I be resolv'd  
 Where our right valiant father is become.  
 I saw him in the battle range about,  
 And watch'd him how he singled Clifford forth.  
*Methought, he bore him in the thickest troop,*



*Rich.* Say, how he died, for I will hear it all.

*Mess.* Environed he was with many foes;  
And stood against them, as the hope of Troy  
Against the Greeks, that would have enter'd Troy.  
But Hercules himself must yield to odds;  
And many strokes, though with a little axe,  
Hew down, and fell the hardest-timber'd oak.  
By many hands your father was subdu'd;  
But only slaughter'd by the ireful arm  
Of unrelenting Clifford, and the queen,  
Who crown'd the gracious duke in high despite;  
Laugh'd in his face; and, when with grief he wept,  
The ruthless queen gave him, to dry his cheeks,  
A napkin steeped in the harmless blood  
Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford slain:  
And, after many scorns, many foul taunts,  
They took his head, and on the gates of York  
They set the same; and there it doth remain,  
The saddest spectacle that e'er I view'd.

*Edw.* Sweet duke of York! our prop to lean upon,  
Now thou art gone, we have no staff, no stay.  
O Clifford! boisterous Clifford! thou hast slain  
The flower of Europe for his chivalry;  
And treacherously hast thou vanquish'd him,  
For hand to hand he would have vanquish'd thee.  
Now, my soul's palace is become a prison:  
Ah! would she break from hence, that this my body  
Might in the ground be closed up in rest,  
For never henceforth shall I joy again;  
Never, O! never, shall I see more joy.

*Rich.* I cannot weep, for all my body's moisture  
Scarce serves to quench my furnace-burning heart;  
Nor can my tongue unload my heart's great burden,  
For self-same wind, that I should speak withal,  
Is kindling coals that fire all my breast,  
And burn me up with flames that tears would quench.  
To weep is to make less the depth of grief.

Tears, then, for babes; blows, and revenge, for me! —  
Richard, I bear thy name; I will venge thy death,  
Or die renowned by attempting it.

*Edw.* His name that valiant duke hath left with thee;  
His dukedom and his chair with me is left.

*Rich.* Nay, if thou be that princely eagle's bird,  
Show thy descent by gazing 'gainst the sun:  
For chair and dukedom, throne and kingdom say;  
Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his.

*March.* Enter WARWICK and MONTAGUE, with their Arm

*War.* How now, fair lords! What fare? what news abro

*Rich.* Great lord of Warwick, if we should recount  
Our baleful news, and at each word's deliverance,  
Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told,  
The words would add more anguish than the wounds.  
O, valiant lord! the duke of York is slain.

*Edw.* O, Warwick! Warwick! that Plantagenet,  
Which held thee dearly as his soul's redemption,  
Is by the stern lord Clifford done to death.

*War.* Ten days ago I drown'd these news in tears;  
And now, to add more measure to your woes,  
I come to tell you things sith then befallen.  
After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,  
Where your brave father breath'd his latest gasp,  
Tidings, as swiftly as the posts could run,  
Were brought me of your loss, and his depart.  
I, then in London, keeper of the king,  
Muster'd my soldiers, gather'd flocks of friends,  
March'd towards Saint Alban's to intercept the queen,  
Bearing the king in my behalf along;  
For by my scouts I was advertised,  
That she was coming with a full intent  
To dash our late decree in parliament,  
Touching king Henry's oath, and your succession.  
*Short tale to make,* — we at Saint Alban's met;  
*Our battles join'd,* and both sides fiercely fought;

But, whether 't was the coldness of the king,  
 Who look'd full gently on his warlike queen,  
 That robb'd my soldiers of their heated spleen,  
 Or whether 't was report of her success,  
 Or more than common fear of Clifford's rigour,  
 Who thunders to his captives blood and death,  
 I cannot judge; but, to conclude with truth,  
 Their weapons like to lightning came and went:  
 Our soldiers' — like the night-owl's lazy flight,  
 Or like a lazy thrasher with a flail, —  
 Fell gently down, as if they struck their friends.  
 I cheer'd them up with justice of our cause,  
 With promise of high pay, and great rewards,  
 But all in vain; they had no heart to fight,  
 And we in them no hope to win the day;  
 So that we fled: the king unto the queen;  
 Lord George your brother, Norfolk, and myself,  
 In haste, post-haste, are come to join with you;  
 For in the marches here, we heard, you were,  
 Making another head to fight again.

*Edw.* Where is the duke of Norfolk, gentle Warwick?  
 And when came George from Burgundy to England?

*War.* Some six miles off the duke is with the soldiers;  
 And for your brother, he was lately sent  
 From your kind aunt, duchess of Burgundy,  
 With aid of soldiers to this needful war.

*Rich.* 'T was odds, belike, when valiant Warwick fled:  
 Oft have I heard his praises in pursuit,  
 But ne'er, till now, his scandal of retire.

*War.* Nor now my scandal, Richard, dost thou hear;  
 For thou shalt know, this strong right hand of mine  
 Can pluck the diadem from faint Henry's head,  
 And wring the awful sceptre from his fist,  
 Were he as famous, and as bold in war,  
 As he is fam'd for mildness, peace, and prayer.

*Rich.* I know it well, lord Warwick; blame me not:  
 'T is love, I hear thy glories, makes me speak.



But, in this troublous time, what 's to be done?  
Shall we go throw away our coats of steel,  
And wrap our bodies in black mourning gowns,  
Numbering our Ave-Maries with our beads?  
Or shall we on the helmets of our foes  
Tell our devotion with revengeful arms?  
If for the last, say — Ay, and to it, lords.

*War.* Why, therefore Warwick came to seek you out,  
And therefore comes my brother Montague.  
Attend me, lords. The proud insulting queen,  
With Clifford, and the haught Northumberland,  
And of their feather many more proud birds,  
Have wrought the easy-melting king like wax.  
He swore consent to your succession,  
His oath enrolled in the parliament;  
And now to London all the crew are gone,  
To frustrate both his oath, and what beside  
May make against the house of Lancaster:  
Their power, I think, is thirty thousand strong.  
Now, if the help of Norfolk; and myself,  
With all the friends that thou, brave earl of March,  
Amongst the loving Welshmen canst procure,  
Will but amount to five and twenty thousand,  
Why, *Via!* to London will we march again,  
And once again bestride our foaming steeds,  
And once again cry — Charge! upon our foes!  
But never once again turn back, and fly.

*Rich.* Ay, now, methinks, I hear great Warwick speak.  
Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day,  
That cries — Retire, if Warwick bid him stay.

*Edw.* Lord Warwick, on thy shoulder will I lean;  
And when thou fail'st, (as God forbid the hour!)  
Must Edward fall, which peril heaven forefend!

*War.* No longer earl of March, but duke of York:  
The next degree is, England's royal throne;  
For king of England shalt thou be proclaim'd  
In every borough as we pass along;

And he that throws not up his cap for joy,  
 Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head.  
 King Edward, — valiant Richard, — Montague, —  
 Stay we no longer dreaming of renown,  
 But sound the trumpets, and about our task.

*Rich.* Then, Clifford, were thy heart as hard as steel,  
 As thou hast shown it flinty by thy deeds,  
 I come to pierce it, or to give thee mine.

*Edw.* Then strike up, drums! — God, and Saint George  
 for us!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*War.* How now! what news?

*Mess.* The duke of Norfolk sends you word by me,  
 The queen is coming with a puissant host,  
 And craves your company for speedy counsel.

*War.* Why then it sorts: brave warriors, let's away.

*[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE II.

Before York.

*Flourish. Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, the Prince of WALES, CLIFFORD, and NORTHUMBERLAND, with drums and trumpets.*

*Q. Mar.* Welcome, my lord, to this brave town of York.  
 Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy,  
 That sought to be encompass'd with your crown:  
 Doth not the object cheer your heart, my lord?

*R. Hen.* Ay, as the rocks cheer them that fear their wreck:  
 To see this sight, it irks my very soul. —  
 Withhold revenge, dear God! 't is not my fault;  
 Not wittingly have I infrin'g'd my vow.

*Clif.* My gracious liege, this too much lenity  
 And harmful pity, must be laid aside.  
 To whom do lions cast their gentle looks?  
 Not to the beast that would usurp their den.  
 Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick?

Not his that spoils her young before her face.  
Who 'scapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting?  
Not he that sets his foot upon her back.  
The smallest worm will turn, being trodden on;  
And doves will peck in safeguard of their brood.  
Ambitious York did level at thy crown;  
Thou smiling, while he knit his angry brows:  
He, but a duke, would have his son a king,  
And raise his issue like a loving sire;  
Thou, being a king, bless'd with a goodly son,  
Didst yield consent to disinherit him,  
Which argued thee a most unloving father.  
Unreasonable creatures feed their young;  
And though man's face be fearful to their eyes,  
Yet, in protection of their tender ones,  
Who hath not seen them, even with those wings  
Which sometime they have us'd with fearful flight,  
Make war with him that climb'd unto their nest,  
Offering their own lives in their young's defence?  
For shame, my liege! make them your precedent.  
Were it not pity, that this goodly boy  
Should lose his birthright by his father's fault,  
And long hereafter say unto his child, —  
"What my great-grandfather and grandsire got,  
My careless father fondly gave away."  
Ah! what a shame were this. Look on the boy;  
And let his manly face, which promiseth  
Successful fortune, steel thy melting heart  
To hold thine own, and leave thine own with him.

*R. Hen.* Full well hath Clifford play'd the orator,  
Inferring arguments of mighty force.  
But, Clifford, tell me, didst thou never hear,  
That things ill got had ever bad success?  
And happy always was it for that son,  
Whose father for his hoarding went to hell?  
*I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind,  
And would, my father had left me no more;*

For all the rest is held at such a rate,  
As brings a thousand-fold more care to keep,  
Than in possession any jot of pleasure.  
Ah, cousin York! would thy best friends did know,  
How it doth grieve me that thy head is here!

*Q. Mar.* My lord, cheer up your spirits: our foes are nigh,  
And this soft courage makes your followers faint.  
You promis'd knighthood to our forward son:  
Unsheath your sword, and dub him presently. —  
Edward, kneel down.

*K. Hen.* Edward Plantagenet, arise a knight;  
And learn this lesson, — Draw thy sword in right.

*Prince.* My gracious father, by your kingly leave,  
I 'll draw it as apparent to the crown,  
And in that quarrel use it to the death.

*Clif.* Why, that is spoken like a toward prince.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Royal commanders, be in readiness:  
For, with a band of thirty thousand men,  
Comes Warwick, backing of the duke of York;  
And, in the towns as they do march along,  
Proclaims him king, and many fly to him.  
Darraign your battle, for they are at hand.

*Clif.* I would, your highness would depart the field:  
The queen hath best success when you are absent.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord, and leave us to our fortune.

*K. Hen.* Why, that's my fortune too; therefore I 'll stay.

*North.* Be it with resolution, then, to fight.

*Prince.* My royal father, cheer these noble lords,  
And hearten those that fight in your defence.

Unsheath your sword, good father: cry, "Saint George!"

*March.* *Enter* EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, *and* Soldiers.

*Edw.* Now, perjur'd Henry, wilt thou kneel for grace,  
And set thy diadem upon my head,  
*Or bide the mortal fortune of the field?*

*Q. Mar.* Go, rate thy minions, proud insulting boy :  
Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms,  
Before thy sovereign, and thy lawful king?

*Edw.* I am his king, and he should bow his knee :  
I was adopted heir by his consent ;  
Since when, his oath is broke ; for, as I hear,  
You, that are king, though he do wear the crown,  
Have caus'd him, by new act of parliament,  
To blot out me, and put his own son in.

*Clif.* And reason too :  
Who should succeed the father, but the son?

*Rich.* Are you there, butcher? — O! I cannot speak.

*Clif.* Ay, crook-back ; here I stand, to answer thee,  
Or any he the proudest of thy sort.

*Rich.* 'T was you that kill'd young Rutland, was it not?

*Clif.* Ay, and old York, and yet not satisfied.

*Rich.* For God's sake, lords, give signal to the fight.

*War.* What say'st thou, Henry, wilt thou yield the crown?

*Q. Mar.* Why, how now, long-tongu'd Warwick! dare you  
speak?

When you and I met at Saint Alban's last,  
Your legs did better service than your hands.

*War.* Then 't was my turn to fly, and now 't is thine.

*Clif.* You said so much before, and yet you fled.

*War.* 'T was not your valour, Clifford, drove me thence.

*North.* No, nor your manhood, that durst make you stay.

*Rich.* Northumberland, I hold thee reverently.

Break off the parley ; for scarce I can refrain

The execution of my big-swoln heart

Upon that Clifford, that cruel child-killer.

*Clif.* I slew thy father : call'st thou him a child?

*Rich.* Ay, like a dastard, and a treacherous coward,  
As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland ;  
But ere sun-set I'll make thee curse the deed.

*R. Hen.* Have done with words, my lords, and hear me  
speak.

*Q. Mar.* Defy them then, or else hold close thy lips.

*K. Hen.* I pr'ythee, give no limits to my tongue:  
I am a king, and privileg'd to speak.

*Clif.* My liege, the wound, that bred this meeting here,  
Cannot be cur'd by words; therefore be still.

*Rich.* Then, executioner, unsheath thy sword.  
By him that made us all, I am resolv'd,  
That Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue.

*Edw.* Say, Henry, shall I have my right, or no?  
A thousand men have broke their fasts to-day,  
That ne'er shall dine, unless thou yield the crown.

*War.* If thou deny, their blood upon thy head;  
For York in justice puts his armour on.

*Prince.* If that be right, which Warwick says is right,  
There is no wrong, but every thing is right.

*Rich.* Whoever got thee, there thy mother stands;  
For, well I wot, thou hast thy mother's tongue.

*Q. Mar.* But thou art neither like thy sire, nor dam;  
But like a foul mis-shapen stigmatic,  
Mark'd by the destinies to be avoided,  
As venom toads, or lizards' dreadful stings.

*Rich.* Iron of Naples, hid with English gilt,  
Whose father bears the title of a king,  
(As if a channel should be call'd the sea)  
Sham'st thou not, knowing whence thou art extraught,  
To let thy tongue detect thy base-born heart?

*Edw.* A wisp of straw were worth a thousand crowns,  
To make this shameless callat know herself. —  
Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou,  
Although thy husband may be Menelaus;  
And ne'er was Agamemnon's brother wrong'd  
By that false woman, as this king by thee.  
His father revell'd in the heart of France,  
And tam'd the king, and made the Dauphin stoop;  
And, had he match'd according to his state,  
He might have kept that glory to this day;  
But, when he took a beggar to his bed,  
And grac'd thy poor sire with his bridal day,

Even then that sunshine brew'd a shower for him,  
 That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of France,  
 And heap'd sedition on his crown at home.  
 For what hath broach'd this tumult, but thy pride?  
 Hadst thou been meek, our title still had slept,  
 And we, in pity of the gentle king,  
 Had slipp'd our claim until another age.

*Geo.* But when we saw our sunshine made thy spring,  
 And that thy summer bred us no increase,  
 We set the axe to thy usurping root:  
 And though the edge hath something hit ourselves,  
 Yet, know thou, since we have begun to strike,  
 We'll never leave, till we have hewn thee down,  
 Or bath'd thy growing with our heated bloods.

*Edw.* And in this resolution I defy thee;  
 Not willing any longer conference,  
 Since thou deniedst the gentle king to speak. —  
 Sound trumpets! — let our bloody colours wave,  
 And either victory, or else a grave.

*Q. Mar.* Stay, Edward.

*Edw.* No, wrangling woman; we'll no longer stay:  
 These words will cost ten thousand lives to-day. [Ex]

### SCENE III.

▲ Field of Battle near Towton.

*Alarums: Exursions. Enter WARWICK.*

*War.* Forspent with toil, as runners with a race,  
 I lay me down a little while to breathe;  
 For strokes receiv'd, and many blows repaid,  
 Have robb'd my strong-knit sinews of their strength,  
 And, spite of spite, needs must I rest awhile.

*Enter EDWARD, running.*

*Edw.* Smile, gentle heaven, or strike, ungentle death  
 For this world frowns, and Edward's sun is clouded.

*War.* How now, my lord! what hap? what hope of e

*Enter GEORGE.*

*Geo.* Our hap is loss, our hope but sad despair:  
Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us.  
What counsel give you? whither shall we fly?

*Edw.* Bootless is flight; they follow us with wings,  
And weak we are, and cannot shun pursuit.

*Enter RICHARD.*

*Rich.* Ah, Warwick! why hast thou withdrawn thyself?  
Thy brother's blood the thirsty earth hath drunk,  
Broach'd with the steely point of Clifford's lance;  
And, in the very pangs of death he cried,  
Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,  
"Warwick, revenge! brother, revenge my death!"  
So, underneath the belly of their steeds,  
That stain'd their fetlocks in his smoking blood,  
The noble gentleman gave up the ghost.

*War.* Then let the earth be drunken with our blood:  
I'll kill my horse, because I will not fly.  
Why stand we like soft-hearted women here,  
Wailing our losses, whiles the foe doth rage,  
And look upon, as if the tragedy  
Were play'd in jest by counterfeiting actors?  
Here on my knee I vow to God above,  
I'll never pause again, never stand still,  
Till either death hath clos'd these eyes of mine,  
Or fortune given me measure of revenge.

*Edw.* O Warwick! I do bend my knee with thine;  
And in this vow do chain my soul to thine.  
And, ere my knee rise from the earth's cold face,  
I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to thee,  
Thou setter up and plucker down of kings;  
Beseeching thee, — if with thy will it stands,  
That to my foes this body must be prey, —  
Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may ope,  
And give sweet passage to my sinful soul. —



Now, lords, take leave until we meet again,  
Where'er it be, in heaven, or in earth.

*Rich.* Brother, give me thy hand; — and, gentle War  
Let me embrace thee in my weary arms.

I, that did never weep, now melt with woe,  
That winter should cut off our spring-time so.

*War.* Away, away! Once more, sweet lords, farewell

*Geo.* Yet let us all together to our troops,  
And give them leave to fly that will not stay,  
And call them pillars that will stand to us;  
And if we thrive promise them such rewards  
As victors wear at the Olympian games.  
This may plant courage in their quailing breasts;  
For yet is hope of life, and victory. —  
Foreslow no longer; make we hence amain.

[E.]

## SCENE IV.

The Same. Another part of the Field.

*Excursions. Enter RICHARD and CLIFFORD.*

*Rich.* Now, Clifford, I have singled thee alone.  
Suppose, this arm is for the duke of York,  
And this for Rutland; both bound to revenge,  
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall.

*Clif.* Now, Richard, I am with thee here alone.  
This is the hand that stabb'd thy father York,  
And this the hand that slew thy brother Rutland;  
And here 's the heart that triumphs in their death,  
And cheers these hands, that slew thy sire and brother,  
To execute the like upon thyself;  
And so, have at thee.

[*They fight.* WARWICK enters; CLIFFORD

*Rich.* Nay, Warwick, single out some other chase;  
For I myself will hunt this wolf to death.

[E.]

## SCENE V.

Another Part of the Field.

*Alarum. Enter King HENRY.*

. This battle fares like to the morning's war,  
 as clouds contend with growing light;  
 the shepherd, blowing of his nails,  
 nor call it perfect day, nor night.  
 Is it this way, like a mighty sea,  
 he tide to combat with the wind:  
 Is it that way, like the self-same sea  
 is tire by fury of the wind:  
 Is the flood prevails; and then, the wind;  
 Is he better, then, another best;  
 Is he to be victors, breast to breast,  
 conqueror, nor conquered:  
 Is equal poise of this fell war.  
 In this molehill, will I sit me down.  
 If God will, there be the victory;  
 I set my queen, and Clifford too,  
 I save me from the battle, swearing both,  
 I never best of all when I am thence.  
 I were dead! if God's good will were so;  
 I live in this world but grief and woe?  
 I think, it were a happy life,  
 I better than a homely swain;  
 I on a hill, as I do now,  
 I watch the dials quaintly, point by point,  
 I see the minutes how they run:  
 I make the hour full complete,  
 I let hours bring about the day,  
 I let days will finish up the year,  
 I let years a mortal man may live.  
 I know it is known; then to divide the times:  
 I must I tend my flock;  
 I must I take my rest;  
 I must I contemplate;

So many hours must I sport myself;  
 So many days my ewes have been with young;  
 So many weeks ere the poor fools will yeau;  
 So many years ere I shall shear the fleece:  
 So minutes, hours, days, months and years,  
 Pass'd over to the end they were created,  
 Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave.  
 Ah, what a life were this! how sweet! how lovely!  
 Gives not the hawthorn bush a sweeter shade  
 To shepherds looking on their silly sheep,  
 Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy  
 To kings that fear their subjects' treachery?  
 O! yes it doth; a thousand fold it doth.  
 And to conclude, — the shepherd's homely curds,  
 His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle,  
 His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade,  
 All which secure and sweetly he enjoys,  
 Is far beyond a prince's delicates,  
 His viands sparkling in a golden cup,  
 His body couched in a curious bed,  
 When care, mistrust, and treason wait on him.

*Alarum. Enter a Son that hath killed his Father, with the Body.*

*Son.* Ill blows the wind that profits no body.  
 This man whom hand to hand I slew in fight,  
 May be possessed with some store of crowns:  
 And I, that haply take them from him now,  
 May yet ere night yield both my life and them  
 To some man else, as this dead man doth me. —  
 Who 's this? — O God! it is my father's face,  
 Whom in this conflict I unwares have kill'd.  
 O heavy times, begetting such events!  
 From London by the king was I press'd forth:  
 My father, being the earl of Warwick's man,  
 Came on the part of York, press'd by his master;  
 And I, who at his hands receiv'd my life,

Have by my hands of life bereaved him. —  
 Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did; —  
 And pardon, father, for I knew not thee. —  
 My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks,  
 And no more words, till they have flow'd their fill.

*R. Hen.* O piteous spectacle! O bloody times!  
 Whiles lions war, and battle for their dens,  
 Poor harmless lambs abide their enmity.  
 Weep, wretched man, I'll aid thee, tear for tear;  
 And let our hearts, and eyes, like civil war,  
 Be blind with tears, and break o'ercharg'd with grief.

*Enter a Father, who has killed his Son, with the Body in his arms.*

*Fath.* Thou that so stoutly hast resisted me,  
 Give me thy gold, if thou hast any gold,  
 For I have bought it with an hundred blows. —  
 But let me see: — is this our foeman's face?  
 Ah, no, no, no! it is mine only son! —  
 Ah, boy! if any life be left in thee,  
 Throw up thine eye: see, see, what showers arise,  
 Blown with the windy tempest of my heart,  
 Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart! —  
 O, pity, God, this miserable age! —  
 What stratagems, how fell, how butcherly,  
 Erroneous, mutinous, and unnatural,  
 This deadly quarrel daily doth beget! —  
 O boy! thy father gave thee life too soon,  
 And hath bereft thee of thy life too late.

*R. Hen.* Woe above woe! grief more than common grief!  
 O, that my death would stay these ruthless deeds! —  
 O, pity, pity! gentle heaven, pity! —  
 The red rose and the white are on his face,  
 The fatal colours of our striving houses:  
 The one his purple blood right well resembles,  
 The other his pale cheeks, methinks, presenteth;

Wither one rose, and let the other flourish!  
If you contend, a thousand lives must wither.

*Son.* How will my mother, for a father's death,  
Take on with me, and ne'er be satisfied?

*Fath.* How will my wife, for slaughter of my son,  
Shed seas of tears, and ne'er be satisfied?

*R. Hen.* How will the country, for these woful chances,  
Misthink the king, and not be satisfied?

*Son.* Was ever son so rued a father's death?

*Fath.* Was ever father so bemoan'd a son?

*R. Hen.* Was ever king so griev'd for subjects' woe?  
Much is your sorrow; mine, ten times so much.

*Son.* I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep my fill.

*[Exit with the Body.]*

*Fath.* These arms of mine shall be thy winding-sheet;  
My heart, sweet boy, shall be thy sepulchre,  
For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go.  
My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell;  
And so obsequious will thy father be,  
Man, for the loss of thee, having no more,  
As Priam was for all his valiant sons.  
I'll bear thee hence; and let them fight that will,  
For I have murder'd where I should not kill.

*[Exit, with the Body.]*

*R. Hen.* Sad-hearted men, much overgone with care,  
Here sits a king more woful than you are.

*Alarum: Excursions. Enter Queen MARGARET, Prince of  
WALES, and EXETER.*

*Prince.* Fly, father, fly! for all your friends are fled,  
And Warwick rages like a chafed bull.  
Away! for death doth hold us in pursuit.

*Q. Mar.* Mount you, my lord: towards Berwick post  
again.

Edward and Richard, like a brace of greyhounds,  
*Having the fearful flying hare in sight,*  
*With fiery eyes, sparkling for very wrath,*

And bloody steel grasp'd in their ireful hands,  
Are at our backs; and therefore hence amain.

*Exe.* Away! for vengeance comes along with them.  
Nay, stay not to expostulate; make speed,  
Or else come after: I'll away before.

*R. Hen.* Nay, take me with thee, good sweet Exeter:  
Not that I fear to stay, but love to go  
Whither the queen intends. Forward! away! [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VI.

The Same.

*A loud Alarm.* Enter CLIFFORD, wounded.

*Clf.* Here burns my candle out; ay, here it dies,  
Which, while it lasted, gave king Henry light.  
O, Lancaster! I fear thy overthrow,  
More than my body's parting with my soul.  
My love, and fear, glued many friends to thee;  
And now I fall thy tough commixtures melt,  
Impairing Henry, strengthening mis-proud York.  
The common people swarm like summer flies;  
And whither fly the gnats, but to the sun?  
And who shines now but Henry's enemies?  
O Phœbus! hadst thou never given consent  
That Phaeton should check thy fiery steeds,  
Thy burning car never had scorch'd the earth;  
And, Henry, hadst thou sway'd as kings should do,  
Or as thy father, and his father, did,  
Giving no ground unto the house of York,  
They never, then, had sprung like summer flies;  
I, and ten thousand in this luckless realm,  
Had left no mourning widows for our death,  
And thou this day hadst kept thy chair in peace.  
For what doth cherish weeds but gentle air?  
And what makes robbers bold but too much lenity?  
*Bootless are complaints, and cureless are my wounds.*  
*No way to fly, nor strength to hold out flight:*

The foe is merciless, and will not pity;  
 For at their hands I have deserv'd no pity.  
 The air hath got into my deadly wounds,  
 And much effuse of blood doth make me faint. —  
 Come, York, and Richard, Warwick, and the rest;  
 I stabb'd your fathers' bosoms, split my breast. [He faints.]

*Alarum and Retreat. Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD,  
 MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers.*

*Edw.* Now breathe we, lords: good fortune bids us pause,  
 And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks. —  
 Some troops pursue the bloody-minded queen,  
 That led calm Henry, though he were a king,  
 As doth a sail, fill'd with a fretting gust,  
 Command an argosy to stem the waves.  
 But think you, lords, that Clifford fled with them?

*War.* No, 't is impossible he should escape;  
 For, though before his face I speak the words,  
 Your brother Richard mark'd him for the grave,  
 And wheresoe'er he is, he's surely dead.

[CLIFFORD groans and dies.]

*Rich.* Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave?  
 A deadly groan, like life and death's departing:  
 See who it is.

*Edw.* And, now the battle's ended,  
 If friend, or foe, let him be gently used.

*Rich.* Revoke that doom of mercy, for 't is Clifford;  
 Who not contented that he lopp'd the branch  
 In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth,  
 But set his murdering knife unto the root  
 From whence that tender spray did sweetly spring;  
 I mean, our princely father, duke of York.

*War.* From off the gates of York fetch down the head,  
 Your father's head, which Clifford placed there;  
 Instead whereof, let this supply the room:  
*Measure for measure must be answered.*

*Edw.* Bring forth that fatal screech-owl to our house,

That nothing sung but death to us and ours :  
 Now death shall stop his dismal threatening sound ,  
 And his ill-boding tongue no more shall speak .

*[Attendants bring the Body forward.]*

*War.* I think his understanding is bereft. —  
 Speak, Clifford, dost thou know who speaks to thee? —  
 Dark cloudy death o'ershades his beams of life,  
 And he nor sees, nor hears us, what we say.

*Rich.* O, would he did! and so, perhaps, he doth :  
 'Tis but his policy to counterfeit,  
 Because he would avoid such bitter taunts  
 Which in the time of death he gave our father.

*Geo.* If so thou think'st, vex him with eager words.

*Rich.* Clifford! ask mercy, and obtain no grace.

*Edw.* Clifford! repent in bootless penitence.

*War.* Clifford! devise excuses for thy faults.

*Geo.* While we devise fell tortures for thy faults.

*Rich.* Thou didst love York, and I am son to York.

*Edw.* Thou pitiedst Rutland, I will pity thee.

*Geo.* Where's captain Margaret to fence you now?

*War.* They mock thee, Clifford: swear as thou wast wont.

*Rich.* What! not an oath? nay then, the world goes hard,  
 When Clifford cannot spare his friends an oath. —

I know by that, he's dead; and, by my soul,  
 If this right hand would buy two hours' life,  
 That I in all despite might rail at him,  
 This hand should chop it off; and with the issuing blood  
 Stifle the villain, whose unstaunched thirst  
 York and young Rutland could not satisfy.

*War.* Ay, but he's dead. Off with the traitor's head,  
 And rear it in the place your father's stands. —  
 And now to London with triumphant march,  
 There to be crowned England's royal king.  
 From whence shall Warwick cut the sea to France,  
 And ask the Lady Bona for thy queen.  
 So shalt thou sinew both these lands together;  
 And, having France thy friend, thou shalt not dread



The scatter'd foe that hopes to rise again ;  
 For though they cannot greatly sting to hurt ,  
 Yet look to have them buz , to offend thine ears .

First , will I see the coronation ,  
 And then to Brittany I 'll cross the sea ,  
 To effect this marriage , so it please my lord .

*Edw.* Even as thou wilt , sweet Warwick , let it be ;  
 For in thy shoulder do I build my seat ,  
 And never will I undertake the thing ,  
 Wherein thy counsel and consent is wanting . —  
 Richard , I will create thee duke of Gloster ; —  
 And George , of Clarence : — Warwick , as ourself ,  
 Shall do , and undo , as him pleaseth best .

*Rich.* Let me be duke of Clarence , George of Gloster ,  
 For Gloster's dukedom is too ominous .

*War.* Tut ! that 's a foolish observation :  
 Richard , be duke of Gloster . Now to London ,  
 To see these honours in possession .

[*Exeunt.*

### ACT III. SCENE I.

A Chace in the North of England.

*Enter Two Keepers , with Cross-bows in their Hands.*

*1 Keep.* Under this thick-grown brake we 'll shroud ourselves ;

For through this lawn anon the deer will come ,  
 And in this covert will we make our stand ,  
 Culling the principal of all the deer .

*2 Keep.* I 'll stay above the hill , so both may shoot .

*1 Keep.* That cannot be ; the noise of thy cross-bow  
 Will scare the herd , and so my shoot is lost .  
 Here stand we both , and aim we at the best :  
 And , for the time shall not seem tedious ,  
 I 'll tell thee what befel me on a day ,  
*In this self-place where now we mean to stand .*

*2 Keep.* Here comes a man , let 's stay till he be past .

*Enter King HENRY, disguised, with a Prayer-book.*

*R. Hen.* From Scotland am I stol'n, even of pure love,  
To greet mine own land with my wishful sight.  
No, Harry, Harry, 't is no land of thine;  
Thy place is fill'd, thy sceptre wrung from thee,  
Thy balm wash'd off wherewith thou wast anointed:  
No bending knee will call thee Cæsar now,  
No humble suitors press to speak for right,  
No, not a man comes for redress of thee,  
For how can I help them, and not myself?

*1 Keep.* Ay, here 's a deer whose skin 's a keeper's fee.  
This is the *quondam* king: let 's seize upon him.

*R. Hen.* Let me embrace the sour adversaries;  
For wise men say, it is the wisest course.

*2 Keep.* Why linger we? let us lay hands upon him.

*1 Keep.* Forbear a while; we 'll hear a little more.

*R. Hen.* My queen and son are gone to France for aid;  
And, as I hear, the great commanding Warwick  
Is thither gone, to crave the French king's sister  
To wife for Edward. If this news be true,  
Poor queen, and son, your labour is but lost;  
For Warwick is a subtle orator,  
And Lewis a prince soon won with moving words.  
By this account, then, Margaret may win him,  
For she 's a woman to be pitied much:  
Her sighs will make a battery in his breast,  
Her tears will pierce into a marble heart;  
The tiger will be mild whiles she doth mourn,  
And Nero will be tainted with remorse,  
To hear, and see, her plaints, her brinish tears.  
Ay, but she 's come to beg; Warwick, to give:  
She on his left side craving aid for Henry,  
He on his right asking a wife for Edward.  
She weeps, and says — her Henry is depos'd;  
He smiles, and says — his Edward is install'd;  
That she, poor wretch, for grief can speak no more,  
Whiles Warwick tells his title, smooths the wrong,

Inferreth arguments of mighty strength;  
And, in conclusion, wins the king from her,  
With promise of his sister, and what else,  
To strengthen and support king Edward's place.  
O Margaret! thus 't will be; and thou, poor soul,  
Art then forsaken, as thou went'st forlorn.

*2 Keep.* Say, what art thou talkest of kings and queens?

*K. Hen.* More than I seem, and less than I was born to:  
A man at least, for less I should not be;  
And men may talk of kings, and why not I?

*2 Keep.* Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou wert a king.

*K. Hen.* Why, so I am, in mind; and that's enough.

*2 Keep.* But, if thou be a king, where is thy crown?

*K. Hen.* My crown is in my heart, not on my head;  
Not deck'd with diamonds, and Indian stones,  
Nor to be seen: my crown is call'd, content;  
A crown it is, that seldom kings enjoy.

*2 Keep.* Well, if you be a king crown'd with content,  
Your crown, content, and you, must be contented  
To go along with us; for, as we think,  
You are the king, king Edward hath depos'd;  
And we his subjects, sworn in all allegiance,  
Will apprehend you as his enemy.

*K. Hen.* But did you never swear, and break an oath?

*2 Keep.* No, never such an oath; nor will not now.

*K. Hen.* Where did you dwell, when I was king of England?

*2 Keep.* Here in this country, where we now remain.

*K. Hen.* I was anointed king at nine months old,  
My father and my grandfather, were kings,  
And you were sworn true subjects unto me;  
And tell me, then, have you not broke your oaths?

*1 Keep.* No;

For we were subjects, but while you were king.

*K. Hen.* Why, am I dead? do I not breathe a man?

Ah, simple men! you know not what you swear.

Look, as I blow this feather from my face,

And as the air blows it to me again,

g with my wind when I do blow,  
 elding to another when it blows,  
 anded always by the greater gust,  
 ; the lightness of you common men.  
 not break your oaths; for of that sin  
 d entreaty shall not make you guilty.  
 ere you will, the king shall be commanded,  
 : you kings; command, and I'll obey.  
*Peep.* We are true subjects to the king, king Edward.  
*Hen.* So would you be again to Henry,  
 ere seated as king Edward is.  
*Peep.* We charge you, in God's name, and the king's,  
 with us unto the officers.  
*Hen.* In God's name, lead; your king's name be obey'd:  
 at God will, that let your king perform;  
 at he will, I humbly yield unto. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE II.

London. A Room in the Palace.

*King EDWARD, GLOSTER, CLARENCE, and Lady GREY.*

*Edw.* Brother of Gloster, at Saint Albans' field  
 ly's husband, Sir John Grey, was slain,  
 d then seiz'd on by the conqueror:  
 t is now, to repossess those lands,  
 we in justice cannot well deny,  
 e in quarrel of the house of York  
 rthy gentleman did lose his life.

. Your highness shall do well, to grant her suit;  
 dishonour, to deny it her.

*Edw.* It were no less; but yet I'll make a pause.

. Yea; is it so?

*[Aside.]*

he lady hath a thing to grant,  
 the king will grant her humble suit.

. He knows the game: how true he keeps the wind!

*[Aside.]*

*Silence!*

*[Aside.]*

*R. Edw.* Widow, we will consider of your suit,  
And come some other time to know our mind.

*L. Grey.* Right gracious lord, I cannot brook delay:  
May it please your highness to resolve me now,  
And what your pleasure is shall satisfy me.

*Glo.* Ay, widow? then I'll warrant you all your lands,  
An if what pleases him shall pleasure you.

Fight closer, or, good faith, you'll catch a blow. [*Aside.*]

*Clar.* I fear her not, unless she chance to fall. [*Aside.*]

*Glo.* God forbid that, for he'll take vantages. [*Aside.*]

*R. Edw.* How many children hast thou, widow? tell me.

*Clar.* I think, he means to beg a child of her. [*Aside.*]

*Glo.* Nay then, whip me; he'll rather give her two. [*Aside.*]

*L. Grey.* Three, my most gracious lord.

*Glo.* You shall have four, if you'll be rul'd by him. [*Aside.*]

*R. Edw.* 'T were pity, they should lose their father's lands.

*L. Grey.* Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it then.

*R. Edw.* Lords, give us leave: I'll try this widow's wit.

*Glo.* Ay, good leave have you; for you will have leave,  
Till youth take leave, and leave you to the crutch.

[*GLOSTER and CLARENCE stand apart.*]

*R. Edw.* Now tell me, Madam, do you love your children?

*L. Grey.* Ay, full as dearly as I love myself.

*R. Edw.* And would you not do much, to do them good?

*L. Grey.* To do them good I would sustain some harm.

*R. Edw.* Then, get your husband's lands to do them good.

*L. Grey.* Therefore I came unto your majesty.

*R. Edw.* I'll tell you how these lands are to be got.

*L. Grey.* So shall you bind me to your highness' service.

*R. Edw.* What service wilt thou do me, if I give them?

*L. Grey.* What you command, that rests in me to do.

*R. Edw.* But you will take exceptions to my boon.

*L. Grey.* No, gracious lord, except I cannot do it.

*R. Edw.* Ay, but thou canst do what I mean to ask.

*L. Grey.* Why then, I will do what your grace commands.

*Glo.* He plies her hard; and much rain wears the marble. [*Aside.*]

*r.* As red as fire! nay then, her wax must melt. [*Aside.*

*Grey.* Why stops my lord? shall I not hear my task?

*Edw.* An easy task: 't is but to love a king.

*Grey.* That's soon perform'd, because I am a subject.

*Edw.* Why then, thy husband's lands I freely give thee.

*Grey.* I take my leave with many thousand thanks.

*r.* The match is made: she seals it with a curt'sy.

*Edw.* But stay thee; 't is the fruits of love I mean.

*Grey.* The fruits of love I mean, my loving liege.

*Edw.* Ay, but, I fear me, in another sense.

ove, think'st thou, I sue so much to get?

*Grey.* My love till death; my humble thanks, my prayers:

ve which virtue begs, and virtue grants.

*Edw.* No, by my troth, I did not mean such love.

*Grey.* Why, then you mean not as I thought you did.

*Edw.* But now you partly may perceive my mind.

*Grey.* My mind will never grant what I perceive

ighness aims at, if I aim aright.

*Edw.* To tell thee plain, I aim to lie with thee.

*Grey.* To tell you plain, I had rather lie in prison.

*Edw.* Why then, thou shalt not have thy husband's lands.

*Grey.* Why then, mine honesty shall be my dower;

that loss I will not purchase them.

*Edw.* Therein thou wrong'st thy children mightily.

*Grey.* Herein your highness wrongs both them and me.

nighty lord, this merry inclination

ls not with the sadness of my suit;

you dismiss me, either with ay, or no.

*Edw.* Ay, if thou wilt say ay, to my request;

thou dost say no, to my demand.

*Grey.* Then, no, my lord. My suit is at an end.

*r.* The widow likes him not, she knits her brows. [*Aside.*

*r.* He is the bluntest wooer in Christendom. [*Aside.*

*Edw.* Her looks do argue her replete with modesty;

[*Aside.*

*ds do show her wit incomparable;  
erfections challenge sovereignty:*

One way, or other, she is for a king,  
And she shall be my love, or else my queen. —  
Say, that king Edward take thee for his queen?

*L. Grey.* 'T is better said than done, my gracious lord:  
I am a subject fit to jest withal,  
But far unfit to be a sovereign.

*R. Edw.* Sweet widow, by my state I swear to thee,  
I speak no more than what my soul intends;  
And that, is to enjoy thee for my love.

*L. Grey.* And that is more than I will yield unto.  
I know, I am too mean to be your queen,  
And yet too good to be your concubine.

*R. Edw.* You cavil, widow: I did mean, my queen.

*L. Grey.* 'T will grieve your grace, my sons should call you  
father.

*R. Edw.* No more, than when my daughters call thee mother.  
Thou art a widow, and thou hast some children;  
And, by God's mother, I, being but a bachelor,  
Have other some: why, 't is a happy thing  
To be the father unto many sons.  
Answer no more, for thou shalt be my queen.

*Glo.* The ghostly father now hath done his shrift. [*Aside.*

*Clar.* When he was made a shriver, 't was for shift. [*Aside.*

*R. Edw.* Brothers, you muse what chat we two have had.

*Glo.* The widow likes it not, for she looks very sad.

*R. Edw.* You 'd think it strange if I should marry her.

*Clar.* To whom, my lord?

*R. Edw.* Why, Clarence, to myself?

*Glo.* That would be ten days' wonder, at the least.

*Clar.* That 's a day longer than a wonder lasts.

*Glo.* By so much is the wonder in extremes.

*R. Edw.* Well, jest on, brothers: I can tell you both,  
Her suit is granted for her husband's lands.

*Enter a Nobleman.*

*Nob.* My gracious lord, Henry your foe is taken,  
And brought your prisoner to your palace gate.

*Edw.* See, that he be convey'd unto the Tower: —  
 o we, brothers, to the man that took him,  
 estion of his apprehension. —

w, go you along. — Lords, use her honourably.

[*Exeunt King EDWARD, Lady GREY, CLARENCE,  
 and Lord.*]

*Jo.* Ay, Edward will use women honourably.  
 ld he were wasted, marrow, bones, and all,  
 from his loins no hopeful branch may spring,  
 oss me from the golden time I look for!

ret, between my soul's desire, and me,  
 astful Edward's title buried,

rence, Henry, and his son young Edward,  
 all the unlook'd-for issue of their bodies,  
 ke their rooms, ere I can place myself:  
 d premeditation for my purpose.

then; I do but dream on sovereignty;  
 one that stands upon a promontory,  
 spies a far-off shore where he would tread,  
 ing his foot were equal with his eye;  
 hides the sea that sunders him from thence,  
 g — he'll lade it dry to have his way:

I wish the crown, being so far off,  
 so I chide the means that keep me from it;  
 so I say — I'll cut the causes off,  
 ring me with impossibilities. —

re's too quick, my heart o'erweens too much,  
 is my hand and strength could equal them.

, say there is no kingdom, then, for Richard,  
 other pleasure can the world afford?

ake my heaven in a lady's lap,  
 deck my body in gay ornaments,  
 witch sweet ladies with my words and looks.  
 serable thought! and more unlikely,  
 to accomplish twenty golden crowns.

love forswore me in my mother's womb:  
 or I should not deal in her soft laws,



She did corrupt frail nature with some bribe  
To shrink mine arm up like a wither'd shrub ;  
To make an envious mountain on my back ,  
Where sits deformity to mock my body ;  
To shape my legs of an unequal size ;  
To disproportion me in every part ,  
Like to a chaos, or an unlick'd bear-whelp ,  
That carries no impression like the dam.  
And am I, then, a man to be belov'd ?  
O, monstrous fault, to harbour such a thought !  
Then, since this earth affords no joy to me,  
But to command, to check, to o'erbear such  
As are of better person than myself,  
I'll make my heaven to dream upon the crown ;  
And, whiles I live, t' account this world but hell,  
Until my mis-shap'd trunk that bears this head,  
Be round impaled with a glorious crown.  
And yet I know not how to get the crown,  
For many lives stand between me and home :  
And I, like one lost in a thorny wood,  
That rends the thorns, and is rent with the thorns,  
Seeking a way, and straying from the way,  
Not knowing how to find the open air,  
But toiling desperately to find it out,  
Torment myself to catch the English crown :  
And from that torment I will free myself,  
Or hew my way out with a bloody axe.  
Why, I can smile, and murder while I smile,  
And cry, content, to that which grieves my heart,  
And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,  
And frame my face to all occasions.  
I'll drown more sailors than the mermaid shall,  
I'll slay more gazers than the basilisk ;  
I'll play the orator as well as Nestor,  
*Deceive more slyly than Ulysses could,*  
*And like a Sinon take another Troy.*  
*I can add colours to the cameleon,*

ge shapes, with Proteus, for advantages,  
 set the murderous Machiavel to school.  
 I do this, and cannot get a crown?  
 were it further off, I 'll pluck it down.

[*Exit.*]

### SCENE III.

France. A Room in the Palace.

*Irish. Enter LEWIS the French King, and Lady BONA-  
 tended: the King takes his State. Then, enter Queen MAR-  
 ARET, Prince EDWARD, and the Earl of OXFORD.*

*R. Lew.* Fair queen of England, worthy Margaret,  
 down with us: it ill befits thy state,  
 birth, that thou should'st stand, while Lewis doth sit.

*Q. Mar.* No, mighty king of France; now Margaret  
 strike her sail, and learn a while to serve,  
 ere kings command. I was, I must confess,  
 Albion's queen in former golden days;  
 now mischance hath trod my title down,  
 with dishonour laid me on the ground,  
 ere I must take like seat unto my fortune,  
 to my humble seat conform myself.

*R. Lew.* Why, say, fair queen, whence springs this deep  
 despair?

*Q. Mar.* From such a cause as fills mine eyes with tears,  
 stops my tongue, while heart is drown'd in cares.

*R. Lew.* What'er it be, be thou still like thyself,  
 sit thee by our side: yield not thy neck [*Seats her by him.*]  
 fortune's yoke, but let thy dauntless mind  
 ride in triumph over all mischance.

ain, queen Margaret, and tell thy grief;  
 all be eas'd, if France can yield relief.

*Q. Mar.* Those gracious words revive my drooping thoughts,  
 give my tongue-tied sorrows leave to speak.

*therefore, be it known to noble Lewis,  
 Henry, sole possessor of my love,  
 king become a banish'd man,*

And forc'd to live in Scotland, a forlorn;  
While proud ambitious Edward, duke of York,  
Usurps the regal title, and the seat  
Of England's true-anointed lawful king.  
This is the cause, that I, poor Margaret,  
With this my son, prince Edward, Henry's heir,  
Am come to crave thy just and lawful aid;  
And if thou fail us all our hope is done.  
Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help;  
Our people and our peers are both misled,  
Our treasure seiz'd, our soldiers put to flight,  
And, as thou seest, ourselves in heavy plight.

*R. Lew.* Renowned queen, with patience calm the storm,  
While we bethink a means to break it off.

*Q. Mar.* The more we stay, the stronger grows our foe.

*R. Lew.* The more I stay, the more I'll succour thee.

*Q. Mar.* O! but impatience waiteth on true sorrow:  
And see where comes the breeder of my sorrow.

*Enter WARWICK, attended.*

*R. Lew.* What's he, approacheth boldly to our presence?

*Q. Mar.* Our earl of Warwick, Edward's greatest friend.

*R. Lew.* Welcome, brave Warwick. What brings thee to  
France?

*[He descends. Queen MARGARET rises.]*

*Q. Mar.* Ay, now begins a second storm to rise;  
For this is he that moves both wind and tide.

*War.* From worthy Edward, king of Albion,  
My lord and sovereign, and thy vowed friend,  
I come, in kindness, and unfeigned love,  
First, to do greetings to thy royal person,  
And, then, to crave a league of amity;  
And, lastly, to confirm that amity  
With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant  
*That virtuous lady Bona, thy fair sister,*  
*To England's king in lawful marriage.*

*Q. Mar.* If that go forward, Henry's hope is done.

And, gracious Madam, [*To BONA.*] in our king's  
behalf,

commanded, with your leave and favour,  
to kiss your hand, and with my tongue  
the passion of my sovereign's heart;  
came, late entering at his heedful ears,  
to thy beauty's image, and thy virtue.

*far.* King Lewis, and lady Bona, hear me speak,  
on answer Warwick. His demand  
not from Edward's well-meant honest love,  
a deceit, bred by necessity;  
can tyrants safely govern home,  
broad they purchase great alliance?  
To him tyrant this reason may suffice, —  
nry liveth still; but were he dead,  
prince Edward stands, king Henry's son.  
Therefore, Lewis, that by this league and marriage  
saw not on thy danger and dishonour;  
ugh usurpers sway the rule a while,  
ens are just, and time suppresseth wrongs.

Injurious Margaret!

ce. And why not queen?

Because thy father Henry did usurp,  
u no more art prince, than she is queen.

Then Warwick disannuls great John of Gaunt,  
lid subdue the greatest part of Spain;  
ter John of Gaunt, Henry the fourth,  
wisdom was a mirror to the wisest;  
r that wise prince, Henry the fifth,  
his prowess conquered all France:  
se our Henry lineally descends.

Oxford, how haps it, in this smooth discourse,  
not, how *Henry the sixth* hath lost  
*which Henry the fifth* had gotten?

these peers of France should smile at that.  
rest, — you tell a pedigree

Of threescore and two years : a silly time  
To make prescription for a kingdom's worth.

*Oxf.* Why, Warwick, canst thou speak against thy liege,  
Whom thou obeyedst thirty and six years,  
And not bewray thy treason with a blush?

*War.* Can Oxford, that did ever fence the right,  
Now buckler falsehood with a pedigree?  
For shame! leave Henry, and call Edward king.

*Oxf.* Call him my king, by whose injurious doom  
My elder brother, the lord Aubrey Vere,  
Was done to death? and more than so, my father,  
Even in the downfall of his mellow'd years,  
When nature brought him to the door of death?  
No, Warwick, no; while life upholds this arm,  
This arm upholds the house of Lancaster.

*War.* And I the house of York.

*R. Lew.* Queen Margaret, prince Edward, and Oxford,  
Vouchsafe at our request to stand aside,  
While I use farther conference with Warwick.

*Q. Mar.* Heaven grant, that Warwick's words bewitch him  
not! *[They stand aloof-]*

*R. Lew.* Now, Warwick, tell me, even upon thy conscience,  
Is Edward your true king? for I were loath,  
To link with him that were not lawful chosen.

*War.* Thereon I pawn my credit, and mine honour.

*R. Lew.* But is he gracious in the people's eye?

*War.* The more, that Henry was unfortunate.

*R. Lew.* Then farther; all dissembling set aside,  
Tell me for truth the measure of his love  
Unto our sister Bona.

*War.* Such it seems,  
As may beseem a monarch like himself.  
Myself have often heard him say, and swear,  
That this his love was an eternal plant;  
Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground,  
The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's sun,

empt from envy, but not from disdain,  
 Less the lady Bona quit his pain.

*R. Lew.* Now, sister, let us hear your firm resolve.

*Bona.* Your grant, or your denial, shall be mine. —  
 I confess, [*To WAR.*] that often ere this day,  
 When I have heard your king's desert recounted,  
 Mine ear hath tempted judgment to desire.

*R. Lew.* Then, Warwick, thus: — our sister shall be  
 Edward's;

And now forthwith shall articles be drawn  
 Touching the jointure that your king must make,  
 Which with her dowry shall be counterpois'd. —  
 Draw near, queen Margaret, and be a witness,  
 That Bona shall be wife to the English king.

*Prince.* To Edward, but not to the English king.

*Q. Mar.* Deceitful Warwick! it was thy device  
 This alliance to make void my suit:  
 Before thy coming, Lewis was Henry's friend.

*R. Lew.* And still is friend to him and Margaret:  
 If your title to the crown be weak,  
 It may appear by Edward's good success,  
 Men't is but reason, that I be releas'd  
 From giving aid which late I promised  
 That shall you have all kindness at my hand,  
 As your estate requires, and mine can yield.

*War.* Henry now lives in Scotland, at his ease,  
 Here having nothing, nothing can he lose.  
 And as for you yourself, our *quondam* queen,  
 You have a father able to maintain you,  
 And better 't were you troubled him than France.

*Q. Mar.* Peace! impudent and shameless Warwick.  
 And setter-up and puller-down of kings;  
 Till not hence, till with my talk and tears,  
 Though full of truth, I make king Lewis behold  
 His *slight conveyance*, and thy lord's false love;

For both of you are birds of self-same feather.

[*A horn sounded within.*]

*R. Lew.* Warwick, this is some post to us, or thee.

*Enter the Post.*

*Post.* My lord ambassador, these letters are for you,  
Sent from your brother, marquess Montague. —  
These from our king unto your majesty. —  
And, Madam, these for you; from whom I know not.

[*They all read their letters*]

*Oxf.* I like it well, that our fair queen and mistress  
Smiles at her news, while Warwick frowns at his.

*Prince.* Nay, mark how Lewis stamps as he were nettled :  
I hope all 's for the best.

*R. Lew.* Warwick, what are thy news? and yours, fair  
queen?

*Q. Mar.* Mine, such as fill my heart with unhop'd joys.

*War.* Mine, full of sorrow and heart's discontent.

*R. Lew.* What! has your king married the lady Grey,  
And now, to sooth your forgery and his,  
Sends me a paper to persuade me patience?  
Is this th' alliance that he seeks with France?  
Dare he presume to scorn us in this manner?

*Q. Mar.* I told your majesty as much before :  
This proveth Edward's love, and Warwick's honesty.

*War.* King Lewis, I here protest, in sight of heaven,  
And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss,  
That I am clear from this misdeed of Edward's;  
No more my king, for he dishonours me,  
But most himself, if he could see his shame.  
Did I forget, that by the house of York  
My father came untimely to his death?  
Did I let pass th' abuse done to my niece?  
Did I impale him with the regal crown?  
Did I put Henry from his native right,  
And am I guerdon'd at the last with shame?  
*Shame on himself, for my desert is honour :*

And to repair my honour lost for him,  
 I here renounce him, and return to Henry.  
 My noble queen, let former grudges pass,  
 And henceforth I am thy true servitor.  
 I will revenge his wrong to lady Bona,  
 And replant Henry in his former state.

*Q. Mar.* Warwick, these words have turn'd my hate to  
 love;

And I forgive and quite forget old faults,  
 And joy that thou becom'st king Henry's friend.

*War.* So much his friend, ay, his unfeigned friend,  
 That if king Lewis vouchsafe to furnish us  
 With some few bands of chosen soldiers,  
 I'll undertake to land them on our coast,  
 And force the tyrant from his seat by war.  
 'Tis not his new-made bride shall succour him:  
 And as for Clarence, as my letters tell me,  
 He's very likely now to fall from him,  
 For matching more for wanton lust than honour,  
 Or than for strength and safety of our country.

*Bona.* Dear brother, how shall Bona be reveng'd,  
 But by thy help to this distressed queen?

*Q. Mar.* Renowned prince, how shall poor Henry live,  
 Unless thou rescue him from foul despair?

*Bona.* My quarrel, and this English queen's, are one.

*War.* And mine, fair lady Bona, joins with yours.

*R. Lew.* And mine, with hers, and thine, and Margaret's  
 Therefore, at last I firmly am resolv'd,  
 You shall have aid.

*Q. Mar.* Let me give humble thanks for all at once.

*R. Lew.* Then England's messenger, return in post;  
 And tell false Edward, thy supposed king,  
 That Lewis of France is sending over maskers,  
 To revel it with him and his new bride:  
 Thou seest what 's past; go fear thy king withal.

*Bona.* Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,  
 I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.



*Q. Mar.* Tell him, my mourning weeds are laid aside,  
And I am ready to put armour on.

*War.* Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong,  
And therefore I'll uncrown him ere 't be long.  
There's thy reward: be gone. [Exit P

*R. Lew.* But, Warwick,  
Thou and Oxford, with five thousand men,  
Shall cross the seas, and bid false Edward battle:  
And, as occasion serves, this noble queen  
And prince shall follow with a fresh supply.  
Yet, ere thou go, but answer me one doubt:  
What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty?

*War.* This shall assure my constant loyalty: —  
That if our queen and this young prince agree,  
I'll join mine eldest daughter, and my joy,  
To him forthwith in holy wedlock bands.

*Q. Mar.* Yes, I agree, and thank you for your motion.  
Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous,  
Therefore delay not, give thy hand to Warwick;  
And with thy hand thy faith irrevocable,  
That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine.

*Prince.* Yes, I accept her, for she well deserves it;  
And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand.

[He gives his hand to WARWICK]

*R. Lew.* Why stay we now? These soldiers shall be levied  
And thou, lord Bourbon, our high admiral,  
Shall waft them over with our royal fleet. —  
I long, till Edward fall by war's mischance,  
For mocking marriage with a dame of France.

[Exeunt all but WARWICK]

*War.* I came from Edward as ambassador,  
But I return his sworn and mortal foe:  
Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,  
But dreadful war shall answer his demand.  
Had he none else to make a stale but me?  
Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow.  
*I was the chief that rais'd him to the crown,*

I'll be chief to bring him down again :  
 hat I pity Henry's misery ,  
 seek revenge on Edward's mockery.

[*Exit.*]

# ACT IV. SCENE I.

London. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter GLOSTER, CLARENCE, SOMERSET, MONTAGUE.*

*Glo.* Now tell me, brother Clarence, what think you  
 his new marriage with the lady Grey?

h not our brother made a worthy choice?

*Clar.* Alas! you know, 't is far from hence to France :

could he stay till Warwick made return?

*Som.* My lords, forbear this talk : here comes the king

*ourish. Enter King EDWARD, attended; Lady GREY, as  
 Queen; PEMBROKE, STAFFORD, and HASTINGS.*

*Glo.* And his well-chosen bride.

*Clar.* I mind to tell him plainly what I think.

*R. Edw.* Now, brother of Clarence, how like you our choice,  
 at you stand pensive as half malcontent?

*Clar.* As well as Lewis of France, or the earl of Warwick ;  
 ich are so weak of courage, and in judgment,  
 at they'll take no offence at our abuse.

*R. Edw.* Suppose they take offence without a cause,  
 y are but Lewis and Warwick : I am Edward,  
 r king and Warwick's, and must have my will.

*Glo.* And you shall have your will, because our king ;  
 hasty marriage seldom proveth well.

*R. Edw.* Yea, brother Richard, are you offended too?

*Glo.* Not I.

God forbid, that I should wish them sever'd  
 om God hath join'd together: ay, and 't were pity,  
 under them that yoke so well together.

*R. Edw.* Setting your scorns, and your mislike, aside,  
 me some reason why the lady Grey

Should not become my wife, and England's queen. —  
And you too, Somerset, and Montague,  
Speak freely what you think.

*Clar.* Then this is mine opinion — that king Lewis  
Becomes your enemy, for mocking him  
About the marriage of the lady Bona.

*Glo.* And Warwick, doing what you gave in charge,  
Is now dishonoured by this new marriage.

*R. Edw.* What, if both Lewis and Warwick be appeas'd  
By such invention as I can devise?

*Mont.* Yet to have join'd with France in such alliance,  
Would more have strengthen'd this our commonwealth  
'Gainst foreign storms, than any home-bred marriage.

*Hast.* Why, knows not Montague, that of itself  
England is safe, if true within itself?

*Mont.* But the safer, when 't is back'd with France.

*Hast.* 'T is better using France, than trusting France.  
Let us be back'd with God, and with the seas,  
Which he hath given for fence impregnable,  
And with their helps only defend ourselves:  
In them and in ourselves our safety lies.

*Clar.* For this one speech lord Hastings well deserves  
To have the heir of the lord Hungerford.

*R. Edw.* Ay, what of that? it was my will, and grant;  
And for this once my will shall stand for law.

*Glo.* And yet, methinks, your grace hath not done well,  
To give the heir and daughter of lord Scales  
Unto the brother of your loving bride:  
She better would have fitted me, or Clarence;  
But in your bride you bury brotherhood.

*Clar.* Or else you would not have bestow'd the heir  
Of the lord Bonville on your new wife's son,  
And leave your brothers to go speed elsewhere.

*R. Edw.* Alas, poor Clarence! is it for a wife,  
That thou art discontent? I will provide thee.

*Clar.* In choosing for yourself you show'd your judgment;  
Which being shallow you shall give me leave

a broker in mine own behalf;  
 I end I shortly mind to leave you.  
 v. Leave me, or tarry, Edward will be king,  
 tied unto his brother's will.  
 v. My lords, before it pleas'd his majesty  
 to state to title of a queen,  
 right, and you must all confess  
 not ignoble of descent;  
 rather than myself have had like fortune.  
 My title honours me and mine,  
 I like, to whom I would be pleasing,  
 my joys with danger and with sorrow.  
 v. My love, forbear to fawn upon their frowns,  
 rather, or what sorrow can befall thee,  
 Edward is thy constant friend,  
 true sovereign whom they must obey?  
 in they shall obey, and love thee too,  
 they seek for hatred at my hands;  
 they do, yet will I keep thee safe,  
 shall feel the vengeance of my wrath.  
 I hear, yet say not much, but think the more. [*Aside.*

*Enter a Messenger.*

v. Now, messenger, what letters, or what news,  
 come?

My sovereign liege, no letters, and few words;  
 as I, without your special pardon,  
 relate.

v. Go to, we pardon thee: therefore, in brief,  
 say words as near as thou canst guess them.  
 How makes king Lewis unto our letters?

At my depart these were his very words: —  
 Alas Edward, thy supposed king,  
 of France is sending over maskers,  
 with him and his new bride.

v. Is Lewis so brave? belike, he thinks me Henry.  
*aid lady Bona to my marriage?*

*Mess.* These were her words, utter'd with mild disdain:  
"Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,  
I'll wear the willow garland for his sake."

*R. Edw.* I blame not her, she could say little less;  
She had the wrong: but what said Henry's queen?  
For I have heard, that she was there in place.

*Mess.* "Tell him," quoth she, "my mourning weeds are done,  
And I am ready to put armour on."

*R. Edw.* Belike, she minds to play the Amazon.  
But what said Warwick to these injuries?

*Mess.* He, more incens'd against your majesty  
Than all the rest, discharg'd me with these words: —

"Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong,  
And therefore I'll uncrown him ere 't be long."

*R. Edw.* Ha! durst the traitor breathe out so proud words?  
Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn'd:  
They shall have wars, and pay for their presumption.  
But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret?

*Mess.* Ay, gracious sovereign: they are so link'd in friendship,

That young prince Edward marries Warwick's daughter.

*Clar.* Belike, the elder; Clarence will have the younger.  
Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,  
For I will hence to Warwick's other daughter;  
That, though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage  
I may not prove inferior to yourself. —  
You, that love me and Warwick, follow me.

[*Exit CLARENCE, and SOMERSET follows.*]

*Glo.* Not I.

My thoughts aim at a farther matter: I  
Stay not for the love of Edward, but the crown.

[*Aside*]

*R. Edw.* Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick!  
Yet am I arm'd against the worst can happen,  
And haste is needful in this desperate case. —

*Pembroke, and Stafford,* you in our behalf  
*Go levy men, and make prepare for war;*  
*They are already, or quickly will be landed:*

in person will straight follow you.

[*Exeunt PEMBROKE and STAFFORD.*]

re I go, Hastings, and Montague,  
e my doubt. You twain, of all the rest,  
ar to Warwick by blood, and by alliance:  
e if you love Warwick more than me?

so, then both depart to him:  
r wish you foes, than hollow friends;  
f you mind to hold your true obedience,  
ie assurance with some friendly vow,  
may never have you in suspect.

mt. So God help Montague as he proves true!

ut. And Hastings as he favours Edward's cause!

Edw. Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us?

o. Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand you.

Edw. Why so; then, am I sure of victory.

therefore, let us hence; and lose no hour,

e meet Warwick with his foreign power.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

A Plain in Warwickshire.

*Enter WARWICK and OXFORD with French and other Forces.*

War. Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well:

common people by numbers swarm to us.

*Enter CLARENCE and SOMERSET.*

see, where Somerset and Clarence come!

suddenly, my lords, are we all friends?

War. Fear not that, my lord.

War. Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick:

welcome, Somerset. — I hold it cowardice,

it mistrustful where a noble heart

pawn'd an open hand in sign of love;

night I think, that Clarence, Edward's brother,

but a feigned friend to our proceedings:

come, sweet Clarence; my daughter shall be thine.

what rests, but in night's coverture,

Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd,  
 His soldiers lurking in the towns about,  
 And but attended by a simple guard,  
 We may surprise and take him at our pleasure?  
 Our scouts have found the adventure very easy:  
 That as Ulysses, and stout Diomede,  
 With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus' tents,  
 And brought from thence the Thracian fatal steeds;  
 So we, well cover'd with the night's black mantle,  
 At unawares may beat down Edward's guard,  
 And seize himself; I say not slaughter him,  
 For I intend but only to surprise him. —  
 You, that will follow me to this attempt,  
 Applaud the name of Henry with your leader.

[*They all cry, HENRY!*]

Why, then, let's on our way in silent sort:  
 For Warwick and his friends, God and Saint George! [*Exe*]

### SCENE III.

EDWARD's Camp near Warwick.

*Enter certain Watchmen, to guard the King's tent.*

1 *Watch.* Come on, my masters, each man take his stan  
 The king by this is set him down to sleep.

2 *Watch.* What, will he not to bed?

1 *Watch.* Why, no; for he hath made a solemn vow  
 Never to lie and take his natural rest,  
 Till Warwick or himself be quite suppress'd.

2 *Watch.* To-morrow then, belike, shall be the day,  
 If Warwick be so near as men report.

3 *Watch.* But say, I pray, what nobleman is that,  
 That with the king here resteth in his tent?

1 *Watch.* 'T is the lord Hastings, the king's chiefest frie

3 *Watch.* O! is it so? But why commands the king,  
 That his chief followers lodge in towns about him,  
 While he himself keeps in the cold field?

2 *Watch.* 'T is the more honour, because more danger

3 *Watch.* Ay, but give me worship and quietness;  
I like it better than a dangerous honour.

If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,  
Tis to be doubted, he would waken him.

1 *Watch.* Unless our halberds did shut up his passage.

2 *Watch.* Ay; wherefore else guard we his royal tent,  
But to defend his person from night-foes?

*Enter WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET, and Forces.*

*War.* This is his tent; and see, where stand his guard.  
Courage, my masters! honour now, or never!  
But follow me, and Edward shall be ours.

1 *Watch.* Who goes there?

2 *Watch.* Stay, or thou diest.

[*WARWICK, and the rest, cry all—WARWICK! WARWICK! and set upon the Guard; who fly, crying—Arm! Arm! WARWICK, and the rest, following them.*

*Drums beating, and Trumpets sounding, re-enter WARWICK, and the rest, bringing the King out in his Gown, sitting in a Chair: GLOSTER and HASTINGS fly over the stage.*

*Som.* What are they that fly there?

*War.* Richard, and Hastings: let them go; here 's the duke.

*R. Edw.* The duke! why, Warwick, when we parted last,  
Thou call'dst me king!

*War.* Ay, but the case is alter'd:  
When you disgrac'd me in my embassy,  
Then I degraded you from being king,  
And come now to create you duke of York.  
Alas! how should you govern any kingdom,  
That know not how to use ambassadors,  
Nor how to be contented with one wife,  
Nor how to use your brothers brotherly,  
Nor how to study for the people's welfare,  
Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies?

*R. Edw.* Yes, brother of Clarence, art thou here too?



Nay then, I see that Edward needs must down. —  
 Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance,  
 Of thee thyself, and all thy complices,  
 Edward will always bear himself as king:  
 Though fortune's malice overthrow my state,  
 My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.

*War.* Then, for his mind be Edward England's king:

[*Takes off his Crown.*]

But Henry now shall wear the English crown,  
 And be true king indeed; thou but the shadow. —  
 My lord of Somerset, at my request,  
 See that forthwith duke Edward be convey'd  
 Unto my brother, archbishop of York.  
 When I have fought with Pembroke and his fellows,  
 I'll follow you, and tell what answer  
 Lewis, and the lady Bona, send to him: —  
 Now, for a while farewell, good duke of York.

*R. Edw.* What fates impose, that men must needs abide:  
 It boots not to resist both wind and tide.

[*Exit King EDWARD, led out; SOMERSET with him.*]

*Oxf.* What now remains, my lords, for us to do,  
 But march to London with our soldiers?

*War.* Ay, that's the first thing that we have to do;  
 To free king Henry from imprisonment,  
 And see him seated in the regal throne.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE IV.

London. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH and RIVERS.*

*Riv.* Madam, what makes you in this sudden change?

*Q. Eliz.* Why, brother Rivers, are you yet to learn,  
 What late misfortune is befallen king Edward?

*Riv.* What! loss of some pitch'd battle against Warwick?

*Q. Eliz.* No, but the loss of his own royal person.

*Riv.* Then, is my sovereign slain?

*Q. Eliz.* Ay, almost slain, for he is taken prisoner;

betray'd by falsehood of his guard,  
 his foe surpris'd at unawares :  
 I farther have to understand,  
 committed to the bishop of York,  
 Warwick's brother, and by that our foe.

These news, I must confess, are full of grief;  
 gracious Madam, bear it as you may :  
 I may lose, that now hath won the day.  
 'Till then, fair hope must hinder life's decay ;  
 I rather wean me from despair,  
 of Edward's offspring in my womb :  
 that makes me bridle passion,  
 I with mildness my misfortune's cross ;  
 for this I draw in many a tear,  
 O the rising of blood-sucking sighs,  
 O my sighs or tears I blast or drown  
 Edward's fruit, true heir to th' English crown.

But, Madam, where is Warwick then become ?  
 'Tis I am informed, that he comes towards London,  
 the crown once more on Henry's head.  
 I'll save you the rest ; king Edward's friends must down :  
 I'll prevent the tyrant's violence,  
 I'll not him that hath once broken faith)  
 I'll go forthwith unto the sanctuary,  
 at least the heir of Edward's right :  
 I'll call I rest secure from force, and fraud.  
 I'll be before ; let us fly while we may fly :  
 I'll pick take us we are sure to die.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE V.

A Park near Middleham Castle in Yorkshire.

GLOSTER, HASTINGS, Sir WILLIAM STANLEY, and  
*Others.*

Now, my lord Hastings, and Sir William Stanley,  
 I wonder why I drew you hither,  
 I'll tell you the thicket of the park.

Thus stands the case. You know, our king, my brother,  
Is prisoner to the bishop here, at whose hands  
He hath good usage and great liberty,  
And often, but attended with weak guard,  
Comes hunting this way to disport himself.  
I have advertis'd him by secret means,  
That if about this hour he make this way,  
Under the colour of his usual game,  
He shall here find his friends, with horse and men,  
To set him free from his captivity.

*Enter King EDWARD, and a Huntsman.*

*Hunt.* This way, my lord, for this way lies the game.

*R. Edw.* Nay, this way, man: see, where the hunts  
stand. —

Now, brother of Gloster, lord Hastings, and the rest,  
Stand you thus close to steal the bishop's deer?

*Glo.* Brother, the time and case requireth haste.

Your horse stands ready at the park corner.

*R. Edw.* But whither shall we then?

*Hast.* To Lynn, my lord; and ship from thence to Flan

*Glo.* Well guess'd, believe me; for that was my meanin

*R. Edw.* Stanley, I will requite thy forwardness.

*Glo.* But wherefore stay we? 't is no time to talk.

*R. Edw.* Huntsman, what say'st thou? wilt thou go alor

*Hunt.* Better do so, than tarry and be hang'd.

*Glo.* Come then; away! let's have no more ado.

*R. Edw.* Bishop, farewell: shield thee from Warwick's fr  
And pray that I may repossess the crown. [Exi

## SCENE VI.

A Room in the Tower.

*Enter King HENRY, CLARENCE, WARWICK, SOMERSET, y  
RICHMOND, OXFORD, MONTAGUE, Lieutenant of the To  
and Attendants.*

*R. Hen.* Master lieutenant, now that God and friends  
Have shaken Edward from the regal seat,

I turn'd my captive state to liberty,  
 fear to hope, my sorrows unto joys,  
 our enlargement what are thy due fees?

*Lieu.* Subjects may challenge nothing of their sovereigns;  
 if an humble prayer may prevail,  
 then crave pardon of your majesty.

*R. Hen.* For what, lieutenant? for well using me?  
 ay, be thou sure, I'll well requite thy kindness,  
 or that it made my imprisonment a pleasure:

ay, such a pleasure as incaged birds  
 conceive, when; after many moody thoughts,  
 last by notes of household harmony  
 they quite forget their loss of liberty. —

But, Warwick, after God, thou set'st me free,  
 and chiefly therefore I thank God, and thee;  
 he was the author, thou the instrument.

Therefore, that I may conquer fortune's spite,  
 living low, where fortune cannot hurt me,  
 and that the people of this blessed land  
 may not be punish'd with my thwarting stars,  
 Warwick, although my head still wear the crown,  
 here resign my government to thee,  
 for thou art fortunate in all thy deeds.

*War.* Your grace hath still been fam'd for virtuous,  
 and now may seem as wise as virtuous,  
 spying, and avoiding, fortune's malice;  
 for few men rightly temper with the stars:  
 in this one thing let me blame your grace,  
 for choosing me when Clarence is in place.

*Clar.* No, Warwick, thou art worthy of the sway,  
 whom the heavens in thy nativity  
 judg'd an olive branch, and laurel crown,  
 likely to be blest in peace, and war;  
 and, therefore, I yield thee my free consent.

*War.* And I choose Clarence only for protector.

*R. Hen.* Warwick, and Clarence, give me both your hands.  
 Join your hands, and with your hands your hearts,

That no dissension hinder government :  
I make you both protectors of this land ,  
While I myself will lead a private life ,  
And in devotion spend my latter days ,  
To sin's rebuke , and my Creator's praise.

*War.* What answers Clarence to his sovereign's will ?

*Clar.* That he consents , if Warwick yield consent ;  
For on thy fortune I repose myself.

*War.* Why then , though loath , yet must I be content.  
We 'll yoke together , like a double shadow  
To Henry's body , and supply his place ;  
I mean , in bearing weight of government ,  
While he enjoys the honour , and his ease.  
And , Clarence , now then , it is more than needful ,  
Forthwith that Edward be pronounc'd a traitor ,  
And all his lands and goods confiscated.

*Clar.* What else ? and that succession be determin'd.

*War.* Ay , therein Clarence shall not want his part.

*R. Hen.* But , with the first of all your chief affairs ,  
Let me entreat , ( for I command no more )  
That Margaret your queen , and my son Edward ,  
Be sent for to return from France with speed ;  
For , till I see them here , by doubtful fear  
My joy of liberty is half eclips'd.

*Clar.* It shall be done , my sovereign , with all speed.

*R. Hen.* My lord of Somerset , what youth is that ,  
Of whom you seem to have so tender care ?

*Som.* My liege , it is young Henry , earl of Richmond.

*R. Hen.* Come hither , England's hope : if secret powers

*[Lays his Hand on his Head]*

Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts ,  
This pretty lad will prove our country's bliss.

*His looks are full of peaceful majesty ;*

*His head by nature fram'd to wear a crown ,*

*His hand to wield a sceptre ; and himself  
Likely in time to bless a regal throne.*

rich of him, my lords; for this is he,  
 p you more than you are hurt by me.

*Enter a Messenger.*

. What news, my friend?  
 . That Edward is escaped from your brother,  
 , as he hears since, to Burgundy.  
 . Unsavoury news! but how made he escape?  
 . He was convey'd by Richard duke of Gloster,  
 lord Hastings, who attended him  
 : ambush on the forest side,  
 n the bishop's huntsmen rescued him,  
 ing was his daily exercise.  
 . My brother was too careless of his charge. —  
 s hence, my sovereign, to provide  
 or any sore that may betide.

*[Exeunt King HENRY, WARWICK, CLARENCE, Lieutenant, and Attendants.]*

. My lord, I like not of this flight of Edward's,  
 ubtless, Burgundy will yield him help,  
 shall have more wars, before 't be long.  
 y's late presaging prophecy  
 my heart with hope of this young Richmond,  
 my heart misgive me, in these conflicts  
 ay befall him, to his harm and ours:  
 e, lord Oxford, to prevent the worst,  
 h we 'll send him hence to Brittany,  
 ms be past of civil enmity.

Ay; for if Edward repossess the crown,  
 that Richmond with the rest shall down.

. It shall be so; he shall to Brittany.  
 erefore; let's about it speedily.

*[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE VII.

Before York.

*Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and Forces.*

*R. Edw.* Now; brother Richard, lord Hastings, and the re  
 Yet thus far fortune maketh us amends,  
 And says that once more I shall interchange  
 My waned state for Henry's regal crown.  
 Well have we pass'd, and now repass'd the seas,  
 And brought desired help from Burgundy:  
 What then remains, we being thus arriv'd  
 From Ravenspurgh haven before the gates of York,  
 But that we enter as into our dukedom?

*Glo.* The gates made fast! — Brother, I like not this;  
 For many men, that stumble at the threshold,  
 Are well foretold that danger lurks within.

*R. Edw.* Tush, man! abodements must not now affright  
 By fair or foul means we must enter in,  
 For hither will our friends repair to us.

*Hast.* My liege, I'll knock once more to summon them.

*Enter, on the Walls, the Mayor of York, and his Brethren*

*May.* My lords, we were forewarned of your coming,  
 And shut the gates for safety of ourselves;  
 For now we owe allegiance unto Henry.

*R. Edw.* But, master mayor, if Henry be your king,  
 Yet Edward, at the least, is duke of York.

*May.* True, my good lord; I know you for no less.

*R. Edw.* Why, and I challenge nothing but my dukedom,  
 As being well content with that alone.

*Glo.* But when the fox hath once got in his nose,  
 He'll soon find means to make the body follow. [*Aside*]

*Hast.* Why, master mayor, why stand you in a doubt?  
 Open the gates: we are king Henry's friends.

*May.* Ay, say you so? the gates shall then be open'd.

*[Exeunt from above]*

*Glo.* A wise stout captain, and soon persuaded.

*Hast.* The good old man would fain that all were well,  
So 't were not 'long of him; but, being enter'd,  
I doubt not, I, but we shall soon persuade  
Both him and all his brothers unto reason.

*Re-enter the Mayor, and Two Aldermen, below.*

*K. Edw.* So, master mayor: these gates must not be shut,  
But in the night, or in the time of war.  
What! fear not, man, but yield me up the keys, [*Takes his Keys.*]  
For Edward will defend the town, and thee,  
And all those friends that deign to follow me.

*March. Enter MONTGOMERY, and Forces.*

*Glo.* Brother, this is Sir John Montgomery,  
Our trusty friend, unless I be deceiv'd.

*K. Edw.* Welcome, Sir John; but why come you in arms?

*Mont.* To help King Edward in his time of storm,  
As every loyal subject ought to do.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, good Montgomery; but we now forget  
Our title to the crown, and only claim  
Our dukedom, till God please to send the rest.

*Mont.* Then fare you well, for I will hence again:  
I came to serve a king, and not a duke. —  
Drummer, strike up, and let us march away. [*A March begun.*]

*K. Edw.* Nay, stay, Sir John, a while; and we 'll debate,  
By what safe means the crown may be recover'd.

*Mont.* What talk you of debating? in few words,  
If you 'll not here proclaim yourself our king,  
I 'll leave you to your fortune, and be gone  
To keep them back that come to succour you.  
Why shall we fight, if you pretend no title?

*Glo.* Why, brother, wherefore stand you on nice points?

*K. Edw.* When we grow stronger, then we 'll make our claim.  
Till then, 't is wisdom to conceal our meaning.

*Hast.* Away with scrupulous wit, now arms must rule.

*Glo.* And fearless minds climb soonest unto crowns.  
Brother, we will proclaim you out of hand:  
*The bruit thereof will bring you many friends.*



*R. Edw.* Then be it as you will; for 't is my right,  
And Henry but usurps the diadem.

*Mont.* Ay, now my sovereign speaketh like himself,  
And now will I be Edward's champion.

*Hast.* Sound, trumpet! Edward shall be hero proclaim'd. —  
Come, fellow-soldier, make thou proclamation.

[*Gives him a Paper. Flourish.*]

*Sold.* [*Reads.*] "Edward the fourth, by the grace of God,  
king of England and France, and lord of Ireland, &c.

*Mont.* And whosoe'er gainsays king Edward's right,  
By this I challenge him to single fight.

[*Throws down his Gauntlet.*]

*All.* Long live Edward the fourth!

*R. Edw.* Thanks, brave Montgomery, and thanks unto you  
all:

If fortune serve me, I 'll requite this kindness.

Now, for this night, let 's harbour here in York,

And when the morning sun shall raise his car

Above the border of this horizon,

We 'll forward towards Warwick, and his mates;

For, well I wot, that Henry is no soldier. —

Ah, froward Clarence! how evil it beseems thee,

To flatter Henry, and forsake thy brother!

Yet, as we may, we 'll meet both thee and Warwick. —

Come on, brave soldiers: doubt not of the day;

And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VIII.

London. A Room in the Palace.

*Flourish.* Enter King HENRY, WARWICK, CLARENCE, MONTAGUE, EXETER, and OXFORD.

*War.* What counsel, lords? Edward from Belgia,  
With hasty Germans, and blunt Hollanders,  
Hath pass'd in safety through the narrow seas,  
And with his troops doth march amain to London;  
And many giddy people flock to him.

*R. Hen.* Let's levy men, and beat him back again.

*Clar.* A little fire is quickly trodden out,  
Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.

*War.* In Warwickshire I have true-hearted friends,  
Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war;  
Those will I muster up: — and thou, son Clarence,  
Shalt stir up in Suffolk, Norfolk, and in Kent,  
The knights and gentlemen to come with thee: —  
Thou, brother Montague, in Buckingham,  
Northampton, and in Leicestershire, shalt find  
Men well inclin'd to hear what thou command'st: —  
And thou, brave Oxford, wondrous well belov'd,  
In Oxfordshire shalt muster up thy friends. —  
My sovereign, with the loving citizens,  
Like to his island girt in with the ocean,  
Or modest Dian circled with her nymphs,  
Shall rest in London, till we come to him. —  
Fair lords, take leave, and stand not to reply. —  
Farewell, my sovereign.

*R. Hen.* Farewell, my Hector, and my Troy's true hope.

*Clar.* In sign of truth, I kiss your Highness' hand.

*R. Hen.* Well-minded Clarence, be thou fortunate.

*Mont.* Comfort, my lord; — and so I take my leave.

*Oxf.* And thus [*Kissing HENRY's hand.*] I seal my truth,  
and bid adieu.

*R. Hen.* Sweet Oxford, and my loving Montague,  
And all at once, once more a happy farewell.

*War.* Farewell, sweet lords: let's meet at Coventry.

[*Exeunt WAR. CLAR. OXF. and MONT.*]

*R. Hen.* Here at the palace will I rest a while.

Cousin of Exeter, what thinks your lordship?

Methinks, the power, that Edward hath in field,  
Should not be able to encounter mine.

*Exe.* The doubt is, that he will seduce the rest.

*R. Hen.* That's not my fear; my meed hath got me fame.

I have not stopp'd mine ears to their demands,  
Nor posted off their suits with slow delays;

My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds,  
 My mildness hath allay'd their swelling griefs,  
 My mercy dry'd their water-flowing tears:  
 I have not been desirous of their wealth,  
 Nor much oppress'd them with great subsidies,  
 Nor forward of revenge, though they much err'd.  
 Then, why should they love Edward more than me?  
 No, Exeter, these graces challenge grace;  
 And, when the lion fawns upon the lamb,  
 The lamb will never cease to follow him.

[*Shout within. A Lancaster! A Lancaster!*]

*Exe.* Hark, hark, my lord! what shouts are these?

*Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, and Soldiers.*

*K. Edw.* Seize on the shame-fac'd Henry! bear him hence  
 And once again proclaim us king of England. —  
 You are the fount that makes small brooks to flow:  
 Now stops thy spring; my sea shall suck them dry,  
 And swell so much the higher by their ebb. —  
 Hence with him to the Tower! let him not speak.

[*Exeunt some with King Henry*]

And, lords, towards Coventry bend we our course,  
 Where peremptory Warwick now remains.  
 The sun shines hot, and, if we use delay,  
 Cold biting winter mars our hop'd-for hay.

*Glo.* Away betimes, before his forces join,  
 And take the great-grown traitor unawares.  
 Brave warriors, march amain towards Coventry

[*Exeunt*]

## ACT V. SCENE I.

Coventry.

*Enter upon the Walls, WARWICK, the Mayor of Coventry, 1  
 Messengers, and Others.*

*War.* Where is the post that came from valiant Oxford?  
*How far hence is thy lord, mine honest fellow?*

**1 Mess.** By this at Dunsmore, marching hitherward.

**War.** How far off is our brother Montague? —  
Where is the post that came from Montague?

**2 Mess.** By this at Daintry, with a puissant troop.

*Enter Sir JOHN SOMERVILLE.*

**War.** Say, Somerville, what says my loving son?  
And, by thy guess, how nigh is Clarence now?

**Som.** At Southam I did leave him with his forces,  
And do expect him here some two hours hence. [*Drum heard.*]

**War.** Then Clarence is at hand, I hear his drum.

**Som.** It is not his, my lord; here Southam lies:  
The drum your honour hears marcheth from Warwick.

**War.** Who should that be? belike, unlook'd-for friends.

**Som.** They are at hand, and you shall quickly know.

**March. Flourish. Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, and Forces.**

**R. Edw.** Go, trumpet, to the walls, and sound a parle.

**Glo.** See, how the surly Warwick mans the wall.

**War.** O, unbid spite! is sportful Edward come?  
Where slept our scouts, or how are they seduc'd,  
That we could hear no news of his repair?

**R. Edw.** Now, Warwick, wilt thou ope the city gates?  
Speak gentle words, and humbly bend thy knee,  
Call Edward king, and at his hands beg mercy,  
And he shall pardon thee these outrages.

**War.** Nay, rather, wilt thou draw thy forces hence,  
Confess who set thee up and pluck'd thee down?  
Call Warwick patron, and be penitent,  
And thou shalt still remain the duke of York.

**Glo.** I thought, at least, he would have said the king;  
Or did he make the jest against his will?

**War.** Is not a dukedom, Sir, a goodly gift?

**Glo.** Ay, by my faith, for a poor earl to give:  
I'll do thee service for so good a gift.

**War.** 'T was I, that gave the kingdom to thy brother.

**R. Edw.** Why then, 't is mine, if but by Warwick's gift.

**War.** Thou art no Atlas for so great a weight:

And, weakling, Warwick takes his gift again :  
And Heury is my king, Warwick his subject.

*R. Edw.* But Warwick's king is Edward's prisoner :  
And, gallant Warwick, do but answer this ;  
What is the body, when the head is off ?

*Glo.* Alas ! that Warwick had no more forecast ,  
But, whiles he thought to steal the single ten ,  
The king was sllily finger'd from the deck !  
You left poor Henry at the bishop's palace ,  
And, ten to one, you 'll meet him in the Tower.

*R. Edw.* 'T is even so ; yet you are Warwick still.

*Glo.* Come, Warwick, take the time ; kneel down, I  
down.

Nay, when ? strike now, or else the iron cools.

*War.* I had rather chop this hand off at a blow ,  
And with the other fling it at thy face ,  
Than bear so low a sail to strike to thee.

*R. Edw.* Sail how thou canst, have wind and tide thy fri  
This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black hair ,  
Shall, whiles thy head is warm, and new cut off ,  
Write in the dust this sentence with thy blood, —  
“Wind-changing Warwick now can change no more.”

*Enter OXFORD, with Drum and Colours.*

*War.* O cheerful colours ! see, where Oxford comes.

*Oxf.* Oxford, Oxford, for Lancaster !

[*OXFORD and his Forces enter the*

*Glo.* The gates are open, let us enter too.

*R. Edw.* So other foes may set upon our backs.  
Stand we in good array ; for they, no doubt ,  
Will issue out again, and bid us battle :  
If not, the city being but of small defence ,  
We 'll quickly rouse the traitors in the same.

*War.* O ! welcome Oxford, for we want thy help.

*Enter MONTAGUE, with Drum and Colours.*

*Mont.* Montague, Montague, for Lancaster !

[*He and his Forces enter the*

*Glo.* Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason,  
 with the dearest blood your bodies bear.

*R. Edw.* The harder match'd, the greater victory:  
 mind presageth happy gain, and conquest.

*Enter SOMERSET, with Drum and Colours.*

*Som.* Somerset, Somerset, for Lancaster!

*[He and his Forces enter the City.]*

*Glo.* Two of thy name, both dukes of Somerset,  
 sold their lives unto the house of York;  
 thou shalt be the third, if this sword hold.

*Enter CLARENCE, with Drum and Colours.*

*War.* And lo! where George of Clarence sweeps along,  
 force enough to bid his brother battle;  
 in whom an upright zeal to right prevails,  
 more than the nature of a brother's love. —

*[GLOSTER and CLARENCE whisper.]*

*Cl.* Clarence, come; thou wilt, if Warwick calls.

*War.* Father of Warwick, know you what this means?

*[Taking the red Rose out of his Hat.]*

Look here, I throw my infamy at thee:

I will not ruinate my father's house,  
 nor gave his blood to lime the stones together,  
 to set up Lancaster. Why, trow'st thou, Warwick,  
 that Clarence is so harsh, so blunt, unnatural,  
 to send the fatal instruments of war  
 against his brother, and his lawful king?  
 Perhaps, thou wilt object my holy oath:  
 I keep that oath, were more impiety  
 in Jephtha's, when he sacrific'd his daughter.  
 I am so sorry for my trespass made,  
 that I to deserve well at my brother's hands,  
 will proclaim myself thy mortal foe;  
 with resolution, whereso'er I meet thee,  
 I will meet thee, if thou stir abroad)  
 I plague thee for thy foul misleading me.  
 So, proud-hearted Warwick, I defy thee,

And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks. —  
 Pardon me, Edward, I will make amends;  
 And, Richard, do not frown upon my faults,  
 For I will henceforth be no more unconstant.

*R. Edw.* Now welcome more, and ten times more belov'd,  
 Than if thou never hadst deserv'd our hate.

*Glo.* Welcome, good Clarence: this is brother-like.

*War.* O passing traitor, perjur'd, and unjust!

*R. Edw.* What, Warwick, wilt thou leave the town, and  
 fight,

Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears?

*War.* Alas! I am not coop'd here for defence:  
 I will away towards Barnet presently,  
 And bid thee battle, Edward, if thou dar'st.

*R. Edw.* Yes, Warwick, Edward dares, and leads the way.—  
 Lords, to the field! Saint George, and victory! [*March. Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

A Field of Battle near Barnet.

*Alarums, and Excursions. Enter King EDWARD, bringing in  
 WARWICK wounded.*

*R. Edw.* So, lie thou there: die thou, and die our fear,  
 For Warwick was a bug, that fear'd us all. —  
 Now, Montague, sit fast: I seek for thee,  
 That Warwick's bones may keep thine company. [*Exit.*]

*War.* Ah! who is nigh? come to me, friend or foe,  
 And tell me, who is victor, York, or Warwick?  
 Why ask I that? my mangled body shows,  
 My blood, my want of strength, my sick heart shows,  
 That I must yield my body to the earth,  
 And by my fall the conquest to my foe.  
 Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge,  
 Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle,  
 Under whose shade the ramping lion slept;  
 Whose top-branch overpeer'd Jove's spreading tree,  
 And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful wind.

now are dimm'd with death's black veil,  
 cing as the mid-day sun,  
 et treasons of the world:  
 y brows, now fill'd with blood,  
 o kingly sepulchres;  
 ;, but I could dig his grave?  
 ile when Warwick bent his brow?  
 y smear'd in dust and blood!  
 lks, my manors that I had,  
 me; and, of all my lands,  
 , but my body's length.  
 np, rule, reign, but earth and dust?  
 ' we can, yet die we must.

*Enter OXFORD and SOMERSET.*

Varwick, Warwick! wert thou as we are,  
 all our loss again.

France hath brought a puissant power;  
 and the news. Ah, could'st thou fly!

then I would not fly. — Ah, Montague!  
 sweet brother, take my hand,  
 keep in my soul awhile.

t; for, brother, if thou didst,  
 wash this cold congealed blood,  
 ;, and will not let me speak.

Montague, or I am dead.

Varwick! Montague hath breath'd his last;

gasp, cried out for Warwick,  
 commend me to my valiant brother."

ld have said; and more he spoke,

ke a cannon in a vault,  
 distinguish'd: but, at last,

, deliver'd with a groan, —  
 urwick!"

rest his soul! — Fly, lords, and save yourselves;  
 you all farewell, to meet in heaven. [Dies.

way, to meet the queen's great power!

*[Exeunt, bearing off WARWICK's Body.]*



## SCENE III.

Another Part of the Field.

*Flourish. Enter King EDWARD in triumph; with CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and the rest.*

*R. Edw.* Thus far our fortune keeps an upward course,  
And we are grac'd with wreaths of victory.  
But, in the midst of this bright-shining day,  
I spy a black, suspicious, threat'ning cloud,  
That will encounter with our glorious sun,  
Ere he attain his easeful western bed:  
I mean, my lords, those powers, that the queen  
Hath rais'd in Gallia, have arriv'd our coast,  
And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

*Clar.* A little gale will soon disperse that cloud,  
And blow it to the source from whence it came:  
Thy very beams will dry those vapours up,  
For every cloud engenders not a storm.

*Glo.* The queen is valu'd thirty thousand strong,  
And Somerset, with Oxford, fled to her:  
If she have time to breathe, be well assur'd,  
Her faction will be full as strong as ours.

*R. Edw.* We are advertis'd by our loving friends,  
That they do hold their course toward Tewksbury.  
We, having now the best at Barnet field,  
Will thither straight, for willingness rides way;  
And, as we march, our strength will be augmented  
In every county as we go along. —  
Strike up the drum! cry — Courage! and away.

*[Flourish. Exeunt.]*

## SCENE IV.

Plains near Tewksbury.

*March. Enter Queen MARGARET, Prince EDWARD, SOMERSET, OXFORD, and Soldiers.*

*Q. Mar.* Great lords, wise men ne'er sit and wail their loss,  
ut cheerly seek how to redress their harms.

hough the mast be now blown over-board,  
 ple broke, the holding anchor lost,  
 If our sailors swallow'd in the flood;  
 s our pilot still: is 't meet that he  
 leave the helm, and, like a fearful lad,  
 earful eyes add water to the sea,  
 ve more strength to that which hath too much;  
 s in his moan the ship splits on the rock,  
 industry and courage might have sav'd?  
 hat a shame, ah! what a fault were this.  
 Warwick was our anchor; what of that?  
 ontague our top-mast; what of him?  
 ughter'd friends the tackles; what of these?  
 is not Oxford here another anchor,  
 omerset another goodly mast?  
 ends of France our shrouds and tacklings?  
 though unskilful, why not Ned and I  
 be allow'd the skilful pilot's charge?  
 ll not from the helm to sit and weep,  
 ep our course, though the rough wind say no,  
 helves and rocks that threaten us with wreck.  
 d to chide the waves, as speak them fair.  
 hat is Edward but a ruthless sea?  
 Clarence but a quicksand of deceit?  
 ichard but a ragged fatal rock?  
 se the enemies to our poor bark.  
 ou can swim; alas! 't is but a while:  
 on the sand; why, there you quickly sink:  
 le the rock; the tide will wash you off,  
 you famish; that's a threefold death.  
 eak I, lords, to let you understand,  
 some one of you would fly from us,  
 ere 's no hop'd-for mercy with the brothers,  
 han with ruthless waves, with sands, and rocks.  
 courage, then! what cannot be avoided,  
 ; childish weakness to lament, or fear.  
*ince. Methinks, a woman of this valiant spirit*

Should, if a coward heard her speak these words,  
 Infuse his breast with magnanimity,  
 And make him, naked, foil a man at arms.  
 I speak not this, as doubting any here;  
 For, did I but suspect a fearful man,  
 He should have leave to go away betimes,  
 Lest, in our need, he might infect another,  
 And make him of like spirit to himself.  
 If any such be here, as God forbid!  
 Let him depart before we need his help.

*Oxf.* Women and children of so high a courage,  
 And warriors faint! why, 't were perpetual shame. —  
 O, brave young prince! thy famous grandfather  
 Doth live again in thee: long may'st thou live,  
 To bear his image, and renew his glories!

*Som.* And he, that will not fight for such a hope,  
 Go home to bed, and, like the owl by day,  
 If he arise, be mock'd and wonder'd at.

*Q. Mar.* Thanks, gentle Somerset: — sweet Oxford, thanks  
*Prince.* And take his thanks, that yet hath nothing else.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Prepare you, lords, for Edward is at hand,  
 Ready to fight: therefore, be resolute.

*Oxf.* I thought no less: it is his policy,  
 To haste thus fast to find us unprovided.

*Som.* But he's deceiv'd: we are in readiness.

*Q. Mar.* This cheers my heart to see your forwardness.

*Oxf.* Here pitch our battle; hence we will not budge.

*Flourish and March. Enter King EDWARD, CLARENCE,  
 GLOSTER, and Forces.*

*K. Edw.* Brave followers, yonder stands the thorny wood,  
 Which, by the heavens' assistance and your strength,  
 Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.

*I need not add more fuel to your fire,  
 For, well I wot, ye blaze to burn them out.  
 Give signal to the fight, and to it, lords.*

*Mar.* Lords, knights, and gentlemen, what I should say,  
 's gainsay; for every word I speak,  
 I drink the water of my eye.  
 ere, no more but this: — Henry, your sovereign,  
 ner to the foe; his state usurp'd,  
 lm a slaughterhouse, his subjects slain,  
 tutes cancell'd, and his treasure spent;  
 nder is the wolf that makes this spoil.  
 ht in justice: then, in God's name, lords,  
 ant, and give signal to the fight. [*Exeunt both Armies.*]

## SCENE V.

Another Part of the Same.

*us: Excursions: and afterwards a Retreat. Then enter  
 EDWARD, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and Forces; with Queen  
 GARET, OXFORD, and SOMERSET, Prisoners.*

*Edw.* Now, here a period of tumultuous broils.  
 with Oxford to Hammes' castle straight:  
 nerset, off with his guilty head.

ar them hence: I will not hear them speak.

*f.* For my part, I'll not trouble thee with words.

*z.* Nor I; but stoop with patience to my fortune.

[*Exeunt OXFORD and SOMERSET, guarded.*]

*Mar.* So part we sadly in this troublous world,  
 t with joy in sweet Jerusalem.

*Edw.* Is proclamation made, that who finds Edward  
 ave a high reward, and he his life?

. It is: and, lo! where youthful Edward comes.

*Enter Soldiers, with Prince EDWARD.*

*Edw.* Bring forth the gallant: let us hear him speak.

can so young a thorn begin to prick?

l, what satisfaction canst thou make,  
 ring arms, for stirring up my subjects,  
 the trouble thou hast turn'd me to?

*e.* Speak like a subject, proud ambitious York.  
 that I am now my father's mouth:

Resign thy chair, and where I stand kneel thou,  
 Whilst I propose the self-same words to thee,  
 Which, traitor, thou wouldst have me answer to.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, that thy father had been so resolv'd!

*Glo.* That you might still have worn the petticoat,  
 And ne'er have stol'n the breech from Lancaster.

*Prince.* Let Æsop fable in a winter's night;  
 His currish riddles sort not with this place.

*Glo.* By heaven, brat, I'll plague you for that word.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, thou wast born to be a plague to men.

*Glo.* For God's sake, take away this captive scold.

*Prince.* Nay, take away this scolding crook-back, rather.

*K. Edw.* Peace! wilful boy, or I will charm your tongue.

*Clar.* Untutor'd lad, thou art too malapert.

*Prince.* I know my duty: you are all undutiful.  
 Lascivious Edward, — and thou perjur'd George,  
 And thou mis-shapen Dick, — I tell ye all,  
 I am your better, traitors as ye are; —  
 And thou usurp'st my father's right and mine.

*K. Edw.* Take that, the likeness of this railer here.

[*Stabs him.*

*Glo.* Sprawl'st thou? take that, to end thy agony.

[*Glo. stabs him.*

*Clar.* And there's for twitting me with perjury.

[*Clar. stabs him.*

*Q. Mar.* O, kill me too!

*Glo.* Marry, and shall.

[*Offers to kill her.*

*K. Edw.* Hold, Richard, hold! for we have done too much.

*Glo.* Why should she live, to fill the world with words?

*K. Edw.* What! doth she swoon? use means for her recovery.

*Glo.* Clarence, excuse me to the king, my brother.

I'll hence to London on a serious matter:  
 Ere ye come there, be sure to hear some news.

*Clar.* What? what?

*Glo.* The Tower! the Tower!

[*Exit.*

*Q. Mar.* O, Ned! sweet Ned! speak to thy mother, boy:  
*Canst thou not speak? — O traitors! murderers! —*

They, that stabb'd Cæsar shed no blood at all,  
 Did not offend, nor were not worthy blame,  
 If this foul deed were by to equal it:  
 He was a man: this, in respect, a child;  
 And men ne'er spend their fury on a child.  
 What's worse than murderer, that I may name it?  
 No, no; my heart will burst, an if I speak;  
 And I will speak, that so my heart may burst. —  
 Butchers and villains! bloody cannibals!  
 How sweet a plant have you untimely cropp'd!  
 You have no children, butchers! if you had,  
 The thought of them would have stirr'd up remorse:  
 But, if you ever chance to have a child,  
 Look in his youth to have him so cut off,  
 As, deathsmen, you have rid this sweet young prince!

*R. Edw.* Away with her! go, bear her hence perforce.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, never bear me hence, despatch me here;  
 Here sheath thy sword, I'll pardon thee my death.

What! wilt thou not? — then, Clarence, do it thou.

*Clar.* By heaven I will not do thee so much ease.

*Q. Mar.* Good Clarence, do; sweet Clarence, do thou do it.

*Clar.* Didst thou not hear me swear I would not do it.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, but thou usest to forswear thyself:

'T was sin before, but now 't is charity.

What! wilt thou not? where is that devil's butcher, Richard,

Hard-favour'd Richard? Richard, where art thou?

Thou art not here: murder is thy alms-deed;

Petitioners for blood thou ne'er put'st back.

*R. Edw.* Away, I say! I charge ye, bear her hence.

*Q. Mar.* So come to you, and yours, as to this prince!

[*Exit.*

*R. Edw.* Where's Richard gone?

*Clar.* To London, all in post; and, as I guess,  
 To make a bloody supper in the Tower.

*R. Edw.* He's sudden, if a thing comes in his head.

Now march we hence: discharge the common sort

With pay and thanks, and let's away to London,

And see our gentle queen how well she fares :  
By this, I hope, she hath a son for me.

[*Ex*]

## SCENE VI.

London. A Room in the Tower.

*King HENRY is discovered sitting with a Book in his Hand,  
Lieutenant attending. Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Good day, my lord. What! at your book so hard

*R. Hen.* Ay, my good lord: my lord, I should say rath  
'T is sin to flatter; good was little better:

Good Gloster, and good devil, were alike,

And both preposterous; therefore, not good lord.

*Glo.* Sirrah, leave us to ourselves: we must confer.

[*Exit Lieute*]

*R. Hen.* So flies the reckless shepherd from the wolf:  
So first the harmless sheep doth yield his fleece,  
And next his throat unto the butcher's knife. —  
What scene of death hath Roscius now to act?

*Glo.* Suspicion always haunts the guilty mind:  
The thief doth fear each bush an officer.

*R. Hen.* The bird, that hath been limed in a bush,  
With trembling wings misdoubteth every bush;  
And I, the hapless male to one sweet bird,  
Have now the fatal object in my eye,  
Where my poor young was lim'd, was caught, and kill'd.

*Glo.* Why, what a peevish fool was that of Crete,  
That taught his son the office of a fowl?  
And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown'd.

*R. Hen.* I, Dædalus; my poor boy, Icarus;  
Thy father, Minos, that denied our course;  
The sun, that sear'd the wings of my sweet boy,  
Thy brother Edward; and thyself, the sea,  
*Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life.*  
*Ah! kill me with thy weapon, not with words.*  
*My breast can better brook thy dagger's point.*

can my ears that tragic history.

wherefore dost thou come? is 't for my life?

*Glo.* Think'st thou I am an executioner?

*R. Hen.* A persecutor, I am sure, thou art:

murdering innocents be executing,

ay, then thou art an executioner.

*Glo.* Thy son I kill'd for his presumption.

*R. Hen.* Hadst thou been kill'd, when first thou didst presume,

thou hadst not liv'd to kill a son of mine.

I thus I prophesy, — that many a thousand,

rich now mistrust no parcel of my fear;

I many an old man's sigh, and many a widow's,

I many an orphan's water-standing eye, —

I for their sons', wives for their husbands',

husbands for their parents' timeless death,

all rue the hour that ever thou wast born.

The owl shriek'd at thy birth, an evil sign;

The night-crow cried, aboding luckless time;

The howl'd, and hideous tempest shook down trees:

The raven rook'd her on the chimney's top,

I chattering pies in dismal discords sung.

Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain,

I yet brought forth less than a mother's hope;

And wit, — an indigested and deformed lump,

like the fruit of such a goodly tree.

Thou hadst thou in thy head, when thou wast born;

signify, thou cam'st to bite the world:

Alas, if the rest be true which I have heard,

thou cam'st —

*Glo.* I'll hear no more; — Die, prophet, in thy speech:

*[Stabs him.]*

this, amongst the rest, was I ordain'd.

*R. Hen.* Ay, and for much more slaughter after this.

God forgive my sins, and pardon thee.

*[Dies.]*

*Bo.* What! will the aspiring blood of Lancaster  
contaminate the ground? I thought it would have mounted.



See, how my sword weeps for the poor king's death !  
O, may such purple tears be always shed  
From those that wish the downfall of our house ! —  
If any spark of life be yet remaining,  
Down, down to hell ; and say I sent thee thither ,

[*Sta*

I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear.  
Indeed, 't is true, that Henry told me of ;  
For I have often heard my mother say,  
I came into the world with my legs forward.  
Had I not reason, think ye, to make haste,  
And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right ?  
The midwife wonder'd ; and the women cried,  
" O, Jesus bless us, he is born with teeth ! " —  
And so I was ; which plainly signified  
That I should snarl, and bite, and play the dog.  
Then, since the heavens have shap'd my body so,  
Let hell make crook'd my mind to answer it.  
I have no brother, I am like no brother ;  
And this word love, which greybeards call divine,  
Be resident in men like one another,  
And not in me : I am myself alone. —  
Clarence, beware : thou keep'st me from the light ;  
But I will sort a pitchy day for thee :  
For I will buz abroad such prophecies,  
That Edward shall be fearful of his life ;  
And then, to purge his fear, I 'll be thy death.  
King Henry, and the prince his son, are gone :  
Clarence, thy turn is next, and then the rest ;  
Counting myself but bad, till I be best. —  
I 'll throw thy body in another room,  
And triumph, Henry, in thy day of doom.

[*Exit*

## SCENE VII.

The Same. A Room in the Palace.

*King EDWARD is discovered sitting on his Throne; Queen ELIZABETH with the infant Prince, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and Others, near him.*

*R. Edw.* Once more we sit in England's royal throne,  
Re-purchas'd with the blood of enemies.

What valiant foe-men, like to autumn's corn,  
Have we mow'd down, in tops of all their pride?  
Three dukes of Somerset, threefold renown'd  
For hardy and undoubted champions:  
Two Cliffords, as the father and the son;  
And two Northumberlands; two braver men  
Ne'er spurr'd their coursers at the trumpet's sound:  
With them, the two brave bears, Warwick and Montague,  
That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion,  
And made the forest tremble when they roar'd.  
Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat,  
And made our footstool of security. —

Come hither, Bess, and let me kiss my boy. —  
Young Ned, for thee, thine uncles, and myself,  
Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night;  
Went all a-foot in summer's scalding heat,  
That thou might'st repossess the crown in peace;  
And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain.

*Glo.* I'll blast his harvest, if your head were laid;  
For yet I am not look'd on in the world.

This shoulder was ordain'd so thick, to heave;  
And heave it shall some weight, or break my back. —  
Work thou the way, and that shall execute. *[Aside.]*

*R. Edw.* Clarence, and Gloster, love my lovely queen;  
And kiss your princely nephew, brothers both.

*Clar.* The duty, that I owe unto your majesty,  
I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe.

*R. Edw.* Thanks, noble Clarence; worthy brother, thanks.

*Glo.* And, that I love the tree from whence thou sprang'st,

Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit. —

[Aside.] To say the truth, so Julius kiss'd his master,  
And cried — all hail! when as he meant — all harm.

*E. Edw.* Now am I content as my soul delights,  
Having my country's peace, and brothers' loves.

*Clar.* What will your grace have done with Margaret?  
Reignier, her father, to the king of France  
Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem,  
And hither have they sent it for her ransom.

*E. Edw.* Away with her, and wait her hence to France  
And now what rests, but that we spend the time  
With stately triumphs, mirthful comic shows,  
Such as befit the pleasure of the court?  
Sound, drums and trumpets! — farewell, sour annoy,  
For here, I hope, begins our lasting joy. [L]

---

# LIFE AND DEATH

OF

## KING RICHARD III.

---

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

|                      |                          |                                  |
|----------------------|--------------------------|----------------------------------|
| WARD THE FOURTH.     |                          | LORD STANLEY. LORD LOVEL.        |
| Prince of            | Sons to the<br>King.     | SIR THOMAS VAUGHAN. SIR          |
| Duke of              |                          | RICHARD RATCLIFF.                |
|                      |                          | SIR WILLIAM CATESBY. SIR         |
|                      |                          | JAMES TYRREL.                    |
| Duke of              | Brothers to<br>the King. | SIR JAMES BLOUNT. SIR WAL-       |
| Duke of              |                          | TER HERBERT.                     |
|                      |                          | SIR ROBERT BRAKENBURY, Lieu-     |
|                      |                          | tenant of the Tower.             |
| n of Clarence.       |                          | CHRISTOPHER URSWICK, a           |
| arl of Richmond.     |                          | Priest. Another Priest.          |
| BOUCHIER, Arch-      |                          | Lord Mayor of London. Sheriff of |
| Canterbury.          |                          | Wiltshire.                       |
| ROTHERHAM, Arch-     |                          | ELIZABETH, Queen of King         |
| York.                |                          | Edward IV.                       |
| TON, Bishop of Ely.  |                          | MARGARET, Widow of King          |
| BUCKINGHAM.          |                          | HENRY VI.                        |
| NORFOLK: EARL OF     |                          | DUCHESS OF YORK, Mother to       |
| , his Son.           |                          | King Edward IV., Clarence, and   |
| ERS, Brother to King |                          | Gloster.                         |
| Queen: MARQUESS OF   |                          | LADY ANNE, Widow of Edward       |
| , and LORD GREY, her |                          | Prince of Wales.                 |
|                      |                          | A young Daughter of Clarence.    |
| OXFORD. LORD HAST-   |                          |                                  |

other Attendants; two Gentlemen, a Pursuivant, Scrivener,  
ens, Murderers, Messengers, Ghosts, Soldiers, &c.

SCENE, England.

---

## ACT I. SCENE I.

London. A Street.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Now is the winter of our discontent  
Made glorious summer by this sun of York;  
And all the clouds, that lower'd upon our house,  
In the deep bosom of the ocean buried.  
Now are our brows bound with victorious wreaths;  
Our bruised arms hung up for monuments;  
Our stern alarums chang'd to merry meetings,  
Our dreadful marches to delightful measures.  
Grim-visag'd war hath smooth'd his wrinkled front;  
And now, instead of mounting barbed steeds,  
To fright the souls of fearful adversaries,  
He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber,  
To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.  
But I, that am not shap'd for sportive tricks,  
Nor made to court an amorous looking-glass;  
I, that am rudely stamp'd, and want love's majesty,  
To strut before a wanton ambling nymph;  
I, that am curtail'd of this fair proportion,  
Cheated of feature by dissembling nature,  
Deform'd, unfinish'd, sent before my time  
Into this breathing world, scarce half made up,  
And that so lamely and unfashionable,  
That dogs bark at me, as I halt by them;  
Why I, in this weak piping time of peace,  
Have no delight to pass away the time,  
Unless to see my shadow in the sun,  
And descant on mine own deformity:  
And therefore, since I cannot prove a lover,  
To entertain these fair well-spoken days,  
I am determin'd to prove a villain,  
And hate the idle pleasures of these days.  
*Plots have I laid, inductions dangerous,*

By drunken prophecies, libels, and dreams,  
 To set my brother Clarence, and the king,  
 In deadly hate the one against the other:  
 And, if king Edward be as true and just,  
 As I am subtle, false, and treacherous,  
 This day should Clarence closely be mew'd up,  
 About a prophecy, which says — that G  
 Of Edward's heirs the murderer shall be.  
 Dive, thoughts, down to my soul: here Clarence comes.

*Enter CLARENCE, guarded, and BRAKENBURY.*

Brother, good day. What means this armed guard,  
 That waits upon your grace?

*Clar.* His majesty,  
 Tendering my person's safety, hath appointed  
 This conduct to convey me to the Tower.

*Glo.* Upon what cause?

*Clar.* Because my name is George.

*Glo.* Alack! my lord, that fault is none of yours:  
 He should, for that, commit your godfathers.  
 O! belike, his majesty hath some intent,  
 That you should be new christen'd in the Tower.  
 But what 's the matter, Clarence? may I know?

*Clar.* Yea, Richard, when I know; but I protest,  
 As yet I do not: but, as I can learn,  
 He hearkens after prophecies, and dreams;  
 And from the cross-row plucks the letter G,  
 And says, a wizard told him, that by G  
 His issue disinherited should be;  
 And, for my name of George begins with G,  
 It follows in his thought that I am he.  
 These, as I learn, and such like toys as these,  
 Have mov'd his highness to commit me now.

*Glo.* Why, this it is, when men are rul'd by women!  
 'T is not the king, that sends you to the Tower:  
 My lady Grey, his wife, Clarence, 't is she,  
 That tempts him to this harsh extremity.

Was it not she, and that good man of worship,  
Antony Woodeville. her brother there,  
That made him send lord Hastings to the Tower,  
From whence this present day he is deliver'd?  
We are not safe, Clarence; we are not safe.

*Clar.* By heaven, I think, there is no man secure,  
But the queen's kindred, and night-walking heralds  
That trudge betwixt the king and mistress Shore.  
Heard you not, what an humble suppliant  
Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery?

*Glo.* Humbly complaining to her deity  
Got my lord chamberlain his liberty.  
I'll tell you what; I think, it is our way,  
If we will keep in favour with the king,  
To be her men, and wear her livery:  
The jealous o'er-worn widow, and herself,  
Since that our brother dubb'd them gentlewomen,  
Are mighty gossips in our monarchy.

*Brak.* I beseech your graces both to pardon me:  
His majesty hath straitly given in charge,  
That no man shall have private conference,  
Of what degree soever, with your brother.

*Glo.* Even so; an please your worship, Brakenbury,  
You may partake of any thing we say.  
We speak no treason, man: we say, the king  
Is wise and virtuous; and his noble queen  
Well struck in years; fair, and not jealous:—  
We say that Shore's wife hath a pretty foot,  
A cherry lip, a bonny eye, a passing pleasing tongue;  
And that the queen's kindred are made gentlefolks.  
How say you, Sir? can you deny all this?

*Brak.* With this, my lord, myself have nought to do.

*Glo.* Nought to do with mistress Shore? I tell thee, fe  
He that doth naught with her, excepting one,  
Were best to do it secretly, alone.

*Brak.* What one, my lord?

*Glo.* Her husband, knave. Would'st thou betray me?

*Brak.* I do beseech your grace to pardon me; and withal,  
Forbear your conference with the noble duke.

*Clar.* We know thy charge, Brakenbury, and will obey.

*Glo.* We are the queen's subjects, and must obey. —

Brother, farewell: I will unto the king;

And whatsoe'er you will employ me in,

Were it to call king Edward's widow sister,

I will perform it to enfranchise you.

Mean time, this deep disgrace in brotherhood

Touches me deeper than you can imagine.

*Clar.* I know, it pleaseth neither of us well.

*Glo.* Well, your imprisonment shall not be long;

I will deliver you, or else lie for you:

Mean time, have patience.

*Clar.*

I must perforce: farewell.

[*Exeunt CLARENCE, BRAKENBURY, and Guard.*]

*Glo.* Go, tread the path that thou shalt ne'er return,

Simple, plain Clarence! — I do love thee so,

That I will shortly send thy soul to heaven,

If heaven will take the present at our hands.

But who comes here? the new-deliver'd Hastings?

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Hast.* Good time of day unto my gracious lord.

*Glo.* As much unto my good lord chamberlain.

Well are you welcome to this open air.

How hath your lordship brook'd imprisonment?

*Hast.* With patience, noble lord, as prisoners must;

But I shall live, my lord, to give them thanks,

That were the cause of my imprisonment.

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt; and so shall Clarence too,

For they that were your enemies are his,

And have prevail'd as much on him as you.

*Hast.* More pity, that the eagles should be mew'd,

While kites and buzzards prey at liberty.

*Glo.* What news abroad?

*Hast.* No news so bad abroad, as this at home: —



The king is sickly, weak, and melancholy,  
And his physicians fear him mightily.

*Glo.* Now, by Saint Paul, that news is bad indeed.  
O! he hath kept an evil diet long,  
And over-much consum'd his royal person:  
'T is very grievous to be thought upon.  
Where is he? in his bed?

*Hast.* He is.

*Glo.* Go you before, and I will follow you.

[*Exit. H*]

He cannot live, I hope; and must not die,  
Till George be pack'd with posthorse up to heaven.  
I'll in, to urge his hatred more to Clarence,  
With lies well steel'd with weighty arguments;  
And, if I fail not in my deep intent,  
Clarence hath not another day to live:  
Which done, God take king Edward to his mercy,  
And leave the world for me to bustle in,  
For then I'll marry Warwick's youngest daughter.  
What though I kill'd her husband, and her father?  
The readiest way to make the wench amends,  
Is to become her husband, and her father:  
The which will I; not all so much for love,  
As for another secret close intent,  
By marrying her which I must reach unto.  
But yet I run before my horse to market:  
Clarence still breathes; Edward still lives and reigns;  
When they are gone, then must I count my gains.

## SCENE II.

The Same. Another Street.

*Enter the Corpse of King HENRY the Sixth, borne in Coffin, Gentlemen bearing Halberds, to guard it; a ANNE as mourner.*

*Anne.* Set down, set down your honourable load,  
*If honour may be shrouded in a hearse,*

Whilst I a while obsequiously lament  
 Th' untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster. —  
 Poor key-cold figure of a holy king!  
 Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster!  
 Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood!  
 Be it lawful that I invoke thy ghost,  
 To hear the lamentations of poor Anne,  
 Wife to thy Edward, to thy slaughter'd son,  
 Stabb'd by the self-same hand that made these wounds!  
 Lo, in these windows, that let forth thy life,  
 I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes: —  
 O, cursed be the hand that made these holes!  
 Cursed the heart, that had the heart to do it!  
 Cursed the blood, that let this blood from hence!  
 More direful hap betide that hated wretch,  
 That makes us wretched by the death of thee,  
 Than I can wish to adders, spiders, toads,  
 Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives!  
 If ever he have child; abortive be it,  
 Prodigious, and untimely brought to light,  
 Whose ugly and unnatural aspect  
 May fright the hopeful mother at the view;  
 And that be heir to his unhappiness!  
 If ever he have wife, let her be made  
 More miserable by the death of him,  
 Than I am made by my young lord, and thee! —  
 Come, now toward Chertsey with your holy load,  
 Taken from Paul's to be interred there;  
 And still, as you are weary of this weight,  
 Rest you, whiles I lament king Henry's corse.

*[The Bearers take up the Corpse and advance.]*

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Stay you, that bear the corse, and set it down.

*Anne.* What black magician conjures up this fiend,  
 To stop devoted charitable deeds?

*Glo.* Villains! set down the corse; or, by Saint Paul,  
 I'll make a corse of him that disobeys.

IV.

1 *Gent.* My lord, stand back, and let the coffin pass.

*Glo.* Unmanner'd dog! stand thou when I command:  
Advance thy halberd higher than my breast,  
Or, by Saint Paul, I'll strike thee to my foot,  
And spurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldness.

[*The Bearers set down the Coff*]

*Anne.* What! do you tremble? are you all afraid?  
Alas! I blame you not; for you are mortal,  
And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil. —  
Avaunt, thou dreadful minister of hell!  
Thou hadst but power over his mortal body,  
His soul thou canst not have: therefore, begone.

*Glo.* Sweet saint, for charity, be not so curst.

*Anne.* Foul devil, for God's sake, hence, and trouble us not  
For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell,  
Fill'd it with cursing cries, and deep exclaims.  
If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,  
Behold this pattern of thy butcheries. —  
O, gentlemen! see, see! dead Henry's wounds  
Open their congeal'd mouths, and bleed afresh! —  
Blush, blush, thou lump of foul deformity,  
For 't is thy presence that exhales this blood  
From cold and empty veins, where no blood dwells:  
Thy deed, inhuman and unnatural,  
Provokes this deluge most unnatural. —  
O God, which this blood mad'st, revenge his death!  
O earth, which this blood drink'st, revenge his death!  
Either, heaven, with lightning strike the murderer dead,  
Or, earth, gape open wide, and eat him quick,  
As thou dost swallow up this good king's blood,  
Which his hell-govern'd arm hath butchered!

*Glo.* Lady, you know no rules of charity,  
Which renders good for bad, blessings for curses.

*Anne.* Villain, thou know'st nor law of God nor man:  
No beast so fierce, but knows some touch of pity.

*Glo.* But I know none, and therefore am no beast.

*Anne.* O wonderful, when devils tell the truth!

*Glo.* More wonderful, when angels are so angry. —  
Vouchsafe, divine perfection of a woman,  
Of these supposed evils to give me leave  
By circumstance but to acquit myself.

*Anne.* Vouchsafe, diffus'd infection of a man,  
For these known evils but to give me leave  
By circumstance to curse thy cursed self.

*Glo.* Fairer than tongue can name thee, let me have  
Some patient leisure to excuse myself.

*Anne.* Fouler than heart can think thee, thou canst make  
No excuse current, but to hang thyself.

*Glo.* By such despair, I should accuse myself.

*Anne.* And, by despairing, shalt thou stand excus'd;  
For doing worthy vengeance on thyself,  
That didst unworthy slaughter upon others.

*Glo.* Say, that I slew them not?

*Anne.* Then say they were not slain:  
But dead they are, and, devilish slave, by thee.

*Glo.* I did not kill your husband.

*Anne.* Why, then he is alive.

*Glo.* Nay, he is dead; and slain by Edward's hand.

*Anne.* In thy foul throat thou liest: queen Margaret saw  
Thy murderous falchion smoking in his blood;  
The which thou once didst bend against her breast,  
But that thy brothers beat aside the point.

*Glo.* I was provoked by her sland'rous tongue,  
That laid their guilt upon my guiltless shoulders.

*Anne.* Thou wast provoked by thy bloody mind,  
That never dreamt on aught but butcheries.  
Didst thou not kill this king?

*Glo.* I grant ye.

*Anne.* Dost grant me, hedge-hog? then, God grant me too,  
Thou may'st be damned for that wicked deed!  
O! he was gentle, mild, and virtuous.

*Glo.* The fitter for the King of heaven that bath him.

*Anne.* He is in heaven, where thou shalt never come.

*Glo.* Let him thank me, that help to send him thither;  
For he was fitter for that place than earth.

*Anne.* And thou unfit for any place but hell.

*Glo.* Yes, one place else, if you will hear me name it.

*Anne.* Some dungeon.

*Glo.* Your bed-chamber.

*Anne.* Ill rest betide the chamber where thou liest.

*Glo.* So will it, Madam, till I lie with you.

*Anne.* I hope so.

*Glo.* I know so. — But, gentle lady Anne, —  
To leave this keen encounter of our wits,  
And fall something into a slower method; —  
Is not the causer of the timeless deaths  
Of these Plantagenets, Henry, and Edward,  
As blameful as the executioner?

*Anne.* Thou wast the cause, and most accurs'd effect.

*Glo.* Your beauty was the cause of that effect;  
Your beauty, that did haunt me in my sleep,  
To undertake the death of all the world,  
So I might live one hour in your sweet bosom.

*Anne.* If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide,  
These nails should rend that beauty from my cheeks.

*Glo.* These eyes could not endure that beauty's wreck;  
You should not blemish it, if I stood by:  
As all the world is cheered by the sun,  
So I by that; it is my day, my life.

*Anne.* Black night o'ershade thy day, and death thy life!

*Glo.* Curse not thyself, fair creature; thou art both.

*Anne.* I would I were, to be reveng'd on thee.

*Glo.* It is a quarrel most unnatural,  
To be reveng'd on him that loveth thee.

*Anne.* It is a quarrel just and reasonable,  
To be reveng'd on him that kill'd my husband.

*Glo.* He that bereft thee, lady, of thy husband,  
Did it to help thee to a better husband.

*Anne.* His better doth not breathe upon the earth.

*Glo.* He lives that loves you better than he could.

. Name him.

Plantagenet.

. Why, that was he.

The self-same name, but one of better nature.

. Where is he?

Here: [*She spits at him.*] Why dost thou spit at me?

. 'Would it were mortal poison, for thy sake!

Never came poison from so sweet a place.

. Never hung poison on a fouler toad.

y sight! thou dost infect mine eyes.

Thine eyes, sweet lady, have infected mine.

. Would they were basilisks, to strike thee dead!

I would they were, that I might die at once,  
they kill me with a living death.

es of thine from mine have drawn salt tears,

heir aspects with store of childish drops:

as, which never shed remorseful tear;

n my father York, and Edward wept

he piteous moan that Rutland made,

ack-fac'd Clifford shook his sword at him:

thy warlike father, like a child,

sad story of my father's death,

thy times made pause to sob and weep,

he standers-by had wet their cheeks,

s bedash'd with rain; in that sad time

y eyes did scorn an humble tear;

t these sorrows could not thence exhale,

thy hath, and made them blind with weeping.

ed to friend, nor enemy;

ie could never learn sweet smoothing word;

thy beauty is propos'd my fee,

l heart sues, and prompts my tongue to speak.

[*She looks scornfully at him.*]

t thy lip such scorn; for it was made

ng, lady, not for such contempt.

engeful heart cannot forgive,

*I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword;*

Which if thou please to hide in this true breast,  
And let the soul forth that adareth thee,  
I lay it naked to the deadly stroke,  
And humbly beg the death upon my knee.

*[He lays his Breast open: she offers at it with his S*

Nay, do not pause; for I did kill king Henry; —  
But 't was thy beauty that provoked me.  
Nay, now despatch; 't was I that stabb'd young Edward; —  
But 't was thy heavenly face that set me on.

*[She lets fall the S*

Take up the sword again, or take up me.

*Anne.* Arise, dissembler: though I wish thy death,  
I will not be thy executioner.

*Glo.* Then bid me kill myself, and I will do it.

*Anne.* I have already.

*Glo.* That was in thy rage:

Speak it again, and even with the word,  
This hand, which for thy love did kill thy love,  
Shall for thy love kill a far truer love:  
To both their deaths shalt thou be accessary.

*Anne.* I would, I knew thy heart.

*Glo.* 'T is figur'd in my tongue.

*Anne.* I fear me, both are false.

*Glo.* Then, never man was true.

*Anne.* Well, well, put up your sword.

*Glo.* Say, then, my peace is made.

*Anne.* That shalt thou know hereafter.

*Glo.* But shall I live in hope?

*Anne.* All men, I hope, live so.

*Glo.* Vouchsafe to wear this ring.

*Anne.* To take, is not to give. *[She puts on the*

*Glo.* Look, how my ring encompasseth thy finger,  
Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart;  
Wear both of them, for both of them are thine.  
And if thy poor devoted servant may  
But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,  
*Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever.*

*Anne.* What is it?

*Glo.* That it may please you leave these sad designs  
To him that hath most cause to be a mourner,  
and presently repair to Crosby-place.  
Where (after I have solemnly interr'd,  
At Chertsey monastery, this noble king,  
And wet his grave with my repentant tears),  
I will with all expedient duty see you:  
For divers unknown reasons, I beseech you,  
Grant me this boon.

*Anne.* With all my heart; and much it joys me too,  
To see you are become so penitent. —  
Tressel, and Berkley, go along with me.

*Glo.* Bid me farewell.

*Anne.* 'T is more than you deserve;  
But since you teach me how to flatter you,  
Imagine I have said farewell already.

[*Exeunt Lady ANNE, TRESSEL, and BERKLEY.*]

*Gent.* Towards Chertsey, noble lord?

*Glo.* No, to White-Friars; there attend my coming.

[*Exeunt the rest, with the Corse.*]

Was ever woman in this humour woo'd?

Was ever woman in this humour won?

I'll have her, but I will not keep her long.

What! I, that kill'd her husband, and his father,

To take her in her heart's extremest hate;

With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,

The bleeding witness of my hatred by,

Having God, her conscience, and these bars against me,

And I no friends to back my suit withal,

But the plain devil, and dissembling looks,

And yet to win her, — all the world to nothing! Ha!

Hath she forgot already that brave prince,

Edward, her lord, whom I, some three months since,

Stabb'd in my angry mood at Tewksbury?

A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman, —

*Fram'd in the prodigality of nature,*



Young, valiant, wise, and, no doubt, right royal, —  
 The spacious world cannot again afford:  
 And will she yet abase her eyes on me,  
 That cropp'd the golden prime of this sweet prince,  
 And made her widow to a woful bed?  
 On me, whose all not equals Edward's moiety?  
 On me, that halt, and am mis-shapen thus?  
 My dukedom to a beggarly denier,  
 I do mistake my person all this while:  
 Upon my life, she finds, although I cannot,  
 Myself to be a marvellous proper man.  
 I 'll be at charges for a looking-glass;  
 And entertain a score or two of tailors,  
 To study fashions to adorn my body:  
 Since I am crept in favour with myself,  
 I will maintain it with some little cost.  
 But, first, I 'll turn yon' fellow in his grave,  
 And then return lamenting to my love. —  
 Shine out, fair sun, till I have bought a glass,  
 That I may see my shadow as I pass.

[E.]

## SCENE III.

The Same. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH, Lord RIVERS, and Lord GREY.*

*Riv.* Have patience, Madam: there's no doubt, his majesty will soon recover his accustom'd health.

*Grey.* In that you brook it ill, it makes him worse: Therefore, for God's sake, entertain good comfort, And cheer his grace with quick and merry words.

*Q. Eliz.* If he were dead, what would betide on me?

*Grey.* No other harm, but loss of such a lord.

*Q. Eliz.* The loss of such a lord includes all harms.

*Grey.* The heavens have bless'd you with a goodly son, To be your comforter when he is gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! he is young; and his minority

Is put unto the trust of Richard Gloster,  
A man that loves not me, nor none of you.

*Riv.* Is it concluded, he shall be protector?

*Q. Eliz.* It is determin'd, not concluded yet:  
But so it must be, if the king miscarry.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM and STANLEY.*

*Grey.* Here come the lords of Buckingham and Stanley.

*Buck.* Good time of day unto your royal grace.

*Stan.* God make your majesty joyful as you have been!

*Q. Eliz.* The countess Richmond, good my lord of Stanley,  
To your good prayer will scarcely say amen.

Yet, Stanley, notwithstanding she's your wife,  
And loves not me, be you; good lord, assur'd,  
I hate not you for her proud arrogance.

*Stan.* I do beseech you, either not believe  
The envious slanders of her false accusers;  
Or, if she be accus'd on true report,  
Bear with her weakness, which, I think, proceeds  
From wayward sickness, and no grounded malice.

*Q. Eliz.* Saw you the king to-day, my lord of Stanley?

*Stan.* But now, the duke of Buckingham, and I,  
Are come from visiting his majesty.

*Q. Eliz.* What likelihood of his amendment, lords?

*Buck.* Madam, good hope: his grace speaks cheerfully.

*Q. Eliz.* God grant him health! Did you confer with him?

*Buck.* Ay, Madam: he desires to make atonement  
Between the duke of Gloster and your brothers,  
And between them and my lord chamberlain;  
And sent to warn them to his royal presence.

*Q. Eliz.* Would all were well! — But that will never be:  
I fear, our happiness is at the height.

*Enter GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and DORSET.*

*Glo.* They do me wrong, and I will not endure it. —  
Who are they, that complain unto the king,  
That I, forsooth, am stern, and love them not?  
*By holy Paul, they love his grace but lightly,*

That fill his ears with such dissentious rumours.  
Because I cannot flatter, and speak fair,  
Smile in men's faces, smooth, deceive, and cog,  
Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,  
I must be held a rancorous enemy.  
Cannot a plain man live, and think no harm,  
But thus his simple truth must be abus'd  
With silken, sly, insinuating Jacks?

*Grey.* To whom in all this presence speaks your grace?

*Glo.* To thee, that hast nor honesty, nor grace.  
When have I injur'd thee? when done thee wrong? —  
Or thee? — or thee? — or any of your faction?  
A plague upon you all! His royal grace,  
(Whom God preserve better than you would wish!)  
Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing-while,  
But you must trouble him with lewd complaints.

*Q. Eliz.* Brother of Gloster, you mistake the matter.  
The king, on his own royal disposition,  
And not provok'd by any suitor else,  
Aiming, belike, at your interior hatred,  
That in your outward action shows itself,  
Against my children, brothers, and myself,  
Makes him to send; that thereby he may gather  
The ground of your ill-will, and so remove it.

*Glo.* I cannot tell; — the world is grown so bad,  
That wrens make prey where eagles dare not perch:  
Since every Jack became a gentleman,  
There 's many a gentle person made a Jack.

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, we know your meaning, bro  
Gloster:  
You envy my advancement, and my friends.  
God grant, we never may have need of you!

*Glo.* Meantime, God grants that I have need of you:  
Our brother is imprison'd by your means;  
Myself disgrac'd, and the nobility  
*Held in contempt; while many great promotions*

Are dally given, to ennoble those  
That scarce, some two days since, were worth a noble.

*Q. Eliz.* By him that rais'd me to this careful height  
From that contented hap which I enjoy'd,  
I never did incense his majesty  
Against the duke of Clarence; but have been  
An earnest advocate to plead for him.  
My lord, you do me shameful injury,  
Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects.

*Glo.* You may deny, that you were not the mean  
Of my lord Hastings' late imprisonment.

*Riv.* She may, my lord; for —

*Glo.* She may, lord Rivers, — why, who knows not so?  
She may do more, Sir, than denying that:  
She may help you to many fair preferments;  
And then deny her aiding hand therein,  
And lay those honours on your high desert.

What may she not? She may, — ay, marry, may she, —

*Riv.* What, marry, may she?

*Glo.* What, marry, may she? marry with a king,  
A bachelor, and a handsome stripling too.  
I wis, your grandam had a worscr match.

*Q. Eliz.* My lord of Gloster, I have too long borne  
Your blunt upbraidings, and your bitter scoffs:  
By heaven, I will acquaint his majesty,  
Of those gross taunts that oft I have endur'd.  
I had rather be a country serving-maid,  
Than a great queen, with this condition —  
To be thus taunted, scorn'd, and baited at:  
Small joy have I in being England's queen.

*Enter Queen MARGARET, behind.*

*Q. Mar.* And lessen'd be that small, God, I beseech him!  
Thy honour, state, and seat, is due to me.

*Glo.* What! threat you me with telling of the king?  
Tell him, and spare not: look, what I have said  
I will avouch, in presence of the king:

I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower.

'T is time to speak; my pains are quite forgot.

*Q. Mar.* Out, devil! I do remember them too well:  
Thou kill'dst my husband Henry in the Tower,  
And Edward, my poor son, at Tewksbury.

*Glo.* Ere you were queen, ay, or your husband king,  
I was a pack-horse in his great affairs;  
A weeder-out of his proud adversaries,  
A liberal rewarder of his friends;  
To royalize his blood, I spent mine own.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, and much better blood than his, or thine.

*Glo.* In all which time, you, and your husband Grey,  
Were factious for the house of Lancaster; —  
And, Rivers, so were you: — was not your husband  
In Margaret's battle at Saint Alban's slain?  
Let me put in your minds, if you forget,  
What you have been ere this, and what you are;  
Withal, what I have been, and what I am.

*Q. Mar.* A murd'rous villain, and so still thou art.

*Glo.* Poor Clarence did forsake his father Warwick,  
Ay, and forswore himself, — which Jesu pardon!

*Q. Mar.* Which God revenge!

*Glo.* To fight on Edward's party, for the crown;  
And, for his meed, poor lord, he is mew'd up.  
I would to God, my heart were flint like Edward's,  
Or Edward's soft and pitiful, like mine:  
I am too childish-foolish for this world.

*Q. Mar.* Hie thee to hell for shame. and leave this world,  
Thou cacodæmon! there thy kingdom is.

*Riv.* My lord of Gloster, in those busy days,  
Which here you urge to prove us enemies,  
We follow'd then our lord, our sovereign king;  
So should we you, if you should be our king.

*Glo.* If I should be? — I had rather be a pedlar.  
Far be it from my heart, the thought thereof!

*Q. Elis.* As little joy, my lord, as you suppose  
You should enjoy, were you this country's king,

As little joy you may suppose in me,  
That I enjoy, being the queen thereof.

*Q. Mar.* A little joy enjoys the queen thereof;  
For I am she, and altogether joyless.  
I can no longer hold me patient. —

[*Advancing.*

Hear me, you wrangling pirates, that fall out  
In sharing that which you have pill'd from me!  
Which of you trembles not, that looks on me?  
If not, that, I being queen, you bow like subjects,  
Yet that, by you depos'd, you quake like rebels? —  
Ah! gentle villain, do not turn away.

*Glo.* Foul wrinkled witch, what mak'st thou in my sight?

*Q. Mar.* But repetition of what thou hast marr'd;  
That will I make, before I let thee go.

*Glo.* Wert thou not banished, on pain of death?

*Q. Mar.* I was; but I do find more pain in banishment,  
Than death can yield me here by my abode.  
A husband, and a son, thou ow'st to me, —  
And thou, a kingdom; — all of you, allegiance:  
This sorrow that I have, by right is yours,  
And all the pleasures you usurp are mine.

*Glo.* The curse my noble father laid on thee,  
When thou didst crown his warlike brows with paper,  
And with thy scorns drew'st rivers from his eyes;  
And then, to dry them, gav'st the duke a clout  
Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty Rutland; —  
His curses, then from bitterness of soul  
Denounc'd against thee, are all fallen upon thee;  
And God, not we, hath plagu'd thy bloody deed.

*Q. Eliz.* So just is God, to right the innocent.

*Hast.* O! 't was the foulest deed to slay that babe,  
And the most merciless, that e'er was heard of.

*Riv.* Tyrants themselves wept when it was reported.

*Dors.* No man but prophesied revenge for it.

*Buck.* Northumberland, then present, wept to see it.

*Q. Mar.* What! were you snarling all, before I came,  
*Ready to catch each other by the throat,*

And turn you all your hatred now one me?  
Did York's dread curse prevail so much with heaven,  
That Henry's death, my lovely Edward's death,  
Their kingdom's loss, my woful banishment,  
Should all but answer for that peevish brat?  
Can curses pierce the clouds, and enter heaven? —  
Why, then give way, dull clouds, to my quick curses! —  
Though not by war, by surfeit die your king,  
As ours by murder, to make him a king!  
Edward, thy son, that now is prince of Wales,  
For Edward, our son, that was prince of Wales,  
Die in his youth by like untimely violence!  
Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen,  
Outlive thy glory, like my wretched self!  
Long may'st thou live, to wail thy children's death;  
And see another, as I see thee now,  
Deck'd in thy rights, as thou art stall'd in mine!  
Long die thy happy days before thy death;  
And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief,  
Die neither mother, wife, nor England's queen!  
Rivers, and Dorset, you were standers by,  
And so wast thou, lord Hastings, when my son  
Was stabb'd with bloody daggers: God, I pray him,  
That none of you may live his natural age,  
But by some unlook'd accident cut off!

*Glo.* Have done thy charm, thou hateful wither'd hag.

*Q. Mar.* And leave out thee? stay, dog, for thou shalt hear  
If heaven have any grievous plague in store,  
Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee,  
O! let them keep it, till thy sins be ripe,  
And then hurl down their indignation  
On thee, the troubler of the poor world's peace!  
The worm of conscience still be-gnaw thy soul!  
Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou liv'st,  
And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends!  
*No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine,  
Unless it be while some tormenting dream*

Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils!  
 Thou elvish-mark'd, abortive, rooting hog!  
 Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity  
 The slave of nature, and the son of hell!  
 Thou slander of thy heavy mother's womb!  
 Thou loathed issue of thy father's loins!  
 Thou rag of honour! thou detested —

*Glo.* Margaret.

*Q. Mar.* Richard!

*Glo.* Ha?

*Q. Mar.* I call thee not.

*Glo.* I cry thee mercy then; for I did think,  
 That thou hadst call'd me all these bitter names.

*Q. Mar.* Why, so I did; but look'd for no reply.  
 O! let me make the period to my curse.

*Glo.* 'T is done by me, and ends in — Margaret.

*Q. Eliz.* Thus have you breath'd your curse against yourself

*Q. Mar.* Poor painted queen, vain flourish of my fortune;  
 Why strew'st thou sugar on that bottled spider,  
 Whose deadly web ensnareth thee about?  
 Fool, fool! thou whet'st a knife to kill thyself.  
 The day will come, that thou shalt wish for me  
 To help thee curse this pois'nous bunch-back'd toad.

*Hast.* False-boding woman, end thy frantic curse,  
 Lest to thy harm thou move our patience.

*Q. Mar.* Foul shame upon you; you have all mov'd mine.

*Riv.* Were you well serv'd, you would be taught your duty.

*Q. Mar.* To serve me well, you all should do me duty,  
 Teach me to be your queen, and you my subjects.  
 O! serve me well, and teach yourselves that duty.

*Dor.* Dispute not with her, she is lunatic.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, master marquess! you are malapert:  
 Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce current.  
 O, that your young nobility could judge,  
 What 't were to lose it, and be miserable!  
 They that stand high have many blasts to shake them,  
 And if they fall they dash themselves to pieces.



*Glo.* Good counsel, marry: — learn it, learn it, ~~marry~~

*Dor.* It touches you, my lord, as much as me.

*Glo.* Ay, and much more; but I was born so high:  
Our eyry buildeth in the cedar's top,  
And dallies with the wind, and scorns the sun.

*Q. Mar.* And turns the sun to shade, — alas! alas! —  
Witness my son, now in the shade of death;  
Whose bright out-shining beams thy cloudy wrath  
Hath in eternal darkness folded up.  
Your eyry buildeth in our eyry's nest. —  
O God! that seest it, do not suffer it:  
As it was won with blood, lost be it so!

*Buck.* Peace, peace! for shame, if not for charity.

*Q. Mar.* Urge neither charity nor shame to me:  
Uncharitably with me have you dealt,  
And shamefully my hopes by you are butcher'd.  
My charity is outrage, life my shame,  
And in that shame still live my sorrow's rage!

*Buck.* Have done, have done.

*Q. Mar.* O, princely Buckingham! I'll kiss thy hand,  
In sign of league and amity with thee:  
Now, fair befall thee, and thy noble house!  
Thy garments are not spotted with our blood,  
Nor thou within the compass of my curse.

*Buck.* Nor no one here; for curses never pass  
The lips of those that breathe them in the air.

*Q. Mar.* I will not think but they ascend the sky,  
And there awake God's gentle-sleeping peace.  
O Buckingham! take heed of yonder dog:  
Look, when he fawns, he bites; and, when he bites,  
His venom tooth will rankle to the death:  
Have not to do with him, beware of him;  
Sin, death, and hell, have set their marks on him,  
And all their ministers attend on him.

*Glo.* What doth she say, my lord of Buckingham?

*Buck.* Nothing that I respect, my gracious lord.

*Q. Mar.* What! dost thou scorn me for my gentle counsel

and sooth the devil that I warn thee from?  
 O! but remember this another day,  
 When he shall split thy very heart with sorrow,  
 and say, poor Margaret was a prophetess. —  
 Give each of you the subjects to his hate,  
 and he to yours, and all of you to God's!

[*Exit.*

*Hast.* My hair doth stand on end to hear her curses.

*Riv.* And so doth mine. I muse, why she's at liberty.

*Glo.* I cannot blame her: by God's holy mother,  
 she hath had too much wrong, and I repent  
 my part thereof, that I have done to her.

*Q. Eliz.* I never did her any, to my knowledge.

*Glo.* Yet you have all the vantage of her wrong.  
 I was too hot to do somebody good,  
 That is too cold in thinking of it now.

Marry, as for Clarence, he is well repaid;  
 He is frank'd up to fatting for his pains; —  
 God pardon them that are the cause thereof!

*Riv.* A virtuous and a Christian-like conclusion,  
 To pray for them that have done scath to us.

*Glo.* So do I ever, being well advis'd;  
 For had I curs'd now, I had curs'd myself.

[*Aside.*

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cates.* Madam, his majesty doth call for you, —  
 And for your grace, and you, my noble lords.

*Q. Eliz.* Catesby, I come. — Lords, will you go with me?

*Riv.* We wait upon your grace. [*Exeunt all but GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* I do the wrong, and first begin to brawl.  
 The secret mischiefs that I set aroach,  
 I lay unto the grievous charge of others.  
 Clarence, whom I, indeed, have cast in darkness,  
 I do bewEEP to many simple gulls;  
 Namely, to Stanley, Hastings, Buckingham;  
 And tell them, 't is the queen and her allies,  
 That stir the king against the duke my brother.  
 Now, they believe it; and withal whet me

IV.

To be reveng'd on Rivers, Vaughan, Grey:  
 But then I sigh, and, with a piece of scripture,  
 Tell them, that God bids us do good for evil:  
 And thus I clothe my naked villainy  
 With odd old ends stol'n forth of holy writ,  
 And seem a saint, when most I play the devil.

*Enter Two Murderers.*

But soft! here come my executioners. —  
 How now, my hardy, stout resolved mates!  
 Are you now going to dispatch this thing?  
 1 *Murd.* We are, my lord; and come to have the war  
 That we may be admitted where he is.

*Glo.* Well thought upon; I have it here about me.

*[Gives the W]*

When you have done, repair to Crosby-place.  
 But, Sirs, be sudden in the execution,  
 Withal obdurate: do not hear him plead,  
 For Clarence is well spoken, and, perhaps,  
 May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.

1 *Murd.* Tut, tut! my lord, we will not stand to prat  
 Talkers are no good doers: be assur'd,  
 We go to use our hands, and not our tongues.

*Glo.* Your eyes drop mill-stones, when fools' eyes fal  
 I like you, lads; — about your business straight;  
 Go, go, despatch.

1 *Murd.* ' We will, my noble lord. [1

## SCENE IV.

London. A Room in the Tower.

*Enter CLARENCE and BRAKENBURY.*

*Brak.* Why looks your grace so heavily to-day?

*Clar.* O! I have pass'd a miserable night,  
 So full of fearful dreams, of ugly sights,  
 That, as I am a Christian faithful man,  
 I would not spend another such a night,

hough 't were to buy a world of happy days,  
o full of dismal terror was the time.

*Brak.* What was your dream, my lord? I pray you, tell me.

*Clar.* Methought, that I had broken from the Tower,  
and was embark'd to cross to Burgundy;  
And, in my company, my brother Gloster,  
Who from my cabin tempted me to walk  
Upon the hatches: thence we look'd toward England,  
And cited up a thousand heavy times,  
During the wars of York and Lancaster  
That had befall'n us. As we pac'd along  
Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,  
Methought, that Gloster stumbled; and, in falling,  
Struck me (that thought to stay him) over-board,  
Into the tumbling billows of the main.  
O Lord! methought, what pain it was to drown!  
What dreadful noise of water in mine ears!  
What sights of ugly death within mine eyes!  
Methought I saw a thousand fearful wrecks;  
A thousand men that fishes gnaw'd upon;  
Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,  
Inestimable stones, unvalued jewels,  
All scatter'd in the bottom of the sea:  
Some lay in dead men's skulls; and in the holes  
Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept  
(As 't were in scorn of eyes) reflecting gems,  
That woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep,  
And mock'd the dead bones that lay scatter'd by.

*Brak.* Had you such leisure in the time of death,  
To gaze upon these secrets of the deep?

*Clar.* Methought I had, and often did I strive  
To yield the ghost; but still the envious flood  
Stopt in my soul, and would not let it forth  
To find the empty, vast, and wandering air;  
But smother'd it within my panting bulk,  
Which almost burst to belch it in the sea.

*Brak.* Awak'd you not in this sore agony?



An outward honour for an inward toil;  
 And for unfelt imaginations,  
 They often feel a world of restless cares:  
 So that, between their titles, and low name,  
 There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

*Enter the two Murderers.*

*1 Murd.* Ho! who's here?

*Brak.* What would'st thou, fellow? and how cam'st thou hither?

*1 Murd.* I would speak with Clarence, and I came hither on my legs.

*Brak.* What! so brief?

*2 Murd.* 'T is better, Sir, than to be tedious. —

Let him see our commission; and talk no more.

*[A Paper delivered to BRAKENBURY, who reads it.]*

*Brak.* I am, in this, commanded to deliver  
 The noble duke of Clarence to your hands: —  
 I will not reason what is meant hereby,  
 Because I will be guiltless from the meaning.  
 There lies the duke asleep, and there the keys.  
 I'll to the king; and signify to him,  
 That thus I have resign'd to you my charge.

*1 Murd.* You may, Sir; 't is a point of wisdom:

Fare you well.

*[Exit BRAKENBURY.]*

*2 Murd.* What, shall we stab him as he sleeps?

*1 Murd.* No; he'll say, 't was done cowardly, when he wakes.

*2 Murd.* Why, he shall never wake until the great judgment day.

*1 Murd.* Why, then he'll say, we stabb'd him sleeping.

*2 Murd.* The urging of that word, judgment, hath bred a kind of remorse in me.

*1 Murd.* What! art thou afraid?

*2 Murd.* Not to kill him, having a warrant; but to be damn'd for killing him, from the which no warrant can defend me.

*1 Murd.* I thought, thou hadst been resolute.

2 *Murd.* So I am, to let him live.

1 *Murd.* I'll back to the duke of Gloster, and tell him so.

2 *Murd.* Nay, I pr'ythee, stay a little: I hope, this passionate humour of mine will change; it was wont to hold me but while one tells twenty.

1 *Murd.* How dost thou feel thyself now?

2 *Murd.* 'Faith, some certain dregs of conscience are yet within me.

1 *Murd.* Remember our reward, when the deed's done.

2 *Murd.* Zounds! he dies: I had forgot the reward.

1 *Murd.* Where's thy conscience now?

2 *Murd.* O! in the duke of Gloster's purse.

1 *Murd.* When he opens his purse to give us our reward, conscience flies out.

2 *Murd.* 'Tis no matter; let it go: there's few or none, I entertain it.

1 *Murd.* What, if it come to thee again?

2 *Murd.* I'll not meddle with it; it is a dangerous thing, makes a man a coward: a man cannot steal, but it accuseth him; a man cannot swear, but it checks him; a man cannot lie with neighbour's wife, but it detects him: 'tis a blushing shame-fac'd spirit, that mutinies in a man's bosom; it fills a man full of obstacles: it made me once restore a purse of gold, that by chance I found: it beggars any man that keeps it: it is turned out of towns and cities for a dangerous thing; and every man, that me to live well, endeavours to trust to himself, and live without it.

1 *Murd.* Zounds! it is even now at my elbow, persuading me not to kill the duke.

2 *Murd.* Take the devil in thy mind, and believe him not: he would insinuate with thee, but to make thee sigh.

1 *Murd.* I am strong-fram'd; he cannot prevail with me.

2 *Murd.* Spoke like a tall man that respects his reputation. Come, shall we fall to work?

1 *Murd.* Take him on the costard with the hilts of thy sword, and then throw him into the malmsey-butt in the next room.

2 *Murd.* O; excellent device! and make a sop of him.

1 *Murd.* Soft! he wakes.

2 *Murd.* Strike.

1 *Murd.* No; we'll reason with him.

*Clar.* [*Waking.*] Where art thou, keeper? give me a cup of wine.

1 *Murd.* You shall have wine enough, my lord anon.

*Clar.* In God's name, what art thou?

1 *Mur.* A man, as you are.

*Clar.* But not, as I am, royal.

1 *Murd.* Nor you, as we are, loyal.

*Clar.* Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble.

1 *Murd.* My voice is now the king's, my looks mine own.

*Clar.* How darkly, and how deadly dost thou speak.

Your eyes do menace me: why look you pale?

Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

*Both Murd.* To, to, to —

*Clar.* To murder me?

*Both Murd.* Ay, Ay.

*Clar.* You scarcely have the hearts to tell me so,

And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it.

Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

1 *Murd.* Offended us you have not, but the king.

*Clar.* I shall be reconcil'd to him again.

2 *Murd.* Never, my lord; therefore prepare to die.

*Clar.* Are you drawn forth among a world of men,

To slay the innocent? What is my offence?

Where is the evidence that doth accuse me?

What lawful quest have given their verdict up

Unto the frowning judge? or who pronounce'd

The bitter sentence of poor Clarence' death?

Before I be convict by course of law,

To threaten me with death is most unlawful.

I charge you, as you hope to have redemption

By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous sins,

That you depart, and lay no hands on me;

The deed you undertake is damnable.

1 *Murd.* What we will do, we do upon command.

2 *Murd.* And he, that hath commanded, is our king.



*Clar.* Erroneous vassals! the great King of kings  
Hath in the table of his law commanded,  
That thou shalt do no murder: will you, then,  
Spurn at his edict, and fulfil a man's?  
Take heed; for he holds vengeance in his hand,  
To hurl upon their heads that break his law.

*2 Murd.* And that same vengeance doth he hurl on thee,  
For false forswearing, and for murder too.  
Thou didst receive the sacrament, to fight  
In quarrel of the house of Lancaster.

*1 Murd.* And, like a traitor to the name of God,  
Didst break that vow; and, with thy treacherous blade,  
Unripp'dst the bowels of thy sovereign's son.

*2 Murd.* Whom thou wast sworn to cherish and defend.

*1 Murd.* How canst thou urge God's dreadful law to us,  
When thou hast broke it in such dear degree?

*Clar.* Alas! for whose sake did I that ill deed?  
For Edward, for my brother, for his sake.  
He sends you not to murder me for this;  
For in that sin he is as deep as I.  
If God will be avenged for the deed,  
O! know you yet, he doth it publicly;  
Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm:  
He needs no indirect or lawless course,  
To cut off those that have offended him.

*1 Murd.* Who made thee, then, a bloody minister,  
When gallant-springing, brave Plantagenet,  
That princely novice, was struck dead by thee?

*Clar.* My brother's love, the devil, and my rage.

*1 Murd.* Thy brother's love, our duty, and thy faults  
Provoke us hither now to slaughter thee.

*Clar.* If you do love my brother, hate not me;  
I am his brother, and I love him well.  
If you are hir'd for meed, go back again,  
And I will send you to my brother Gloster;  
Who shall reward you better for my life,  
Than Edward will for tidings of my death.

2 *Murd.* You are deceiv'd; your brother Gloster hates you.

*Clar.* O! no; he loves me, and he holds me dear.

Go you to him from me.

Both *Murd.* Ay, so we will.

*Clar.* Tell him, when that our princely father York  
 Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arm,  
 And charg'd us from his soul to love each other,  
 He little thought of this divided friendship:  
 Bid Gloster think on this, and he will weep.

1 *Murd.* Ay, mill-stones; as he lesson'd us to weep.

*Clar.* O! do not slander him, for he is kind.

2 *Murd.* Right; as snow in harvest. — Come, you deceive  
 yourself;

'T is he that sends us to destroy you here.

*Clar.* It cannot be; for he bewept my fortune,  
 And hugg'd me in his arms, and swore, with sobs,  
 That he would labour my delivery.

1 *Murd.* Why, so he doth, when he delivers you  
 From this earth's thralldom to the joys of heaven.

2 *Murd.* Make peace with God, for you must die, my lord.

*Clar.* Have you that holy feeling in your souls,  
 To counsel me to make my peace with God,  
 And are you yet to your own souls so blind,  
 That you will war with God by murdering me? —  
 O! Sirs, consider, they that set you on  
 To do this deed, will hate you for the deed.

2 *Murd.* What shall we do?

*Clar.* Relent, and save your souls.

Which of you, if you were a prince's son,  
 Being pent from liberty, as I am now,  
 If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,  
 Would not entreat for life, as you would beg  
 Were you in my distress?

1 *Murd.* Relent! no: 't is cowardly, and womanish.

*Clar.* Not to relent, is beastly, savage, devilish. —  
 My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks;

O! if thine eye be not a flatterer,  
Come thou on my side, and entreat for me.  
A begging prince what beggar pities not?

2 *Murd.* Look behind you, my lord.

1 *Murd.* Take that, and that: if all this will not do,  
[*Sto*

I'll drown you in the malmsey-butt within. [*Exit, with th*

2 *Murd.* A bloody deed, and desperately despatch'd!  
How fain, like Pilate, would I wash my hands  
Of this most grievous guilty murder done.

*Re-enter first Murderer.*

1 *Murd.* How now? what mean'st thou, that thou he  
not?

By heaven, the duke shall know how slack you have been.

2 *Murd.* I would he knew, that I had sav'd his brothe  
Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say,  
For I repent me that the duke is slain.

1 *Murd.* So do not I: go, coward, as thou art. —  
Well, I'll go hide the body in some hole,  
Till that the duke give order for his burial:  
And when I have my meed, I will away;  
For this will out, and then I must not stay.

## ACT II. SCENE I.

London. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter King EDWARD, led in sick, Queen ELIZABETH, D  
RIVERS, HASTINGS, BUCKINGHAM, GREY, and Oth*

*R. Edw.* Why, so: — now have I done a good day's w  
You peers, continue this united league:

I every day expect an embassy

From my Redeemer to redeem me hence;

And more to peace my soul shall part to heaven,

Since I have made my friends at peace on earth.

*Rivers, and Hastings, take each other's hand;*

*Dissemble not your hatred, swear your love.*

*Riv.* By heaven, my soul is purg'd from grudging hate;  
And with my hand I seal my true heart's love.

*Hast.* So thrive I, as I truly swear the like.

*R. Edw.* Take heed, you dally not before your king;  
Lest he, that is the supreme king of kings,  
Confound your hidden falsehood, and award  
Either of you to be the other's end.

*Hast.* So prosper I, as I swear perfect love.

*Riv.* And I, as I love Hastings with my heart.

*R. Edw.* Madam, yourself are not exempt from this, —  
Nor you, son Dorset, — Buckingham, nor you; —  
You have been factious one against the other.  
Wife, love lord Hastings, let him kiss your hand;  
And what you do, do it unfeignedly.

*Q. Eliz.* There, Hastings: — I will never more remember  
Our former hatred, so thrive I, and mine.

*R. Edw.* Dorset, embrace him, — Hastings, love lord mar-  
quess.

*Dor.* This interchange of love, I here protest,  
Upon my part shall be inviolable.

*Hast.* And so swear I.

*R. Edw.* Now, princely Buckingham, seal thou this league  
With thy embracements to my wife's allies,  
And make me happy in your unity.

*Buck.* Whenever Buckingham doth turn his hate  
Upon your grace, [*To the Queen.*] but with all duteous love  
Doth cherish you, and yours, God punish me  
With hate in those where I expect most love.  
When I have most need to employ a friend,  
And most assured that he is a friend,  
Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile,  
Be he unto me. This do I beg of heaven,  
When I am cold in love to you, or yours.

*R. Edw.* A pleasing cordial, princely Buckingham,  
Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart.

There wanteth now our brother Gloster here,  
To make the blessed period of this peace.

*Buck.* And, in good time, here comes the noble duke.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Good-morrow to my sovereign king, and queen;  
And, princely peers, a happy time of day!

*R. Edw.* Happy, indeed, as we have spent the day. —  
Gloster, we have done deeds of charity;  
Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate,  
Between these swelling wrong-incensed peers.

*Glo.* A blessed labour, my most sovereign lord. —  
Among this princely heap, if any here,  
By false intelligence, or wrong surmise,  
Hold me a foe;

If I unwittingly, or in my rage,  
Have aught committed that is hardly borne  
To any in this presence, I desire  
To reconcile me to his friendly peace:  
'T is death to me, to be at enmity;  
I hate it, and desire all good men's love. —  
First, Madam, I entreat true peace of you,  
Which I will purchase with my duteous service;  
Of you, my noble cousin Buckingham,  
If ever any grudge were lodg'd between us;  
Of you, and you, lord Rivers, and of Dorset,  
That all without desert have frown'd on me;  
Of you, lord Woodville, and lord Sciles, of you;  
Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen; indeed, of all.  
I do not know that Englishman alive,  
With whom my soul is any jot at odds,  
More than the infant that is born to-night:  
I thank my God for my humility.

*Q. Elis.* A holy day shall this be kept hereafter: —  
I would to God, all strifes were well compounded. —  
My sovereign lord, I do beseech your highness  
To take our brother Clarence to your grace.

*Glo.* Why, Madam, have I offer'd love for this,

To be so flouted in this royal presence?  
 Who knows not, that the gentle duke is dead? [*They all start.*]  
 You do him injury to scorn his corpse.

*R. Edw.* Who knows not, he is dead! who knows he is?

*Q. Eliz.* All-seeing heaven, what a world is this!

*Buck.* Look I so pale, lord Dorset, as the rest?

*Dor.* Ay, my good lord; and no man in the presence,  
 But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks.

*R. Edw.* Is Clarence dead? the order was revers'd.

*Glo.* But he, poor man, by your first order died,  
 And that a winged Mercury did bear;  
 Some tardy cripple bare the countermand,  
 That came too lag to see him buried.  
 God grant, that some, less noble, and less loyal,  
 Nearer in bloody thoughts, and not in blood,  
 Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence did,  
 And yet go current from suspicion.

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* A boon, my sovereign, for my service done!

*R. Edw.* I pr'ythee, peace: my soul is full of sorrow.

*Stan.* I will not rise, unless your highness hear me.

*R. Edw.* Then say at once, what is it thou request'st.

*Stan.* The forfeit, sovereign, of my servant's life;  
 Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman,  
 Lately attendant on the duke of Norfolk.

*R. Edw.* Have I a tongue to doom my brother's death,  
 And shall that tongue give pardon to a slave?  
 My brother kill'd no man, his fault was thought,  
 And yet his punishment was bitter death.

Who sued to me for him? who, in my wrath,  
 Kneel'd at my feet, and bade me be advis'd?  
 Who spoke of brotherhood? who spoke of love?  
 Who told me, how the poor soul did forsake  
 The mighty Warwick, and did fight for me?  
 Who told me, in the field at Tewksbury,  
 When Oxford had me down, he rescu'd me,

And said, "Dear brother, live, and be a king?"  
 Who told me, when we both lay in the field,  
 Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me  
 Even in his garments; and did give himself,  
 All thin and naked, to the numb-cold night?  
 All this from my remembrance brutish wrath  
 Sinfully pluck'd, and not a man of you  
 Had so much grace to put it in my mind.  
 But when your carters, or your waiting-vassals,  
 Have done a drunken slaughter, and defac'd  
 The precious image of our dear Redeemer,  
 You straight are on your knees for pardon, pardon;  
 And I, unjustly too, must grant it you.  
 But for my brother not a man would speak,  
 Nor I, ungracious, speak unto myself  
 For him, poor soul. — The proudest of you all  
 Have been beholding to him in his life,  
 Yet none of you would once beg for his life. —  
 O God! I fear, thy justice will take hold  
 On me, and you, and mine, and yours, for this. —  
 Come, Hastings, help me to my closet. Ah, poor Clarence!  
*[Exeunt King, Queen, HASTINGS, RIVERS, DORSET,*  
*and GREY.*

*Glo.* This is the fruit of rashness. — Mark'd you not,  
 How that the guilty kindred of the queen  
 Look'd pale, when they did hear of Clarence' death?  
 O! they did urge it still unto the king:  
 God will revenge it. Come, lords; will you go,  
 To comfort Edward with our company?  
*Buck.* We wait upon your grace. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE II.

London.

*Enter the Duchess of YORK, with a Son and Daughter of*  
 CLARENCE.

*Son.* Good grandam, tell us, is our father dead?

*Duch.* No, boy.

*Daugh.* Why do you weep so oft? and beat your breast;  
And cry — "O Clarence, my unhappy son!"

*Son.* Why do you look on us, and shake your head,  
And call us — orphans, wretches, cast-aways,  
If that our noble father were alive?

*Duch.* My pretty cousins, you mistake me both,  
I do lament the sickness of the king,  
As loath to lose him, not your father's death.  
It were lost sorrow to wail one that's lost.

*Son.* Then you conclude, my grandam, he is dead?  
The king mine uncle is to blame for it:  
God will revenge it; whom I will importune  
With earnest prayers all to that effect.

*Daugh.* And so will I.

*Duch.* Peace, children, peace! the king doth love you well,  
Incapable and shallow innocents,  
You cannot guess who caus'd your father's death.

*Son.* Grandam, we can; for my good uncle Gloster  
Told me, the king, provok'd to it by the queen,  
Devis'd impeachments to imprison him:  
And when my uncle told me so, he wept,  
And pitied me, and kindly kiss'd my cheek;  
Bade me rely on him, as on my father,  
And he would love me dearly as a child.

*Duch.* Ah! that deceit should steal such gentle shape,  
And with a virtuous visor hide deep vice!  
He is my son, ay, and therein my shame,  
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit.

*Son.* Think you, my uncle did dissemble, grandam?

*Duch.* Ay, boy.

*Son.* I cannot think it. Hark! what noise is this!

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH, distractedly; RIVERS and DORSET,  
following her.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! who shall hinder me to wail and weep,  
To chide my fortune, and torment myself?



I'll join with black despair against my soul,  
And to myself become an enemy.

*Duch.* What means this scene of rude impatience?

*Q. Eliz.* To make an act of tragic violence: —  
Edward, my lord, thy son, our king, is dead! —  
Why grow the branches, when the root is gone?  
Why wither not the leaves, that want their sap? —  
If you will live, lament; if die, be brief;  
That our swift-winged souls may catch the king's;  
Or, like obedient subjects, follow him  
To his new kingdom of ne'er changing night.

*Duch.* Ah! so much interest have I in thy sorrow,  
As I had title in thy noble husband.  
I have bewept a worthy husband's death,  
And liv'd with looking on his images;  
But now, two mirrors of his princely semblance  
Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death,  
And I for comfort have but one false glass,  
That grieves me when I see my shame in him.  
Thou art a widow; yet thou art a mother,  
And hast the comfort of thy children left:  
But death hath snatch'd my husband from mine arms,  
And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble hands,  
Clarence, and Edward. O! what cause have I,  
(Thine being but a moiety of my moan)  
To over-go thy woes, and drown thy cries?

*Son.* Ah, aunt! you wept not for our father's death;  
How can we aid you with our kindred tears?

*Daugh.* Our fatherless distress was left unmoap'd;  
Your widow-dolour likewise be unwept.

*Q. Eliz.* Give me no help in lamentation;  
I am not barren to bring forth complaints.  
All springs reduce their currents to mine eyes,  
That I, being govern'd by the watry moon,  
May send forth plenteous tears to drown the world!  
Ah, for my husband, for my dear lord, Edward!

*Chil.* Ah, for our father, for our dear lord Clarence!

*Duch.* Alas, for both! both mine, Edward and Clarence.

*Q. Eliz.* What stay had I, but Edward? and he's gone.

*Chil.* What stay had we, but Clarence? and he's gone.

*Duch.* What stays had I, but they? and they are gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Was never widow had so dear a loss.

*Chil.* Were never orphans had so dear a loss.

*Duch.* Was never mother had so dear a loss.

Alas! I am the mother of these griefs:

Their woes are parcell'd, mine are general.

She for an Edward weeps, and so do I;

I for a Clarence weep, so doth not she:

These babes for Clarence weep, and so do I:

I for an Edward weep, so do not they: —

Alas! you three on me, threefold distress'd,

Pour all your tears, I am your sorrow's nurse,

And I will pamper it with lamentation.

*Dor.* Comfort, dear mother: God is much displeas'd,  
That you take with unthankfulness his doing.

In common worldly things, 't is call'd ungrateful,

With dull unwillingness to repay a debt,

Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent;

Much more to be thus opposite with heaven,

For it requires the royal debt it lent you.

*Riv.* Madam, bethink you, like a careful mother,

Of the young prince your son: send straight for him,

Let him be crown'd; in him your comfort lives.

Drown desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave,

And plant your joys in living Edward's throne.

*Enter GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, RATCLIFF, and Others.*

*Glo.* Sister, have comfort: all of us have cause

To wail the dimming of our shining star;

But none can help our harms by wailing them. —

Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy;

I did not see your grace. — Humbly on my knee

I crave your blessing.

*IV*

*Duch.* God bless thee; and put meekness in thy breast,  
Love, charity, obedience, and true duty.

*Glo.* Amen; [*Aside.*] and make me die a good old man! —  
That is the butt-end of a mother's blessing;  
I marvel, that her grace did leave it out.

*Buck.* You cloudy princes, and heart-sorrowing peers,  
That bear this heavy mutual load of moan,  
Now cheer each other in each other's love:  
Though we have spent our harvest of this king,  
We are to reap the harvest of his son.  
The broken rancour of your high-swoln hates,  
But lately splinter'd, knit, and join'd together,  
Must gently be preserv'd, cherish'd, and kept:  
Me seemeth good, that, with some little train,  
Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be fet  
Hither to London, to be crown'd our king.

*Riv.* Why with some little train, my lord of Buckingham?

*Buck.* Marry, my lord, lest, by a multitude,  
The new-heal'd wound of malice should break out;  
Which would be so much the more dangerous,  
By how much the estate is green, and yet ungovern'd:  
Where every horse bears his commanding rein,  
And may direct his course as please himself,  
As well the fear of harm, as harm apparent,  
In my opinion, ought to be prevented.

*Glo.* I hope the king made peace with all of us;  
And the compact is firm, and true, in me.

*Riv.* And so in me; and so, I think, in all:  
Yet, since it is but green, it should be put  
To no apparent likelihood of breach,  
Which, haply, by much company might be urg'd:  
Therefore, I say with noble Buckingham,  
That it is meet so few should fetch the prince.

*Hast.* And so say I.

*Glo.* Then be it so; and go we to determine  
Who they shall be that straight shall post to Ludlow.  
*Madam,* — and you my sister, — will you go

your censures in this business?

[*Exeunt all but BUCKINGHAM and GLOSTER.*]

My lord, whoever journeys to the prince,  
 's sake, let not us two stay at home:  
 the way I'll sort occasion,  
 to the story we late talk'd of,  
 the queen's proud kindred from the prince.

My other self, my counsel's consistory,  
 le, my prophet! — My dear cousin,  
 child, will go by thy direction.

Ludlow then, for we'll not stay behind.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.

The Same, A Street.

*Enter Two Citizens, meeting.*

Good morrow, neighbour: whither away so fast?

I promise you, I scarcely know myself.

the news abroad?

Yes; that the king is dead.

Ill news, by'r lady; seldom comes the better:

fear, 't will prove a giddy world.

*Enter another Citizen.*

Neighbours, God speed!

Give you good morrow, Sir.

Doth the news hold of good king Edward's death?

Ay, Sir, it is too true; God help, the while!

Then, masters, look to see a troublous world.

No, no; by God's good grace, his son shall reign.

Woe to that land that's govern'd by a child!

In him there is a hope of government;

his nonage, council under him,

his full and ripen'd years, himself,

t, shall then, and till then, govern well.

So stood the state, when Henry the Sixth

won'd in Paris but at nine months old.

Stood the state so? no, no, good friends, God wot;

For then this land was famously enrich'd  
 With politic grave counsel: then the king  
 Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace.

1 *Cit.* Why, so hath this, both by his father and

3 *Cit.* Better it were they all came by his father,  
 Or by his father there were none at all;  
 For emulation, who shall now be nearest,  
 Will touch us all too near, if God prevent not.  
 O! full of danger is the duke of Gloster;  
 And the queen's sons, and brothers, haught and proud  
 And were they to be rul'd, and not to rule,  
 This sickly land might solace as before.

1 *Cit.* Come, come; we fear the worst: all will be

3 *Cit.* When clouds are seen, wise men put on the  
 When great leaves fall, then winter is at hand:  
 When the sun sets, who doth not look for night?  
 Untimely storms make men expect a dearth.  
 All may be well; but, if God sort it so,  
 'Tis more than we deserve, or I expect.

2 *Cit.* Truly, the hearts of men are full of fear:  
 You cannot reason almost with a man  
 That looks not heavily, and full of dread.

3 *Cit.* Before the days of change, still is it so.  
 By a divine instinct men's minds mistrust  
 Pursuing danger; as by proof we see  
 The water swell before a boisterous storm.  
 But leave it all to God. Whither away?

2 *Cit.* Marry, we were sent for to the justices.

3 *Cit.* And so was I: I'll bear you company.

#### SCENE IV.

London, A Room in the Palace.

*Enter the Archbishop of YORK, the young Duke of YORK,  
 ELIZABETH, and the Duchess of YORK.*

*Arch.* Last night, I heard, they lay at Stony-Strat  
 And at Northampton they do rest to-night:  
*To-morrow, or next day, they will be here.*

*Duch.* I long with all my heart to see the prince :  
I hope, he is much grown since last I saw him.

*Q. Eliz.* But I hear, no: they say, my son of York  
Hath almost overtaken him in his growth.

*York.* Ay, mother, but I would not have it so.

*Duch.* Why, my young cousin, it is good to grow.

*York.* Grandam, one night, as we did sit at supper,  
My uncle Rivers talk'd how I did grow  
More than my brother; "Ay," quoth my uncle Gloster,  
"Small herbs have grace, great weeds do grow apace:"  
And since, methinks, I would not grow so fast,  
Because sweet flowers are slow, and weeds make haste.

*Duch.* 'Good faith, 'good faith, the saying did not hold  
In him that did object the same to thee:  
He was the wretched'st thing when he was young,  
So long a growing, and so leisurely,  
That, if his rule were true, he should be gracious.

*Arch.* And so, no doubt, he is, my gracious Madam.

*Duch.* I hope, he is; but yet let mothers doubt.

*York.* Now, by my troth, if I had been remember'd,  
I could have given my uncle's grace a flout,  
To touch his growth nearer than he touch'd mine.

*Duch.* How, my young York? I prythee, let me hear it.

*York.* Marry, they say, my uncle grew so fast,  
That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old:  
Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.

Grandam, this would have been a biting jest.

*Duch.* I prythee, pretty York, who told thee this?

*York.* Grandam, his nurse.

*Duch.* His nurse! why, she was dead ere thou wast born.

*York.* If't were not she, I cannot tell who told me.

*Q. Eliz.* A parlous boy. Go to, you are too shrewd.

*Arch.* Good Madam, be not angry with the child.

*Q. Eliz.* Pitchers have ears.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Arch.* Here comes a messenger: what news?

*Mess.* Such news, my lord, as grieves me to report.

*Q. Eliz.* How doth the prince?

*Mess.* Well, Madam, and in h

*Duch.* What is thy news?

*Mess.* Lord Rivers and lord Grey are sent to Pomfret,  
And with them Sir Thomas Vaughan, prisoners.

*Duch.* Who hath committed them?

*Mess.* The mighty dukes  
Gloster and Buckingham.

*Arch.* For what offence?

*Mess.* The sum of all I can, I have disclos'd:  
Why, or for what, the nobles were committed,  
Is all unknown to me, my gracious lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah me! I see the ruin of my house.  
The tiger now hath seiz'd the gentle hind;  
Insulting tyranny begins to jet  
Upon the innocent and awless throne: —  
Welcome, destruction, blood, and massacre!  
I see, as in a map, the end of all.

*Duch.* Accursed and unquiet wrangling days,  
How many of you have mine eyes beheld?  
My husband lost his life to get the crown;  
And often up and down my sons were tost,  
For me to joy, and weep, their gain, and loss:  
And being seated, and domestic broils  
Clean over-blown, themselves, the conquerors,  
Make war upon themselves; brother to brother,  
Blood to blood, self against self: — O! preposterous  
And frantic outrage, end thy damned spleen;  
Or let me die, to look on death no more.

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, my boy; we will to sanctuary. —  
Madam, farewell.

*Duch.* Stay, I will go with you.

*Q. Eliz.* You have no cause.

*Arch.* My gracious lady, go,  
[To the Q.]

And thither bear your treasure and your goods.

For my part, I'll resign unto your grace  
 The seal I keep: and so betide to me,  
 As well I tender you, and all of yours.  
 Go; I'll conduct you to the sanctuary.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III. SCENE I.

London. A Street.

*The Trumpets sound. Enter the Prince of WALES, GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, Cardinal BOURCHIER, and Others.*

*Buck.* Welcome, sweet prince, to London, to your chamber.

*Glo.* Welcome, dear cousin, my thoughts' sovereign:  
 The weary way hath made you melancholy.

*Prince.* No, uncle; but our crosses on the way  
 Have made it tedious, wearisome, and heavy:  
 I want more uncles here to welcome me.

*Glo.* Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of your years  
 Hath not yet div'd into the world's deceit:  
 No more can you distinguish of a man,  
 Than of his outward show; which, God he knows.  
 Seldom, or never, jumpeth with the heart.  
 Those uncles, which you want, were dangerous;  
 Your grace attended to their sugar'd words,  
 But look'd not on the poison of their hearts:  
 God keep you from them, and from such false friends!

*Prince.* God keep me from false friends! but they were none.

*Glo.* My lord, the mayor of London comes to greet you.

*Enter the Lord Mayor, and his Train.*

*May.* God bless your grace with health and happy days!

*Prince.* I thank you, good my lord; and thank you all. —

[*Exeunt Mayor, &c.*]

I thought my mother, and my brother York,  
 Would long ere this have met us on the way:  
 fie! what a slug is Hastings, that he comes not  
 To tell us whether they will come or no.



*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Buck.* And in good time here comes the sweating lord.

*Prince.* Welcome, my lord. What! will our mother com

*Hast.* On what occasion, God he knows, not I,  
The queen your mother, and your brother York,  
Have taken sanctuary: the tender prince  
Would fain have come with me to meet your grace,  
But by his mother was perforce withheld.

*Buck.* Fie! what an indirect and peevish course  
Is this of hers. — Lord cardinal, with your grace  
Persuade the queen to send the duke of York  
Unto his princely brother presently?  
If she deny, lord Hastings, go with him,  
And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.

*Card.* My lord of Buckingham, if my weak oratory  
Can from his mother win the duke of York,  
Anon expect him here: but if she be obdurate  
To mild entreaties, God in heaven forbid  
We should infringe the holy privilege  
Of blessed sanctuary! not for all this land,  
Would I be guilty of so great a sin.

*Buck.* You are too senseless-obstinate, my lord,  
Too ceremonious, and traditional:  
Weigh it but with the grossness of this age,  
You break not sanctuary in seizing him.  
The benefit thereof is always granted  
To those whose dealings have deserv'd the place,  
And those who have the wit to claim the place:  
This prince hath neither claim'd it, nor deserv'd it;  
And therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it:  
Then, taking him from thence, that is not there,  
You break no privilege nor charter there.  
Oft have I heard of sanctuary men,  
But sanctuary children, ne'er till now.

*Card.* My lord, you shall o'er-rule my mind for once. —  
Come on, lord Hastings; will you go with me?

*Hast.* I go, my lord.

*Prince.* Good lords, make all the speedy haste you may. —

[*Exeunt Cardinal and HASTINGS.*]

*Say, uncle Gloster, if our brother come,  
Where shall we sojourn till our coronation?*

*Glo.* Where it seems best unto your royal self.  
If I may counsel you, some day, or two,  
Your highness shall repose you at the Tower:  
Then, where you please, and shall be thought most fit  
For your best health and recreation.

*Prince.* I do not like the Tower, of any place. —  
Did Julius Cæsar build that place, my lord?

*Buck.* He did, my gracious lord, begin that place,  
Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified.

*Prince.* Is it upon record, or else reported  
Successively from age to age, he built it?

*Buck.* Upon record, my gracious lord.

*Prince.* But say, my lord, it were not register'd,  
Methinks, the truth should live from age to age,  
As't were retail'd to all posterity,  
Even to the general all-ending day.

*Glo.* So wise so young, they say, do never live long. [*Aside.*]

*Prince.* What say you, uncle?

*Glo.* I say without characters fame lives long.  
Thus, like the formal Vice, Iniquity, [*Aside.*]  
Imoralize two meanings in one word.

*Prince.* That Julius Cæsar was a famous man:  
With what his valour did enrich his wit,  
His wit set down to make his valour live:  
Death makes no conquest of his conqueror,  
For now he lives in fame, though not in life. —  
I'll tell you what, my cousin Buckingham.

*Buck.* What, my gracious lord?

*Prince.* An if I live until I be a man,  
I'll win our ancient right in France again,  
Or die a soldier, as I liv'd a king.

*Glo.* Short summers lightly have a forward spring. [*Aside.*]

*Enter YORK, HASTINGS, and the Cardinal.*

*Buck.* Now, in good time, here comes the duke of York  
*Prince.* Richard of York! how fares our noble brother?

*York.* Well, my dread lord; so must I call you now.

*Prince.* Ay, brother; to our grief, as it is yours.

Too late he died, that might have kept that title,  
Which by his death hath lost much majesty.

*Glo.* How fares our cousin, noble lord of York?

*York.* I thank you, gentle uncle. O! my lord,  
You said, that idle weeds are fast in growth:  
The prince my brother hath outgrown me far.

*Glo.* He hath, my lord.

*York.* And therefore is he idle?

*Glo.* O! my fair cousin, I must not say so.

*York.* Then he is more beholding to you, than I.

*Glo.* He may command me as my sovereign,  
But you have power in me as in a kinsman.

*York.* I pray you, uncle, give me this dagger.

*Glo.* My dagger, little cousin? with all my heart.

*Prince.* A beggar, brother?

*York.* Of my kind uncle, that I know will give;  
And, being but a toy, which is no grief to give.

*Glo.* A greater gift than that I'll give my cousin.

*York.* A greater gift? O! that's the sword to it.

*Glo.* Ay, gentle cousin, were it light enough.

*York.* O! then, I see, you'll part but with light gifts  
In weightier things you'll say a beggar, nay.

*Glo.* It is too weighty for your grace to wear.

*York.* I weigh it lightly, were it heavier.

*Glo.* What! would you have my weapon, little lord?

*York.* I would, that I might thank you as you call

*Glo.* How?

*York.* Little.

*Prince.* My lord of York will still be cross in talk  
Uncle, your grace knows how to bear with him.

*York.* You mean, to bear me, not to bear with

*Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me:*

Because that I am little, like an ape,  
He thinks that you should bear me on your shoulders.

*Buck.* With what a sharp provided wit he reasons:  
To mitigate the scorn he gives his uncle,  
He prettily and aptly taunts himself.  
So cunning, and so young, is wonderful.

*Glo.* My lord, will 't please you pass along?  
Myself, and my good cousin Buckingham,  
Will to your mother, to entreat of her  
To meet you at the Tower, and welcome you.

*York.* What! will you go unto the Tower, my lord?

*Prince.* My lord protector needs will have it so.

*York.* I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower.

*Glo.* Why, what should you fear?

*York.* Marry, my uncle Clarence' angry ghost:  
My grandam told me, he was murder'd there.

*Prince.* I fear no uncles dead.

*Glo.* Nor none that live, I hope.

*Prince.* An if they live, I hope, I need not fear.  
But come, my lord; and, with a heavy heart,  
Thinking on them, go I unto the Tower.

[*A sennet. Exeunt Prince, YORK, HASTINGS, Cardinal, and Attendants.*]

*Buck.* Think you, my lord, this little prating York  
Was not incensed by his subtle mother  
To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously?

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt. O! 't is a perilous boy;  
Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable:  
He's all the mother's, from the top to toe.

*Buck.* Well, let them rest. — Come hither, Catesby.  
Thou art sworn as deeply to effect what we intend,  
As closely to conceal what we impart.  
Thou know'st our reasons urg'd upon the way: —  
What think'st thou? is it not an easy matter  
To make William lord Hastings of our mind,  
For the instalment of this noble duke  
In the seat royal of this famous isle?

*Cate.* He for his father's sake so loves the prince,  
That he will not be won to aught against him.

*Buck.* What think'st thou then of Stanley? will not

*Cate.* He will do all in all as Hastings doth.

*Buck.* Well then, no more but this. Go, gentle Cate,  
And, as it were far off, sound thou lord Hastings,  
How he doth stand affected to our purpose;  
And summon him to-morrow to the Tower,  
To sit about the coronation.

If thou dost find him tractable to us,  
Encourage him, and tell him all our reasons:  
If he be leaden, icy, cold, unwilling,  
Be thou so too, and so break off the talk,  
And give us notice of his inclination;  
For we to-morrow hold divided councils,  
Wherein thyself shalt highly be employ'd.

*Glo.* Commend me to lord William: tell him, Catesby  
His ancient knot of dangerous adversaries  
To-morrow are let blood at Pomfret-castle;  
And bid my lord, for joy of this good news,  
Give mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more.

*Buck.* Good Catesby, go; effect this business sound.

*Cate.* My good lords both, with all the heed I can.

*Glo.* Shall we hear from you, Catesby, ere we sleep?

*Cate.* You shall, my lord.

*Glo.* At Crosby-place, there shall you find us both.

[Exit C

*Buck.* Now, my lord, what shall we do, if we perceive  
Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots?

*Glo.* Chop off his head, man; — somewhat we will  
And, look, when I am king, claim thou of me  
The earldom of Hereford, and all the moveables  
Whereof the king, my brother, was possess'd.

*Buck.* I'll claim that promise at your grace's hand.

*Glo.* And look to have it yielded with all kindness:  
Come, let us sup betimes, that afterwards

We may digest our complots in some form.

## SCENE II.

Before Lord HASTINGS' House.

*Enter a Messenger.**Mess.* My lord! my lord! —*[Knocking]**Hast. [Within.]* — Who knocks?*Mess.* One from the lord Stanley.*Hast. [Within.]* What is 't o'clock?*Mess.* Upon the stroke of four.*Enter HASTINGS.**Hast.* Cannot my lord Stanley sleep these tedious nights?*Mess.* So it appears by that I have to say.

First, he commends him to your noble self.

*Hast.* What then?*Mess.* Then certifies your lordship, that this night  
He dreamt the boar had rased off his helm :  
Besides, he says, there are two councils kept;  
And that may be determin'd at the one,  
Which may make you and him to rue at th' other.  
Therefore, he sends to know your lordship's pleasure, —  
If you will presently take horse with him,  
And with all speed post with him toward the north,  
To shun the danger that his soul divines.*Hast.* Go, fellow, go; return unto thy lord.  
Bid him not fear the separated council :  
His honour and myself are at the one,  
And at the other is my good friend Catesby;  
Where nothing can proceed that toucheth us,  
Whereof I shall not have intelligence.  
Tell him, his fears are shallow, without instance :  
And for his dreams — I wonder he 's so simple  
To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers.  
To fly the boar, before the boar pursues,  
Were to incense the boar to follow us,  
And make pursuit, where he did mean no chase.  
*Go, bid thy master rise and come to me;*

And we will both together to the Tower,  
Where, he shall see, the boar will use us kindly.

*Mess.* I'll go, my lord, and tell him what you say. *[Exit.*

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cate.* Many good morrows to my noble lord!

*Hast.* Good morrow, Catesby: you are early stirring.  
What news, what news, in this our tottering state?

*Cate.* It is a reeling world, indeed, my lord;  
And, I believe, will never stand upright,  
Till Richard wear the garland of the realm.

*Hast.* How! wear the garland! dost thou mean the crown?

*Cate.* Ay, my good lord.

*Hast.* I'll have this crown of mine cut from my shoulders,  
Before I'll see the crown so foul misplac'd.  
But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it?

*Cate.* Ay, on my life; and hopes to find you forward  
Upon his party for the gain thereof:  
And thereupon he sends you this good news, —  
That this same very day your enemies,  
The kindred of the queen, must die at Pomfret.

*Hast.* Indeed, I am no mourner for that news,  
Because they have been still my adversaries;  
But, that I'll give my voice on Richard's side,  
To bar my master's heirs in true descent,  
God knows, I will not do it, to the death.

*Cate.* God keep your lordship in that gracious mind.

*Hast.* But I shall laugh at this a twelve-month hence,  
That they which brought me in my master's hate,  
I live to look upon their tragedy.  
Well, Catesby, ere a fortnight make me older,  
I'll send some packing that yet think not on't.

*Cate.* 'T is a vile thing to die, my gracious lord,  
When men are unprepar'd, and look not for it.

*Hast.* O monstrous, monstrous! and so falls it out  
With Rivers, Vaughan, Grey; and so 't will do  
With some men else, who think themselves as safe

u, and I; who, as thou know'st, are dear  
ncely Richard, and to Buckingham.

te. The princes both make high account of you;  
ey account his head upon the bridge.

[*Aside.*

st. I know they do, and I have well deserv'd it.

*Enter STANLEY.*

on, come on; where is your boar-spear, man?  
ou the boar, and go so unprovided?

m. My lord, good morrow: — good morrow, Catesby. —  
ay jest on, but, by the holy rood,  
t like these several councils, I.

st. My lord, I hold my life as dear as yours;  
ever, in my days, I do protest,  
t so precious to me as 't is now.

you, but that I know our state secure,  
d be so triumphant as I am?

m. The lords at Pomfret, when they rode from London,  
jocund, and suppos'd their states were sure,  
ey, indeed, had no cause to mistrust;  
t, you see, how soon the day o'er-cast:  
udden stab of rancour I misdoubt.

iod, I say, I prove a needless coward!  
, shall we toward the Tower? the day is spent.

st. Come, come, have with you. — Wot you what, my  
lord?

f, the lords you talk of are beheaded.

m. They for their truth might better wear their heads,  
ome that have accus'd them wear their hats.  
me, my lord, let 's away.

*Enter a Pursuivant.*

st. Go on before; I 'll talk with this good fellow.

[*Exeunt STAN. and CATESBY.*

ow, sirrah! how goes the world with thee?

rs. The better, that your lordship please to ask.

t. I tell thee, man, 't is better with me now,  
en thou met'st me last, where now we meet:



Then, was I going prisoner to the Tower,  
By the suggestion of the queen's allies;  
But now, I tell thee, (keep it to thyself)  
This day those enemies are put to death,  
And I in better state than ere I was.

*Purs.* God hold it, to your honour's good content.

*Hast.* Gramercy, fellow. There, drink that for me.

[*Throwing him his Purse.*]

*Purs.* I thank your honour.

[*Exit Pursuivant.*]

*Enter a Priest.*

*Pr.* Well met, my lord; I am glad to see your honour.

*Hast.* I thank thee, good Sir John, with all my heart.

I am in your debt for your last exercise;  
Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you.

*Pr.* I'll wait upon your lordship.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*Buck.* What, talking with a priest, lord chamberlain?  
Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the priest:  
Your honour hath no shriving work in hand.

*Hast.* 'Good faith, and when I met this holy man,  
The men you talk of came into my mind.  
What, go you toward the Tower?

*Buck.* I do, my lord; but long I cannot stay there:  
I shall return before your lordship thence.

*Hast.* Nay, like enough, for I stay dinner there.

*Buck.* And supper too, although thou know'st it not.  
Come, will you go?

*Hast.* I'll wait upon your lordship.

[*Exit.*]

### SCENE III.

Pomfret. Before the Castle.

*Enter RATCLIFF, with a Guard, conducting RIVERS, GREY, and  
VAUGHAN, to Execution.*

*Riv.* Sir Richard Ratcliff, let me tell thee this: —  
To-day shalt thou behold a subject die  
For truth, for duty, and for loyalty.

*Grey.* God bless the prince from all the pack of you!  
A knot you are of damned blood-suckers.

*Vaugh.* You live, that shall cry woe for this hereafter.

*Rat.* Despatch: the limit of your lives is out.

*Riv.* O Pomfret, Pomfret! O, thou bloody prison,  
Fatal and ominous to noble peers!  
Within the guilty closure of thy walls,  
Richard the Second here was hack'd to death:  
And, for more slander to thy dismal seat,  
We give to thee our guiltless blood to drink.

*Grey.* Now Margaret's curse is fallen upon our heads,  
When she exclaim'd on Hastings, you, and I,  
For standing by when Richard stabb'd her son.

*Riv.* Then curs'd she Richard, then curs'd she Buckingham,  
Then curs'd she Hastings: — O, remember, God,  
To hear her prayer for them, as now for us!  
And for my sister, and her princely sons,  
Be satisfied, dear God, with our true blood,  
Which, as thou know'st, unjustly must be spill'd!

*Rat.* Make haste: the hour of death is explete.

*Riv.* Come, Grey, — come, Vaughan; — let us here embrace:  
Farewell, until we meet again in heaven. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE IV.

London. A Room in the Tower.

BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, the Bishop of ELY,  
CATESBY, LOVEL, and Others, sitting at a Table: Officers  
of the Council attending.

*Hast.* Now, noble peers, the cause why we are met  
is to determine of the coronation:

In God's name, speak, when is this royal day?

*Buck.* Are all things ready for the royal time?

*Stan.* They are; and want but nomination.

*Ely.* To-morrow, then, I judge a happy day.

*Buck.* Who knows the lord protector's mind herein?  
Who is most inward with the noble duke?

IV.

*Ely.* Your grace, we think, should soonest know his n

*Buck.* We know each other's faces; for our hearts,  
He knows no more of mine, than I of yours;  
Nor I of his, my lord, than you of mine.  
Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love.

*Hast.* I thank his grace, I know he loves me well;  
But for his purpose in the coronation,  
I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd  
His gracious pleasure any way therein:  
But you, my honourable lords, may name the time;  
And in the duke's behalf I 'll give my voice,  
Which, I presume, he 'll take in gentle part.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Ely.* In happy time here comes the duke himself.

*Glo.* My noble lords and cousins, all, good morrow.  
I have been long a sleeper; but, I trust,  
My absence doth neglect no great design,  
Which by my presence might have been concluded.

*Buck.* Had you not come upon your cue, my lord,  
William lord Hastings had pronounc'd your part,  
I mean, your voice, for crowning of the king.

*Glo.* Than my lord Hastings, no man might be bolder:  
His lordship knows me well, and loves me well.  
My lord of Ely, when I was last in Holborn,  
I saw good strawberries in your garden there;  
I do beseech you, send for some of them.

*Ely.* Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart. [*Exit*

*Glo.* Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you.

[*Takes him*

Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business,  
And finds the testy gentleman so hot,  
That he will lose his head, ere give consent,  
His master's child, as worshipfully he terms it,  
Shall lose the royalty of England's throne.

*Buck.* Withdraw yourself awhile; I 'll go with you.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM*

*Stan.* We have not yet set down this day of triumph.  
To-morrow, in my judgment, is too sudden;  
For I myself am not so well provided,  
As else I would be, were the day prolong'd.

*Re-enter Bishop of ELY.*

*Ely.* Where is my lord, the duke of Gloster?  
I have sent for these strawberries.

*Hast.* His grace looks cheerfully and smooth this morning:  
There 's some conceit or other likes him well,  
When that he bids good morrow with such spirit.  
I think, there 's never a man in Christendom  
Can lesser hide his love, or hate, than he;  
For by his face straight shall you know his heart.

*Stan.* What of his heart perceive you in his face,  
By any livelihood he show'd to-day?

*Hast.* Marry, that with no man here he is offended;  
For, were he, he had shown it in his looks.

*Re-enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.*

*Glo.* I pray you all, tell me what they deserve,  
That do conspire my death with devilish plots  
Of damned witchcraft? and that have prevail'd  
Upon my body with their hellish charms?

*Hast.* The tender love I bear your grace, my lord,  
Makes me most forward in this princely presence  
To doom th' offenders: whosoe'er they be,  
I say, my lord, they have deserved death.

*Glo.* Then, be your eyes the witness of their evil.  
Look how I am bewitch'd; behold mine arm  
Is like a blasted sapling wither'd up:  
And this is Edward's wife, that monstrous witch,  
Consorted with that harlot, strumpet Shore,  
That by their witchcraft thus have marked me.

*Hast.* If they have done this deed, my noble lord, —

*Glo.* If! thou protector of this damned strumpet,  
Talk'st thou to me of ifs? — Thou art a traitor: —  
*Off with his head! — now, by Saint Paul I swear,*

I will not dine until I see the same. —  
 Lovel, and Ratcliff, look that it be done:  
 The rest, that love me, rise, and follow me.

[*Exeunt Council, with GLOSTER and BUCKI*

*Hast.* Woe, woe, for England! not a whit for me;  
 For I, too fond, might have prevented this.  
 Stanley did dream the boar did raise his helm;  
 And I did scorn it, and disdain'd to fly.  
 Three times to-day my foot-cloth horse did stumble,  
 And started when he look'd upon the Tower,  
 As loath to bear me to the slaughter-house.  
 O! now I need the priest that spake to me:  
 I now repent I told the pursuivant,  
 As too triumphing, how mine enemies,  
 To-day at Pomfret bloodily were butcher'd,  
 And I myself secure in grace and favour.  
 O, Margaret, Margaret! now thy heavy curse  
 Is lighted on poor Hastings' wretched head.

*Rat.* Come, come; despatch, the duke would be at  
 Make a short shrift; he longs to see your head.

*Hast.* O, momentary grace of mortal men!  
 Which we more hunt for than the grace of God.  
 Who builds his hope in air of your good looks,  
 Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast;  
 Ready with every nod to tumble down  
 Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

*Lov.* Come, come, despatch: 't is bootless to exche

*Hast.* O, bloody Richard! — miserable England!  
 I prophesy the fearfull'st time to thee,  
 That ever wretched age hath look'd upon.  
 Come, lead me to the block; bear him my head:  
 They smile at me, who shortly shall be dead.

[*E*]

SCENE V.

The Same. The Tower Walls.

**HLOSTER** and **BUCKINGHAM**, in rusty armour, marvellous ill-favoured.

. Come, cousin, canst thou quake, and change thy colour,

thy breath in middle of a word,

then again begin, and stop again,

thou wert distraught; and mad with terror?

**k.** Tut! I can counterfeit the deep tragedian;

and look back, and pry on every side;

and start at wagging of a straw,

eng deep suspicion: ghastly looks

my service, like enforced smiles;

they are ready in their offices;

time to grace my stratagems.

What! is Catesby gone?

. He is; and, see, he brings the mayor along.

*Enter the Lord Mayor and CATESBY.*

**k.** Lord mayor, —

. Look to the drawbridge there!

**k.** Hark! a drum.

. Catesby, o'erlook the walls.

**k.** Lord mayor, the reason we have sent, —

. Look back, defend thee: here are enemies.

**k.** God and our innocency defend and guard us!

*Enter LOVEL and RATCLIFF, with HASTINGS' Head.*

. Be patient, they are friends; Ratcliff, and Lovel.

. Here is the head of that ignoble traitor,

dangerous and unsuspected Hastings.

. So dear I lov'd the man, that I must weep.

him for the plainest harmless creature,

cathe'd upon the earth a Christian;

him my book, wherein my soul recorded

every of all her secret thoughts:

So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of virtue,  
That, his apparent open guilt omitted,  
I mean his conversation with Shore's wife,  
He liv'd from all attainder of suspects.

*Buck.* Well, well, he was the covert'st shelter'd traitor  
That ever liv'd. —

Would you imagine, or almost believe,  
Were 't not that by great preservation  
We live to tell it, that the subtle traitor  
This day had plotted, in the council house,  
To murder me, and my good lord of Gloster?

*May.* Had he done so?

*Glo.* What! think you we are Turks, or infidels?  
Or that we would, against the form of law,  
Proceed thus rashly in the villain's death,  
But that the extreme peril of the case,  
The peace of England, and our persons' safety,  
Enforc'd us to this execution?

*May.* Now, fair befall you! he deserv'd his death;  
And your good graces both have well proceeded,  
To warn false traitors from the like attempts.

*Buck.* I never look'd for better at his hands,  
After he once fell in with mistress Shore;  
Yet had we not determin'd he should die,  
Until your lordship came to see his end;  
Which now the loving haste of these our friends,  
Something against our meanings, hath prevented  
Because, my lord, I would have had you heard  
The traitor speak, and timorously confess  
The manner and the purpose of his treasons;  
That you might well have signified the same  
Unto the citizens, who, haply, may  
Misconstrue us in him, and wail his death.

*May.* But, my good lord, your grace's words shall serve  
As well as I had seen, and heard him speak:  
*And do not doubt, right noble princes both,*

But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens  
With all your just proceedings in this case.

*Glo.* And to that end we wish'd your lordship here,  
To avoid the censures of the carping world.

*Buck.* But since you come too late of our intent,  
Yet witness what you hear we did intend:  
And so, my good lord mayor, we bid farewell.

*[Exit Lord Mayor.]*

*Glo.* Go, after, after, cousin Buckingham!  
The mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all post:  
There, at your meetest vantage of the time,  
Infer the bastardy of Edward's children:  
Tell them, how Edward put to death a citizen,  
Only for saying — he would make his son  
Heir to the crown; meaning, indeed, his house,  
Which by the sign thereof was termed so.  
Moreover, urge his hateful luxury,  
And bestial appetite in change of lust;  
Which stretch'd unto their servants, daughters, wives,  
Even where his raging eye, or savage heart,  
Without controul lusted to make a prey.  
Nay, for a need, thus far come near my person:  
Tell them, when that my mother went with child  
Of that insatiate Edward, noble York,  
My princely father, then had wars in France;  
And by true computation of the time,  
Found that the issue was not his begot;  
Which well appeared in his lineaments,  
Being nothing like the noble duke my father.  
Yet touch this sparingly, as 't were far off;  
Because, my Lord, you know, my mother lives.

*Buck.* Doubt not, my lord, I'll play the orator,  
As if the golden fee, for which I plead,  
Were for myself: and so, my lord, adieu.

*Glo.* If you thrive well, bring them to Baynard's castle?  
Where you shall find me well accompanied,  
With reverend fathers, and well-learned bishops.



*Buck.* I go; and, towards three or four o'clock,  
Look for the news that the Guildhall affords. [*Exit BUCKINGHAM.*]

*Glo.* Go, Lovel, with all speed to doctor Shaw, —  
Go thou [*To CAT.*] to friar Penker: — bid them both  
Meet me within this hour at Baynard's castle.

[*Exeunt LOVEL and CATESBY.*]

Now will I go, to take some privy order,  
To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight;  
And to give order, that no manner person  
Have any time recourse unto the princes.

[*Exit.*]

## SCENE VI.

A Street.

*Enter a Scrivener.*

*Scriv.* Here is the indictment of the good lord Hastings;  
Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd,  
That it may be to-day read o'er in Paul's:  
And mark how well the sequel hangs together.  
Eleven hours I have spent to write it over,  
For yesternight by Catesby was it sent me.  
The precedent was full as long a doing;  
And yet within these five hours Hastings liv'd,  
Untainted, unexamin'd, free, at liberty.  
Here 's a good world the while! — Who is so gross,  
That cannot see this palpable device?  
Yet who so hold, but says he sees it not?  
Bad is the world; and all will come to nought,  
When such ill dealing must be seen in thought.

[*Exit.*]

## SCENE VII.

The Same. The Court of Baynard's Castle.

*Enter GLOSTER at one Door, and BUCKINGHAM at another.*

*Glo.* How now, how now! what say the citizens?

*Buck.* Now by the holy mother of our Lord,  
*The citizens are mum, say not a word.*

*Glo.* Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's children?

*Buck.* I did; with his contract with lady Lucy,  
 I his contract by deputy in France:  
 His insatiate greediness of his desires,  
 His enforcement of the city wives;  
 His tyranny for trifles; his own bastardy,  
 Being got, your father then in France;  
 His resemblance, being not like the duke.  
 That I did infer your lineaments,  
 Having the right idea of your father,  
 Both in your form and nobleness of mind:  
 He did open all your victories in Scotland,  
 Your discipline in war, wisdom in peace,  
 Your bounty, virtue, fair humility;  
 Heeded, left nothing fitting for your purpose  
 Touch'd, or slightly handled in discourse:  
 And, when my oratory drew toward end,  
 He made them that did love their country's good,  
 Cry — "God save Richard, England's royal king!"

*Glo.* And did they so?

*Buck.* No, so God help me, they spake not a word;  
 They stood like dumb statues, or breathing stones,  
 And look'd each on other, and look'd deadly pale.  
 Which when I saw, I reprehended them,  
 And ask'd the mayor, what meant this wilful silence?  
 His answer was, the people were not us'd  
 To be spoke to, but by the recorder.  
 Whereon, he was urg'd to tell my tale again: —  
 Thus saith the duke, thus hath the duke inferr'd; "  
 He nothing spoke in warrant from himself.  
 When he had done, some followers of mine own,  
 At the lower end of the hall, hurl'd up their caps,  
 And some ten voices cried, "God save king Richard!"  
 And thus I took the vantage of those few, —  
 Thanks, gentle citizens, and friends," quoth I;  
 With his general applause, and cheerful shout,  
 He shew'd your wisdom, and your love to Richard:"  
 And even here brake off, and came away.

*Glo.* What tongueless blocks were they ! would they not speak ?  
Will not the mayor, then, and his brethren, come ?

*Buck.* The mayor is here at hand. Intend some fear ;  
Be not you spoke with, but by mighty suit :  
And look you get a prayer-book in your hand,  
And stand between two churchmen, good my lord ;  
For on that ground I 'll make a holy descant :  
And be not easily won to our requests ;  
Play the maid's part, still answer nay, and take it.

*Glo.* I go ; and if you plead as well for them,  
As I can say nay to thee for myself,  
No doubt we bring it to a happy issue.

*Buck.* Go, go, up to the leads ! the lord mayor knocks.

[*Exit GLOUCESTER*]

*Enter the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens.*

Welcome, my lord : I dance attendance here ;  
I think the duke will not be spoke withal. —

*Enter from the Castle, CATESBY.*

Now, Catesby ! what says your lord to my request ?

*Cate.* He doth entreat your grace, my noble lord,  
To visit him to-morrow, or next day.  
He is within, with two right reverend fathers,  
Divinely bent to meditation ;  
And in no worldly suits would he be mov'd,  
To draw him from his holy exercise.

*Buck.* Return, good Catesby, to the gracious duke :  
Tell him, myself, the mayor and aldermen,  
In deep designs, in matter of great moment,  
No less importing than our general good,  
Are come to have some conferences with his grace.

*Cate.* I 'll signify so much unto him straight.

[*Exit CATESBY*]

*Buck.* Ah, ha ! my lord, this prince is not an Edward :  
He is not lulling on a lowd love-bed,  
But on his knees at meditation ;  
~~Not dallying with a brace of courtiers,~~  
~~But meditating with two deep divines ;~~

Not sleeping to engross his idle body,  
 But praying to enrich his watchful soul.  
 Happy were England, would this virtuous prince  
 Take on his grace the sovereignty thereof;  
 But, sure, I fear, we shall not win him to it.  
*May.* Marry, God defend his grace should say us nay!  
*Buck.* I fear, he will. Here Catesby comes again. —

*Re-enter CATESBY.*

Now, Catesby, what says his grace?

*Cate.* He wonders to what end you have assembled  
 Such troops of citizens to come to him:  
 His grace not being warn'd thereof before,  
 He fears, my lord, you mean no good to him.

*Buck.* Sorry I am, my noble cousin should  
 Suspect me, that I mean no good to him:  
 By heaven, we come to him in perfect love;  
 And so once more return, and tell his grace. [*Exit CATESBY.*]  
 When holy, and devout religious men  
 Are at their beads, 't is much to draw them thence;  
 So sweet is zealous contemplation.

*Enter GLOSTER, in a Gallery above, between Two Bishops.*

*CATESBY returns.*

*May.* See, where his grace stands 'tween two clergymen!

*Buck.* Two props of virtue for a Christian prince,  
 To stay him from the fall of vanity;  
 And, see, a book of prayer in his hand;  
 True ornaments to know a holy man. —  
 Famous Plantagenet, most gracious prince,  
 Lend favourable ear to our requests,  
 And pardon us the interruption  
 Of thy devotion, and right-Christian zeal.

*Glo.* My lord, there needs no such apology;  
 I do beseech your grace to pardon me,  
 Who, earnest in the service of my God,  
 Deferr'd the visitation of my friends.

*But, leaving this, what is your grace's pleasure?*

*Buck.* Even that, I hope, which pleaseth God above,  
And all good men of this ungovern'd isle.

*Glo.* I do suspect, I have done some offence,  
That seems disgracious in the city's eye;  
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.

*Buck.* You have, my lord: would it might please your gr  
On our entreaties to amend your fault.

*Glo.* Else wherefore breathe I in a Christian land?

*Buck.* Know then, it is your fault that you resign  
The supreme seat, the throne majestic,  
The scepter'd office of your ancestors,  
Your state of fortune, and your due of birth,  
The lineal glory of your royal house,  
To the corruption of a blemish'd stock;  
Whiles, in the mildness of your sleepy thoughts,  
Which here we waken to our country's good,  
This noble isle doth want her proper limbs;  
Her face defac'd with scars of infamy,  
Her royal stock graft with ignoble plants,  
And almost shoulder'd in the swallowing gulf  
Of dark forgetfulness, and deep oblivion.  
Which to recure, we heartily solicit  
Your gracious self to take on you the charge  
And kingly government of this your land:  
Not as protector, steward, substitute,  
Or lowly factor for another's gain;  
But as successively from blood to blood,  
Your right of birth, your empery, your own.  
For this, consorted with the citizens,  
Your very worshipful and loving friends,  
And by their vehement instigation,  
In this just cause come I to move your grace.

*Glo.* I cannot tell; if to depart in silence,  
Or bitterly to speak in your reproof,  
Best fitteth my degree, or your condition:  
*If, not to answer, — you might haply think,  
Tongue-tied ambition, not replying, yielded*

To bear the golden yoke of sovereignty,  
 Which fondly you would here impose on me :  
 To reprove you for this suit of yours,  
 To season'd with your faithful love to me,  
 When, on the other side, I check'd my friends.  
 Therefore, to speak, and to avoid the first,  
 And then, in speaking, not to incur the last,  
 Definitively thus I answer you.  
 Your love deserves my thanks; but my desert,  
 Unmeritable, shuns your high request.  
 First, if all obstacles were cut away,  
 And that my path were even to the crown,  
 As the ripe revenue and due of birth;  
 Yet so much is my poverty of spirit,  
 So mighty, and so many, my defects,  
 That I would rather hide me from my greatness,  
 Being a bark to brook no mighty sea,  
 Than in my greatness covet to be hid,  
 And in the vapour of my glory smother'd.  
 But, God be thank'd, there is no need of me;  
 And much I need to help you, were there need;  
 The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,  
 Which, mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,  
 Will well become the seat of majesty,  
 And make, no doubt, us happy by his reign.  
 On him I lay that you would lay on me,  
 The right and fortune of his happy stars;  
 Which God defend that I should wring from him !  
*Buck.* My lord, this argues conscience in your grace;  
 But the respects thereof are nice and trivial,  
 All circumstances well considered.  
 You say, that Edward is your brother's son :  
 So say we too, but not by Edward's wife;  
 For first was he contract to lady Lucy;  
 Your mother lives a witness to his vow :  
 And afterward by substitute betroth'd  
 To *Bona*, sister to the king of France.

These both put off, a poor petitioner,  
A care-craz'd mother to a many sons,  
A beauty-waning and distressed widow,  
Even in the afternoon of her best days,  
Made prize and purchase of his wanton eye,  
Seduc'd the pitch and height of his degree  
To base declension and loath'd bigamy.  
By her, in his unlawful bed, he got  
This Edward, whom our manners call the prince.  
More bitterly could I expostulate,  
Save that, for reverence to some alive,  
I give a sparing limit to my tongue.  
Then, good my lord, take to your royal self  
This proffer'd benefit of dignity;  
If not to bless us and the land withal,  
Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry  
From the corruption of abusing times,  
Unto a lineal true-derived course.

*May.* Do, good my lord; your citizens entreat you.

*Buck.* Refuse not, mighty lord, this proffer'd love.

*Cato.* O! make them joyful: grant their lawful suit.

*Glo.* Alas! why would you heap this care on me?

I am unfit for state and majesty:

I do beseech you, take it not amiss;

I cannot, nor I will not, yield to you.

*Buck.* If you refuse it, — as in love and zeal,  
Loath to depose the child, your brother's son;  
As well we know your tenderness of heart,  
And gentle, kind, effeminate remorse,  
Which we have noted in you to your kindred,  
And equally, indeed, to all estates, —  
Yet know, whe'r you accept our suit or no,  
Your brother's son shall never reign our king;  
But we will plant some other in your throne,  
To the disgrace and downfall of your house.  
*And, in this resolution, here we leave you. —*

Come, citizens, we will entreat no more.

[*Exeunt* BUCKINGHAM and Citizens.]

*Cats.* Call him again, sweet prince; accept their suit:  
If you deny them, all the land will rue it.

*Glo.* Will you enforce me to a world of cares?

Call them again: I am not made of stone,

But penetrable to your kind entreaties,

[*Exit* CATSBY.]

Albeit against my conscience, and my soul. —

*Re-enter* BUCKINGHAM, and the rest.

Cousin of Buckingham, and sage, grave men,

Since you will buckle fortune on my back,

To bear her burden, wh'er I will, or no,

I must have patience to endure the load:

But if black scandal, or foul-fac'd reproach,

Attend the sequel of your imposition,

Your mere enforcement shall acquittance me

From all the impure blots and stains thereof;

For God doth know, and you may partly see,

How far I am from the desire of this.

*May.* God bless your grace! we see it, and will say it.

*Glo.* In saying so, you shall but say the truth.

*Buck.* Then I salute you with this royal title, —

Long live king Richard, England's worthy king!

*All.* Amen.

*Buck.* To-morrow may it please you to be crown'd?

*Glo.* Even when you please, for you will have it so.

*Buck.* To-morrow, then, we will attend your grace:

And so, most joyfully, we take our leave.

*Glo.* Come, let us to our holy work again. [*To the Bishops.*

Farewell, my cousin: — farewell, gentle friends.

[*Exeunt.*]



## ACT IV. SCENE I.

Before the Tower.

*Enter, on one side, Queen ELIZABETH, Duchess of YORK, and Marquess of DORSET; on the other, ANNE, Duchess of GLOSTER, leading Lady MARGARET, PLANTAGENET, CLARENCE's young Daughter.*

*Duch.* Who meets us here? — my niece Plantagenet  
Led in the hand of her kind aunt of Gloster!  
Now, for my life, she's wand'ring to the Tower,  
On pure heart's love, to greet the tender prince. —  
Daughter, well met.

*Anne.* God give your graces both  
A happy and a joyful time of day.

*Q. Eliz.* As much to you, good sister: whither away?

*Anne.* No farther than the Tower; and, as I guess,  
Upon the like devotion as yourselves,  
To gratulate the gentle princes there.

*Q. Eliz.* Kind sister, thanks: we'll enter all together:

*Enter BRAKENBURY.*

And in good time here the lieutenant comes. —  
Master lieutenant, pray you, by your leave,  
How doth the prince, and my young son of York?

*Brak.* Right well, dear Madam. By your patience,  
I may not suffer you to visit them:  
The king hath strictly charg'd the contrary.

*Q. Eliz.* The king! who's that?

*Brak.* I mean the lord protector.

*Q. Eliz.* The Lord protect him from that kingly title!  
Hath he set bounds between their love, and me?  
I am their mother; who shall bar me from them?

*Duch.* I am their father's mother; I will see them.

*Anne.* Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother:  
Then, bring me to their sights; I'll bear thy blame,  
And take thy office from thee, on my peril.

*Brak.* No, Madam, no; I may not leave it so:  
I am bound by oath, and therefore pardon me.

[*Exit BRAKENBURY.*]

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Let me but meet you, ladies, one hour hence,  
And I'll salute your grace of York as mother,  
And reverend looker-on of two fair queens. —  
Come, Madam, you must straight to Westminster,  
[*To the Duchess of GLOSTER.*]

There to be crowned Richard's royal queen.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! cut my lace asunder,  
That my pent heart may have some scope to beat,  
Or else I swoon with this dead-killing news.

*Anne.* Despiteful tidings! O, unpleasing news!

*Dor.* Be of good cheer: — mother, how fares your grace?

*Q. Eliz.* O Dorset! speak not to me, get thee gone;  
Death and destruction dog thee at thy heels:  
Thy mother's name is ominous to children.  
If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas,  
And live with Richmond from the reach of hell.  
Go, hie thee, hie thee, from this slaughter-house,  
Lest thou increase the number of the dead,  
And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse, —  
Nor mother, wife, nor England's 'counted queen.

*Stan.* Full of wise care is this your counsel, Madam. —  
Take all the swift advantage of the hours;  
You shall have letters from me to my son  
In your behalf, to meet you on the way:  
Be not ta'en tardy by unwise delay.

*Duch.* O ill-dispersing wind of misery! —  
O, my accursed womb! the bed of death,  
A cockatrice hast thou hatch'd to the world,  
Whose unavoided eye is murderous!

*Stan.* Come, Madam, come: I in all haste was sent.

*Anne.* And I with all unwillingness will go. —

O! would to God, that the inclusive verge

IV.

Of golden metal, that must round my brow,

Were red-hot steel to sear me to the brain!

Anointed let me be with deadly venom;

And die, ere men can say — God save the queen!

*Q. Eliz.* Go, go, poor soul, I envy not thy glory;

To feed my humour, wish thyself no harm.

*Anne.* No! why? — When he, that is my husband now,  
Came to me, as I follow'd Henry's corse;

When scarce the blood was well wash'd from his hands,

Which issu'd from my other angel husband,

And that dear saint which, then, I weeping follow'd;

O! when, I say, I look'd on Richard's face,

This was my wish, — "Be thou," quoth I, "accurs'd,

For making me, so young, so old a widow!

And, when thou wedd'st, let sorrow haunt thy bed;

And be thy wife (if any be so mad)

More miserable by the life of thee,

Than thou hast made me by my dear lord's death!"

Lo! ere I can repeat this curse again,

Within so small a time, my woman's heart

Grossly grew captive to his honey words,

And prov'd the subject of mine own soul's curse;

Which hitherto hath held mine eyes from rest;

For never yet one hour in his bed

Did I enjoy the golden dew of sleep,

But with his timorous dreams was still awak'd.

Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick;

And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me.

*Q. Eliz.* Poor heart, adieu; I pity thy complaining,

*Anne.* No more than with my soul I mourn for yours.

*Dor.* Farewell, thou woeful welcomer of glory.

*Anne.* Adieu, poor soul, that tak'st thy leave of it.

*Duch.* Go thou to Richmond, and good fortune guide thee! —

[To Dorset.]

Go thou to Richard, and good angels tend thee! — [To Anne.]

Go thou to sanctuary, and good thoughts possess thee!

[To Queen Elizabeth.]

I to my grave, where peace and rest lie with me!  
 Eighty odd years of sorrow have I seen,  
 And each hour's joy wreck'd with a week of teen.

*Q. Eliz.* Stay yet; look back, with me, unto the Tower. —  
 Pity, you ancient stones, those tender babes,  
 Whom envy hath immur'd within your walls;  
 Rough cradle for such little pretty ones!  
 Rude ragged nurse, old sullen play-fellow  
 For tender princes, use my babies well!  
 So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

A Room of State in the Palace.

*Sound a Sennet.* RICHARD, as King upon his Throne; BUCKINGHAM, CATESBY, a Page, and Others.

*R. Rich.* Stand all apart. — Cousin of Buckingham!

*Buck.* My gracious sovereign.

*R. Rich.* Give me thy hand. Thus high, by thy advice,  
 And thy assistance, is king Richard seated: —  
 But shall we wear these glories for a day,  
 Or shall they last, and we rejoice in them?

*Buck.* Still live they, and for ever let them last!

*R. Rich.* Ah! Buckingham, now do I play the touch,  
 To try if thou be current gold, indeed. —  
 Young Edward lives. — Think now what I would speak.

*Buck.* Say on, my loving lord.

*R. Rich.* Why, Buckingham, I say, I would be king.

*Buck.* Why, so you are, my thrice-renowned lord.

*R. Rich.* Ha! am I king? 'T is so; but Edward lives.

*Buck.* True, noble prince.

*R. Rich.* O bitter consequence,  
 That Edward still should live, — true, noble prince. —  
 Cousin, thou wast not wont to be so dull: —  
 Shall I be plain? — I wish the bastards dead;  
 And I would have it suddenly perform'd.  
 What say'st thou now? speak suddenly, be brief.

*Buck.* Your grace may do your pleasure.

*R. Rich.* Tut, tut! thou art all ice, thy kindness freezes.  
Say, have I thy consent that they shall die?

*Buck.* Give me some little breath, some pause, dear lord,  
Before I positively speak in this:

I will resolve you herein presently. [*Exit* BUCKINGHAM.]

*Cate.* The king is angry: see, he gnaws his lip. [*Aside.*]

*R. Rich.* I will converse with iron-witted fools,

[*Descends from his Throne.*]

And unresponsive boys: none are for me,

That look into me with considerate eye.

High-reaching Buckingham grows circumspect.

Boy! —

*Page.* My lord.

*R. Rich.* Know'st thou not any, whom corrupting gold  
Will tempt unto a close exploit of death?

*Page.* I know a discontented gentleman,  
Whose humble means match not his haughty spirit:  
Gold were as good as twenty orators,  
And will, no doubt, tempt him to any thing.

*R. Rich.* What is his name?

*Page.* His name, my lord, is Tyrrel.

*R. Rich.* I partly know the man: go, call him hither, boy. —

[*Exit Page.*]

The deep-revolving witty Buckingham

No more shall be the neighbour to my counsels.

Hath he so long held out with me untir'd,

And stops he now for breath? — well, be it so. —

*Enter* STANLEY.

How now, lord Stanley? what 's the news?

*Stan.* Know, my loving lord,  
The marquis Dorset, as I hear, is fled  
To Richmond, in the parts where he abides.

*R. Rich.* Come hither, Catesby: rumour it abroad,  
That Anne, my wife, is very grievous sick;  
I will take order for her keeping close.

acquire me out some mean poor gentleman,  
Whom I will marry straight to Clarence' daughter: —  
The boy is foolish, and I fear not him. —  
Look, how thou dream'st! — I say again, give out,  
That Anne my queen is sick, and like to die:  
About it; for it stands me much upon,  
To stop all hopes whose growth may damage me. —

[Exit CATESBY.]

I must be married to my brother's daughter,  
Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass. —  
Murder her brothers, and then marry her?  
Uncertain way of gain! But I am in  
So far in blood, that sin will pluck on sin.  
Tear-falling pity dwells not in this eye. —

*Re-enter Page, with TYRREL.*

Is thy name Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* James Tyrrel, and your most obedient subject.

*R. Rich.* Art thou, indeed?

*Tyr.* Prove me, my gracious lord.

*R. Rich.* Dar'st thou resolve to kill a friend of mine?

*Tyr.* Please you; but I had rather kill two enemies.

*R. Rich.* Why, then thou hast it: two deep enemies,  
Foes to my rest, and my sweet sleep's disturbers,  
Are they that I would have thee deal upon.  
Tyrrel, I mean those bastards in the Tower.

*Tyr.* Let me have open means to come to them,  
And soon I'll rid you from the fear of them.

*R. Rich.* Thou sing'st sweet music. Hark, come hither,  
Tyrrel:

Go, by this token. — Rise, and lend thine ear. [Whispers.  
There is no more but so: — say, it is done,  
And I will love thee, and prefer thee for it.

*Tyr.* I will despatch it straight. [Exit.

*Re-enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*Buck.* My lord, I have consider'd in my mind  
The late demand that you did sound me in.

*K. Rich.* Well, let that rest. Dorset is fled to Richmond.  
*Buck.* I hear the news, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, he is your wife's son: — well look unt

*Buck.* My lord, I claim the gift, my due by promise,  
 For which your honour and your faith is pawn'd;  
 Th' earldom of Hereford, and the moveables,  
 Which you have promised I shall possess.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, look to your wife: if she convey  
 Letters to Richmond, you shall answer it.

*Buck.* What says your highness to my just request?

*K. Rich.* I do remember me, — Henry the sixth  
 Did prophesy, that Richmond should be king,  
 When Richmond was a little peevish boy.  
 A king! — perhaps —

*Buck.* My lord, —

*K. Rich.* How chance, the prophet could not at that time  
 Have told me, I being by, that I should kill him?

*Buck.* My lord, your promise for the earldom, —

*K. Rich.* Richmond! — When last I was at Exeter,  
 The mayor in courtesy show'd me the castle,  
 And call'd it — Rouge-mont: at which name I started,  
 Because a bard of Ireland told me once,  
 I should not live long after I saw Richmond.

*Buck.* My lord, —

*K. Rich.* Ay; what's o'clock?

*Buck.* I am thus held to put your grace in mind  
 Of what you promis'd me.

*K. Rich.* Well, but what's o'clock?

*Buck.* Upon the stroke of

*K. Rich.* Well, let it strike.

*Buck.* Why, let it strike?

*K. Rich.* Because that, like a Jack, thou keep'st the strol  
 Betwixt thy begging and my meditation.  
 I am not in the giving vein to-day.

*Buck.* Why, then resolve me whether you will, or no.

*K. Rich.* Thou troublest me: I am not in the vein.

[Exeunt King, Richmond, and Tr

*Buck.* And is it thus? repays he my deep service  
With such contempt? made I him king for this?  
O! let me think on Hastings, and be gone  
The Brecknock, while my fearful head is on.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE III.

The Same.

*Enter TYRREL.*

*Tyr.* The tyrannous and bloody act is done;  
The most arch deed of piteous massacre,  
That ever yet this land was guilty of.  
Dighton and Forrest, whom I did suborn  
To do this piece of ruthless butchery,  
Albeit they were flesh'd villains, bloody dogs,  
Melted with tenderness and mild compassion,  
Wept like to children in their death's sad story.  
"Oh! thus," quoth Dighton, "lay the gentle babes," —  
"Thus, thus," quoth Forrest, "girdling one another  
Within their alabaster innocent arms:  
Their lips were four red roses on a stalk,  
And in their summer beauty kiss'd each other.  
A book of prayers on their pillow lay;  
Which once," quoth Forrest, "almost chang'd my mind;  
But, O! the devil" — there the villain stopp'd;  
When Dighton thus told on, — "we smothered  
The most replenished sweet work of nature,  
That, from the prime creation, e'er she fram'd."  
Hence both are gone with conscience and remorse:  
They could not speak; and so I left them both,  
To bear this tidings to the bloody king.

*Enter King RICHARD.*

And here he comes. — All health, my sovereign! low!

*K. Rich.* Kind Tyrrel, am I happy in thy news?

*Tyr.* If to have done the thing you gave in charge  
Beget your happiness, be happy then,  
*For it is done.*



*R. Rich.* But did'st thou see them dead?

*Tyr.* I did, my lord.

*R. Rich.* And buried, gentle Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* The chaplain of the Tower hath buried them;  
But where, to say the truth, I do not know.

*R. Rich.* Come to me, Tyrrel, soon, and after supper,  
When thou shalt tell the process of their death.  
Mean time, but think how I may do thee good,  
And be inheritor of thy desire.  
Farewell, till then.

*Tyr.* I humbly take my leave. [Exit

*R. Rich.* The son of Clarence have I pent up close;  
His daughter meanly have I match'd in marriage;  
The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham's bosom,  
And Anne my wife hath bid this world good night.  
Now, for I know the Bretagne Richmond aims  
At young Elizabeth, my brother's daughter,  
And by that knot looks proudly on the crown,  
To her go I, a jolly thriving wooer.

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cate.* My lord! —

*R. Rich.* Good or bad news, that thou com'st in so bluntly!

*Cate.* Bad news, my lord: Morton is fled to Richmond;  
And Buckingham, back'd with the hardy Welshmen,  
Is in the field, and still his power encreaseth.

*R. Rich.* Ely with Richmond troubles me more near,  
Than Buckingham and his rash-levied strength.  
Come; I have learn'd, that fearful commenting  
Is leaden servitor to dull delay;  
Delay leads impotent and snail-pac'd beggary:  
Then, fiery expedition be my wing,  
Jove's Mercury, and herald for a king.  
Go, muster men: my counsel is my shield;  
We must be brief, when traitors brave the field.

[Exit  
11

## SCENE IV.

The Same. Before the Palace.

*Enter Queen MARGARET.*

r. So, now prosperity begins to mellow,  
 into the rotten mouth of death.  
 These confines slyly have I lurk'd,  
 the waning of mine enemies.  
 Injunction am I witness to,  
 to France; hoping, the consequence  
 as bitter, black, and tragical.  
 'Thee, wretched Margaret: who comes here? [*Retiring.*]

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH and the Duchess of YORK.*

z. Ah, my poor princes! ah, my tender babes!  
 Worn flowers, new-appearing sweets!  
 O gentle souls fly in the air,  
 Not fix'd in doom perpetual,  
 Out me with your airy wings,  
 Your mother's lamentation.

r. Hover about her; say, that right for right  
 M'd your infant morn to aged night.

. So many miseries have craz'd my voice,  
 Woe-wearied tongue is still and mute. —  
 Plantagenet, why art thou dead?

r. Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet;  
 Or Edward pays a dying debt.

iz. Wilt thou, O God! fly from such gentle lambs,  
 And them in the entrails of the wolf?  
 Hast thou sleep, when such a deed was done?

r. When holy Harry died, and my sweet son.

. Dead life, blind sight, poor mortal living ghost,  
 Me, world's shame, grave's due by life usurp'd,

Fact and record of tedious days,

Inrest on England's lawful earth,

Made drunk with innocent blood!

[*Sitting down.*]

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! that thou would'st as soon afford a grave.  
As thou canst yield a melancholy seat;  
Then would I hide my bones, not rest them here!  
Ah! who hath any cause to mourn, but we?

[*Sitting down*]

*Q. Mar.* If ancient sorrow be most reverent,

[*Coming for*

Give mine the benefit of seniority,  
And let my griefs frown on the upper hand. .  
If sorrow can admit society, [Sitting down with  
Tell o'er your woes again by viewing mine: —  
I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him:  
I had a husband, till a Richard kill'd him;  
Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;  
Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him.

*Duch.* I had a Richard too, and thou didst kill him:  
I had a Rutland too; thou help'st to kill him.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hadst a Clarence too, and Richard kill'd  
From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept  
A hell-hound, that doth hunt us all to death:  
That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes,  
To worry lambs, and lap their gentle blood:  
That foul defacer of God's handy-work,  
That reigns in galled eyes of weeping souls,  
That excellent grand tyrant of the earth,  
Thy womb let loose, to chase us to our graves. —  
O! upright, just, and true-disposing God,  
How do I thank thee, that this carnal cur  
Preys on the issue of his mother's body,  
And makes her pew-fellow with other's moan!

*Duch.* O, Harry's wife! triumph not in my woes:  
God witness with me, I have wept for thine.

*Q. Mar.* Bear with me: I am hungry for revenge,  
And now I cloy me with beholding it.

Thy Edward he is dead, that kill'd my Edward;

*Thy other Edward* dead, to quit my Edward;

~~My~~ *Young York* he is but boot, because both they

the high perfection of my loss.  
 nce he is dead, that stabb'd my Edward;  
 eholders of this frantic play,  
 erate Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan, Grey,  
 smother'd in their dusky graves.  
 et lives, hell's black intelligencer,  
 rv'd their factor, to buy souls,  
 them thither; but at hand, at hand,  
 spiteous and unpitied-end:  
 es, hell burns, fiends roar, saints pray,  
 im suddenly convey'd from hence. —  
 ; bond of life, dear God! I pray,  
 y live and say, the dog is dead.  
 z. O! thou didst prophesy, the time would come,  
 ould wish for thee to help me curse  
 ed spider, that foul bunch-back'd toad.  
 r. I call'd thee then, vain flourish of my fortune;  
 e then, poor shadow, painted queen;  
 ntation of but what I was,  
 ing index of a direful pageant,  
 d o' high, to be hurl'd down below:  
 only mock'd with two fair babes;  
 f what thou wast; a garish flag,  
 aim of every dangerous shot;  
 lignity, a breath, a bubble;  
 n jest, only to fill the scene.  
 hy husband now? where be thy brothers?  
 thy two sons? wherein dost thou joy?  
 , and kneels, and says — God save the queen?  
 the bending peers that flatter'd thee?  
 the thronging troops that follow'd thee?  
 this, and see what now thou art.  
 wife, a most distressed widow;  
 mother, one that wails the name;  
 ing sued to, one that humbly sues;  
 , *a very caitiff* crown'd with care:  
 t scorn'd at me, now scorn'd of me;

For one being fear'd of all, now fearing one;  
 For one commanding all, obey'd of none.  
 Thus hath the course of justice whirl'd about,  
 And left thee but a very prey to time;  
 Having no more but thought of what thou wast  
 To torture thee the more, being what thou art.  
 Thou didst usurp my place, and dost thou not  
 Usurp the just proportion of my sorrow?  
 Now, thy proud neck bears half my burden'd yoke;  
 From which, even here, I slip my wearied head,  
 And leave the burden of it all on thee.  
 Farewell, York's wife, and queen of sad mischance—  
 These English woes shall make me smile in France.

*Q. Elis.* O thou! well skill'd in curses, stay a while,  
 And teach me how to curse mine enemies,

*Q. Mar.* Forbear to sleep the night, and fast the day;  
 Compare dead happiness with living woe;  
 Think that thy babes were fairer than they were,  
 And he that slew them fouler than he is:  
 Bettering thy loss makes the bad-causer worse:  
 Revolving this will teach thee how to curse.

*Q. Elis.* My words are dull; O! quicken them with thine.

*Q. Mar.* Thy woes will make them sharp, and pierce like n  
[Exit Queen MARGA]

*Duch.* Why should calamity be full of words?

*Q. Elis.* Windy attorneys to their client woes,  
 Airy succeders of intestate joys,  
 Poor breathing orators of miseries!  
 Let them have scope: though what they do impart  
 Help nothing else, yet do they ease the heart.

*Duch.* If so, then be not tongue-ty'd: go with me,  
 And in the breath of bitter words let's smother  
 My damned son, that thy two sweet sons smother'd.

[A Trumpet he

**The trumpet sounds: he copious in exclams.**

*Enter King RICHARD, and his Train, marching.*

*R. Rich.* Who intercepts me in my expedition?

*Duch.* O! she, that might have intercepted thee,  
By strangling thee in her accursed womb,  
From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast done.

*Q. Elis.* Hid'st thou that forehead with a golden crown,  
Where should be branded, if that right were right,  
The slaughter of the prince that ow'd that crown,  
And the dire death of my poor sons, and brothers?  
Tell me, thou villain—slave, where are my children?

*Duch.* Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy brother Clarence,  
And little Ned Plantagenet, his son?

*Q. Elis.* Where is the gentle Rivers, Vaughan, Grey?

*Duch.* Where is kind Hastings?

*R. Rich.* A flourish, trumpets! — strike alarum, drums!  
Let not the heavens hear these tell—tale women  
Rail on the Lord's anointed. Strike, I say! —

*[Flourish. Alarums.*

Either be patient, and entreat me fair,  
Or with the clamorous report of war  
Thus will I drown your exclamations.

*Duch.* Art thou my son?

*R. Rich.* Ay; I thank God, my father, and yourself.

*Duch.* Then patiently hear my impatience.

*R. Rich.* Madam, I have a touch of your condition,  
That cannot brook the accent of reproof.

*Duch.* O! let me speak.

*R. Rich.* Do, then; but I'll not hear.

*Duch.* I will be mild and gentle in my words.

*R. Rich.* And brief, good mother; for I am in haste.

*Duch.* Art thou so hasty? I have stay'd for thee,  
God knows, in torment and in agony.

*R. Rich.* And came I not at last to comfort you?

*Duch.* No, by the holy rood, thou know'st it well,  
Thou cam'st on earth to make the earth my hell.  
A grievous burden was thy birth to me;  
*Tetchy and wayward was thy infancy!*

Thy school-days, frightful, desperate, wild and furious;  
Thy prime of manhood, daring, bold, and venturous:  
Thy age confirm'd, proud, subtle, sly, and bloody,  
More mild, but yet more harmful, kind in hatred:  
What comfortable hour canst thou name,  
That ever grac'd me with thy company?

*R. Rich.* Faith, none, but Humphrey Hour, that call'd  
your grace

To break fast once forth of my company.

If I be so disgracious in your eye,

Let me march on, and not offend you, *Madam.* —

Strike up the drum!

*Duch.* I pr'ythee, hear me speak.

*R. Rich.* You speak too bitterly.

*Duch.*

Hear me a word;

For I shall never speak to thee again.

*R. Rich.* So.

*Duch.* Either thou wilt die by God's just ordinance,  
Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror;  
Or I with grief and extreme age shall perish,  
And never look upon thy face again.  
Therefore, take with thee my most grievous curse;  
Which in the day of battle tire thee more,  
Than all the complete armour that thou wear'st!  
My prayers on the adverse party fight;  
And there the little souls of Edward's children  
Whisper the spirits of thine enemies,  
And promise them success and victory.  
Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end;  
Shame serves thy life, and doth thy death attend.

[*Exit.*

*Q. Eliz.* Though far more cause, yet much less spirit to curse  
Abides in me: I say amen to her.

[*Going.*

*R. Rich.* Stay, *Madam*, I must talk a word with you.

*Q. Eliz.* I have no more sons of the royal blood,  
For thee to slaughter: for my daughters, *Richard*,  
They shall be praying nuns, not weeping queens;  
And therefore level not to hit their lives.

*R. Rich.* You have a daughter call'd Elizabeth,  
Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious.

*Q. Eliz.* And must she die for this? O! let her live,  
And I'll corrupt her manners, stain her beauty;  
Slander myself as false to Edward's bed;  
Throw over her the veil of infamy:  
So she may live unscarr'd of bleeding slaughter,  
I will confess she was not Edward's daughter.

*R. Rich.* Wrong not her birth; she is a royal princess.

*Q. Eliz.* To save her life, I'll say she is not so.

*R. Rich.* Her life is safest only in her birth.

*Q. Eliz.* And only in that safety died her brothers.

*R. Rich.* Lo! at their birth good stars were opposite.

*Q. Eliz.* No, to their lives ill friends were contrary.

*R. Rich.* All unavoided is the doom of destiny.

*Q. Eliz.* True, when avoided grace makes destiny.  
My babes were destin'd to a fairer death,  
If grace had bless'd thee with a fairer life.

*R. Rich.* You speak, as if that I had slain my cousins.

*Q. Eliz.* Cousins, indeed; and by their uncle cozen'd  
Of comfort, kingdom, kindred, freedom, life.  
Whose hands soever lanc'd their tender hearts,  
Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction:  
No doubt the murderous knife was dull and blunt,  
Till it was whetted on thy stone-hard heart,  
To revel in the entrails of my lambs.  
But that still use of grief makes wild grief tame,  
My tongue should to thy ears not name my boys,  
Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes;  
And I, in such a desperate bay of death,  
Like a poor bark, of sails and tackling reft,  
Rush all to pieces on thy rocky bosom.

*R. Rich.* Madam, so thrive I in my enterprize,  
And dangerous success of bloody wars,  
As I intend more good to you and yours,  
Than ever you or yours by me were harm'd!



*Q. Eliz.* What good is cover'd with the face of heaven,  
To be discover'd, that can do me good?

*R. Rich.* Th' advancement of your children, gentle lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Up to some scaffold, there to lose their heads?

*R. Rich.* Unto the dignity and height of honour.

The high imperial type of this earth's glory.

*Q. Eliz.* Flatter my sorrow with report of it:  
Tell me, what state, what dignity, what honour,  
Canst thou demise to any child of mine?

*R. Rich.* Even all I have; ay, and myself and all,  
Will I withal endow a child of thine;

So in the Lethe of thy angry soul

Thou drown the sad remembrance of those wrongs,

Which, thou supposest, I have done to thee.

*Q. Eliz.* Be brief, lest that the process of thy kindness  
Last longer telling than thy kindness' date.

*R. Rich.* Then know, that from my soul I love thy daughter

*Q. Eliz.* My daughter's mother thinks it with her soul.

*R. Rich.* What do you think?

*Q. Eliz.* That thou dost love my daughter from thy soul.  
So, from thy soul's love, didst thou love her brothers;  
And from my heart's love I do thank thee for it.

*R. Rich.* Be not so hasty to confound my meaning.  
I mean, that with my soul I love thy daughter,  
And do intend to make her queen of England.

*Q. Eliz.* Well then, who dost thou mean shall be her king

*R. Rich.* Even he that makes her queen: who else should he

*Q. Eliz.* What! thou?

*R. Rich.* Even so: how think you of it?

*Q. Eliz.* How canst thou woo her?

*R. Rich.* That I would learn of you  
As one being best acquainted with her humour.

*Q. Eliz.* And wilt thou learn of me?

*R. Rich.* Madam, with all my heart.

*Q. Eliz.* Send to her, by the man that slew her brothers,  
A pair of bleeding hearts; thereon engrave  
Edward and York; then, haply, will she weep:

resent to her, — as sometime Margaret  
 ather, steep'd in Rutland's blood, —  
 hief; which, say to her, did drain  
 sap from her sweet brother's body,  
 · wipe her weeping eyes withal.  
 · cement move her not to love,  
 · etter of thy noble deeds;  
 u mad'st away her uncle Clarence,  
 livers; ay, and, for her sake,  
 k conveyance with her good aunt Anne.  
 . You mock me, Madam: this is not the way  
 : daughter.

There is no other way,  
 couldst put on some other shape,  
 Richard that hath done all this.  
 . Say, that I did all this for love of her?  
 Nay, then indeed, she cannot choose but hate thee,  
 ght love with such a bloody spoil.  
 . Look, what is done cannot be now amended?  
 eal unadvisedly sometimes,  
 · hours give leisure to repent:  
 the kingdom from your sons,  
 ends I'll give it to your daughter.  
 I'd the issue of your womb,  
 your increase, I will beget  
 of your blood upon your daughter.  
 s name is little less in love,  
 doting title of a mother:  
 children, but one step below,  
 r mettle, of your very blood;  
 ain, save for a night of groans  
 her, for whom you bid like sorrow.  
 en were vexation to your youth;  
 all be a comfort to your age.  
 I have is but a son, being king,  
 loss your daughter is made queen.  
 ke you what amends I would,

Therefore, accept such kindness as I can.  
 Dorset, your son, that with a fearful soul  
 Leads discontented steps in foreign soil,  
 This fair alliance quickly shall call home  
 To high promotions and great dignity :  
 The king, that calls your beauteous daughter wife,  
 Familiarly shall call thy Dorset brother ;  
 Again shall you be mother to a king,  
 And all the ruins of distressful times  
 Repair'd with double riches of content.  
 What! we have many goodly days to see :  
 The liquid drops of tears that you have shed,  
 Shall come again transform'd to orient pearl,  
 Advantaging their loan with interest  
 Of ten-times-double gain of happiness.  
 Go then, my mother; to thy daughter go :  
 Make bold her bashful years with your experience;  
 Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale;  
 Put in her tender heart th' aspiring flame  
 Of golden sov'reignty; acquaint the princess  
 With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys :  
 And when this arm of mine hath chastised  
 The petty rebel, dull-brain'd Buckingham,  
 Bound with triumphant garlands will I come,  
 And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed;  
 To whom I will retail my conquest won,  
 And she shall be sole victress, Cæsar's Cæsar.

*Q. Eliz.* What were I best to say? her father's bro  
 Would be her lord? Or shall I say, her uncle?  
 Or he that slew her brothers, and her uncles?  
 Under what title shall I woo for thee,  
 That God, the law, my honour, and her love,  
 Can make seem pleasing to her tender years?

*R. Rich.* Infer fair England's peace by this alliance

*Q. Eliz.* Which she shall purchase with still lastin

*R. Rich.* Tell her, the king, that may command

*Q. Eliz.* That at her hands, which the king's Kings

- R. Rich.* Say, she shall be a high and mighty queen.  
*Q. Eliz.* To wail the title, as her mother doth.  
*R. Rich.* Say, I will love her everlastingly.  
*Q. Eliz.* But how long shall that title, ever, last?  
*R. Rich.* Sweetly in force unto her fair life's end.  
*Q. Eliz.* But how long fairly shall her sweet life last?  
*R. Rich.* As long as heaven, and nature, lengthens it.  
*Q. Eliz.* As long as hell, and Richard, like of it.  
*R. Rich.* Say, I, her sovereign, am her subject low.  
*Q. Eliz.* But she, your subject, loaths such sovereignty.  
*R. Rich.* Be eloquent in my behalf to her.  
*Q. Eliz.* An honest tale speeds best, being plainly told.  
*R. Rich.* Then, plainly to her tell my loving tale.  
*Q. Eliz.* Plain, and not honest, is too harsh a style.  
*R. Rich.* Your reasons are too shallow and too quick.  
*Q. Eliz.* O, no, my reasons are too deep and dead; —  
 10 deep and dead, poor infants, in their graves.  
*R. Rich.* Harp not on that string, Madam; that is past.  
*Q. Eliz.* Harp on it still shall I, till heart-strings break.  
*R. Rich.* Now, by my George, my garter, and my crown, —  
*Q. Eliz.* Profan'd, dishonour'd, and the third usurp'd.  
*R. Rich.* I swear —  
*Q. Eliz.* By nothing; for this is no oath.  
 George, profan'd, hath lost his lordly honour;  
 garter, blemish'd, pawn'd his knightly virtue;  
 crown, usurp'd, disgrac'd his kingly glory.  
 something thou would'st swear to be believ'd,  
 far then by something that thou hast not wrong'd.  
*R. Rich.* Now by the world, —  
*Q. Eliz.* 'Tis full of thy foul wrongs.  
*R. Rich.* My father's death, —  
*Q. Eliz.* Thy life hath it dishonour'd.  
*R. Rich.* Then, by myself, —  
*Q. Eliz.* Thyself is self-mis-us'd.  
*R. Rich.* Why then, by God, —  
*Q. Eliz.* God's wrong is most of all.

If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
The unity, the king my husband made,  
Thou hadst not broken nor my brothers died.  
If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
The imperial metal, circling now thy head,  
Had grac'd the tender temples of my child;  
And both the princes had been breathing here,  
Which now, two tender bed-fellows for dust,  
Thy broken faith hath made the prey for worms.  
What canst thou swear by now?

*R. Rich.*

The time to come.

*Q. Eliz.* That thou hast wronged in the time o'er-past;  
For I myself have many tears to wash  
Hereafter time, for time past wrong'd by thee.  
The children live whose fathers thou hast slaughter'd,  
Ungovern'd youth, to wail it with their age:  
The parents live, whose children thou hast butcher'd,  
Old barren plants, to wail it with their age.  
Swear not by time to come; for that thou hast  
Misus'd ere us'd, by times ill-us'd o'er-past.

*R. Rich.* As I intend to prosper, and repent,  
So thrive I in my dangerous attempt  
Of hostile arms! myself myself confound!  
Heaven and fortune bar me happy hours!  
Day, yield me not thy light, nor, night, thy rest!  
Be opposite all planets of good luck  
To my proceeding, if, with pure heart's love,  
Immaculate devotion, holy thoughts,  
I tender not thy beauteous princely daughter!  
In her consists my happiness and thine;  
Without her, follows to myself, and thee,  
Herself, the land, and many a Christian soul,  
Death, desolation, ruin, and decay:  
It cannot be avoided, but by this;  
It will not be avoided, but by this.  
Therefore, dear mother, (I must call you so)  
*Be the attorney of my love to her.*

Plead what I will be, not what I have been ;

Not my deserts, but what I will deserve :

Urge the necessity and state of times ,

And be not peevish found in great designs.

*Q. Elis.* Shall I be tempted of the devil thus ?

*R. Rich.* Ay, if the devil tempt thee to do good.

*Q. Elis.* Shall I forget myself, to be myself ?

*R. Rich.* Ay, if your self's remembrance wrong yourself.

*Q. Elis.* Yet thou didst kill my children.

*R. Rich.* But in your daughter's womb I bury them :

Where, in that nest of spicery, they will breed

Selves of themselves, to your recomforture.

*Q. Elis.* Shall I go win my daughter to thy will ?

*R. Rich.* And be a happy mother by the deed.

*Q. Elis.* I go. — Write to me very shortly,

And you shall understand from me her mind.

*R. Rich.* Bear her my true love's kiss, and so farewell.

[*Kissing her.* *Exit Q. ELIZABETH.*

Relenting fool, and shallow, changing woman !

How now ! what news ?

*Enter RATCLIFF; CATESBY following.*

*Rat.* Most mighty sovereign, on the western coast

Rideth a puissant navy : to our shores

Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,

Unarm'd, and unresolv'd to beat them back.

'T is thought that Richmond is their admiral ;

And there they hull, expecting but the aid

Of Buckingham to welcome them ashore.

*R. Rich.* Some light-foot friend post to the duke of Norfolk : —

Ratcliff, thyself, — or Catesby ; where is he ?

*Cate.* Here, my good lord.

*R. Rich.* Catesby, fly to the duke.

*Cate.* I will, my lord, with all convenient haste.

*R. Rich.* Ratcliff, come hither. Post to Salisbury :

When thou com'st thither, — Dull, unmindful villain,

[*To CATESBY.*

*Why stay'st thou here, and go'st not to the duke ?*

*Cate.* First, mighty liege, tell me your highness' pleasure  
What from your grace I shall deliver to him.

*K. Rich.* O! true, good Catesby. — Bid him levy straight  
The greatest strength and power he can make,  
And meet me suddenly at Salisbury.

*Cate.* I go. [Exit]

*Rat.* What, may it please you, shall I do at Salisbury?

*K. Rich.* Why, what wouldst thou do there, before I go?

*Rat.* Your highness told me, I should post before.

*Enter STANLEY.*

*K. Rich.* My mind is chang'd. — Stanley, what news w  
you?

*Stan.* None good, my liege, to please you with the hearing  
Nor none so bad, but well may be reported.

*K. Rich.* Heyday, a riddle! neither good nor bad?  
What need'st thou run so many miles about,  
When thou may'st tell thy tale the nearest way?  
Once more, what news?

*Stan.* Richmond is on the seas.

*K. Rich.* There let him sink, and be the seas on him,  
White-liver'd runagate! what doth he there?

*Stan.* I know not, mighty sovereign, but by guess.

*K. Rich.* Well, as you guess?

*Stan.* Stirr'd up by Dorest, Buckingham, and Morton,  
He makes for England, here, to claim the crown.

*K. Rich.* Is the chair empty? is the sword unsway'd?  
Is the king dead? the empire unpossess'd?  
What heir of York is there alive, but we?  
And who is England's king, but great York's heir?  
Then, tell me, what makes he upon the seas?

*Stan.* Unless for that, my liege, I cannot guess.

*K. Rich.* Unless for that he comes to be your liege,  
You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman comes.  
*Thou wilt revolt, and fly to him, I fear.*

*Stan.* No, my good lord; therefore, mistrust me not.

*R. Rich.* Where is thy power, then, to beat him back?  
Where be thy tenants, and thy followers?  
Are they not now upon the western shore,  
Safe-conducting the rebels from their ships?

*Stan.* No, my good lord, my friends are in the north.

*R. Rich.* Cold friends to me: What do they in the north,  
When they should serve their sovereign in the west?

*Stan.* They have not been commanded, mighty king.  
Pleaseth your majesty to give me leave,  
I'll muster up my friends, and meet your grace,  
Where, and what time, your majesty shall please.

*R. Rich.* Ay, thou wouldst be gone to join with Richmond:  
But I'll not trust thee.

*Stan.* Most mighty sovereign,  
You have no cause to hold my friendship doubtful.  
I never was, nor never will be false.

*R. Rich.* Go, then, and muster men: but leave behind  
Your son, George Stanley. Look your heart be firm,  
Or else his head's assurance is but frail.

*Stan.* So deal with him, as I prove true to you.

[Exit STANLEY.]

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My gracious sovereign, now in Devonshire,  
As I by friends am well advertised,  
Sir Edward Courtney, and the haughty prelate,  
Bishop of Exeter, his elder brother,  
With many more confederates, are in arms.

*Enter another Messenger.*

*2 Mess.* In Kent, my liege, the Guildfords are in arms;  
And every hour more competitors  
Flock to the rebels, and their power grows strong.

*Enter a third Messenger.*

*3 Mess.* My lord, the army of great Buckingham—

*R. Rich.* Out on ye, owls! nothing but songs of death?

[He strikes him.]

*There, take thou that, till thou bring better news.*



**3 Mess.** The news I have to tell your majesty  
Is, that by sudden floods and fall of waters,  
Buckingham's army is dispers'd and scatter'd;  
And he himself wander'd away alone,  
No man knows whither.

**R. Rich.** I cry thee mercy :  
There is my purse, to cure that blow of thine.  
Hath any well-advised friend proclaim'd  
Reward to him that brings the traitor in ?

**3 Mess.** Such proclamation hath been made, my lord.

*Enter a fourth Messenger.*

**4 Mess.** Sir Thomas Lovel, and lord marquess Dorset,  
'T is said, my liege, in Yorkshire are in arms:  
But this good comfort bring I to your highness, —  
The Bretagne navy is dispers'd by tempest.  
Richmond, in Dorsetshire, sent out a boat  
Unto the shore, to ask those on the banks,  
If they were his assistants, yea, or no;  
Who answer'd him, they came from Buckingham  
Upon his party: he, mistrusting them,  
Hois'd sail, and made his course again for Bretagne.

**R. Rich.** March on, march on, since we are up in arms;  
If not to fight with foreign enemies,  
Yet to beat down these rebels here at home.

*Enter CATESBY.*

**Cate.** My liege, the duke of Buckingham is taken;  
That is the best news: that the earl of Richmond  
Is with a mighty power landed at Milford,  
Is colder news, but yet they must be told.

**R. Rich.** Away towards Salisbury! while we reason here,  
A royal battle might be won and lost. —  
Some one take order, Buckingham be brought  
To Salisbury: the rest march on with me.

## SCENE V.

A Room in Lord STANLEY's House.

*Enter STANLEY and Sir CHRISTOPHER URSWICK.*

*Stan.* Sir Christopher, tell Richmond this from me —  
 That, in the sty of the most bloody boar,  
 My son George Stanley is frank'd up in hold:  
 If I revolt, off goes young George's head  
 The fear of that holds off my present aid.  
 So, get thee gone: commend me to thy lord.  
 Withal, say that the queen hath heartily consented,  
 He should espouse Elizabeth her daughter.  
 But, tell me, where is princely Richmond now?

*Chris.* At Pembroke, or at Ha'rford-west, in Wales.

*Stan.* What men of name resort to him?

*Chris.* Sir Walter Herbert, a renowned soldier,  
 Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir William Stanley;  
 Oxford, redoubted Pembroke, Sir James Blunt,  
 And Rice ap Thomas, with a valiant crew;  
 And many other of great name and worth:  
 And towards London do they bend their power,  
 If by the way they be not fought withal.

*Stan.* Well, hie thee to thy lord; I kiss his hand  
 My letter will resolve him of my mind.  
 Farewell.

*[Giving Papers to Sir CHRISTOPHER.*

*[Exeunt.*

## ACT V. SCENE I.

Salisbury. An open Place.

*Enter the Sheriff, and Guard, with BUCKINGHAM, led to Execution.*

*Buck.* Will not king Richard let me speak with him?

*Sher.* No, my good lord; therefore, be patient.

*Buck.* Hastings, and Edward's children, Grey, and Rivers,  
 Holy king *Henry*, and thy fair son Edward,  
*Loughan*, and all that have miscarried

By underhand corrupted foul injustice,  
 If that your moody discontented souls  
 Do through the clouds behold this present hour,  
 Even for revenge mock my destruction! —  
 This is All-Souls' day, fellow, is it not?

*Sher.* It is.

*Buck.* Why, then All-Souls' day is my body's dooms-day.  
 This is the day, which, in king Edward's time,  
 I wish'd might fall on me, when I was found  
 False to his children, or his wife's allies:  
 This is the day, wherein I wish'd to fall  
 By the false faith of him whom most I trusted;  
 This, this All-Souls' day to my fearful soul  
 Is the determin'd respite of my wrongs.  
 That high All-Seer, which I dallied with,  
 Hath turn'd my feigned prayer on my head,  
 And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest.  
 Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men  
 To turn their own points in their masters' bosoms:  
 Thus Margaret's curse falls heavy on my neck: —  
 "When he," quoth she, "shall split thy heart with sorrow,  
 Remember Margaret was a prophetess." —  
 Come, lead me, officers, to the block of shame;  
 Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of blame.

[*Exeunt BUCKINGHAM and Officer*]

## SCENE II.

A Plain near Tamworth.

*Enter, with Drum and Colours, RICHMOND, OXFORD, S.  
 JAMES BLUNT, Sir WALTER HERBERT, and Others, with  
 Forces, marching.*

*Richm.* Fellows in arms, and my most loving friends,  
 Bruis'd underneath the yoke of tyranny,  
 Thus far into the bowels of the land  
 Have we march'd on without impediment;  
 And here receive we from our father Stanley

lines of fair comfort and encouragement.  
 The wretched, bloody, and usurping boar,  
 That spoil'd your summer fields, and fruitful vines,  
 Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes his trough  
 In your embowell'd bosoms, this foul swine  
 Is now even in the centre of this isle,  
 Near to the town of Leicester, as we learn:  
 From Tamworth thither, is but one day's march.  
 In God's name, cheerly on, courageous friends,  
 To reap the harvest of perpetual peace  
 By this one bloody trial of sharp war.

*Oxf.* Every man's conscience is a thousand men,  
 To fight against this guilty homicide.

*Herb.* I doubt not, but his friends will turn to us.

*Blunt.* He hath no friends, but what are friends for fear,  
 Which in his dearest need will fly from him.

*Richm.* All for our vantage: then, in God's name, march.  
 True hope is swift, and flies with swallow's wings,  
 Kings it makes gods, and meaner creatures kings. [Exeunt.

## SCENE III.

Bosworth Field.

*Enter King RICHARD, and Forces; the Duke of NORFOLK, Earl of SURREY, and Others.*

*R. Rich.* Here pitch our tent, even here in Bosworth field. —  
 My lord of Surrey, why look you so sad?

*Sur.* My heart is ten times lighter than my looks.

*R. Rich.* My lord of Norfolk, —

*Nor.* Here, most gracious liege.

*R. Rich.* Norfolk, we must have knocks; ha! must we not?

*Nor.* We must both give and take, my loving lord.

*R. Rich.* Up with my tent! here will I lie to-night;

[Soldiers begin to set up the King's Tent.

But where to-morrow? — Well, all's one for that. —

Who hath descried the number of the traitors?

*Nor.* Six or seven thousand is their utmost power.

*K. Rich.* Why, our battalia trebles that account :  
 Besides, the king's name is a tower of strength,  
 Which they upon the adverse faction want.  
 Up with the tent! — Come, noble gentlemen,  
 Let us survey the vantage of the ground. —  
 Call for some men of sound direction. —  
 Let's lack no discipline, make no delay,  
 For, lords, to-morrow is a busy day.

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter, on the other side of the Field, RICHMOND, Sir WILLIAM BRANDON, OXFORD, and other Officers. Some of the Soldiers pitch RICHMOND's Tent.*

*Richm.* The weary sun hath made a golden set,  
 And by the bright track of his fiery car,  
 Gives token of a goodly day to-morrow. —  
 Sir William Brandon, you shall bear my standard. —  
 Give me some ink and paper in my tent:  
 I'll draw the form and model of our battle,  
 Limit each leader to his several charge,  
 And part in just proportion our small power.  
 My lord of Oxford, — you, Sir William Brandon, —  
 And you, Sir Walter Herbert, stay with me.  
 The earl of Pembroke keeps his regiment:  
 Good captain Blunt, bear my good night to him,  
 And by the second hour in the morning  
 Desire the earl to see me in my tent: —  
 Yet one thing more, good captain, do for me;  
 Where is lord Stanley quarter'd, do you know?

*Blunt.* Unless I have mista'en his colours much,  
 (Which, well I am assur'd, I have not done)  
 His regiment lies half a mile, at least,  
 South from the mighty power of the king.

*Richm.* If without peril it be possible,  
 Sweet Blunt, make some good means to speak with him,  
 And give him from me this most needful note.

*Blunt.* Upon my life, my lord, I'll undertake it:  
 And so, God give you quiet rest to-night!

*Richm.* Good night, good captain Blunt. Come, gentlemen,  
Let us consult upon to-morrow's business!  
In to my tent, the dew is raw and cold.

*[They withdraw into the Tent.]*

*Enter, to his Tent, King RICHARD, NORFOLK, RATCLIFF, and  
CATESBY.*

*K. Rich.* What is 't o'clock?

*Cate.* It's supper time, my lord; it's nine o'clock.

*K. Rich.* I will not sup to-night. —

Give me some ink and paper. —

What, is my beaver easier than it was,

And all my armour laid into my tent?

*Cate.* It is, my liege; and all things are in readiness.

*K. Rich.* Good Norfolk, hie thee to thy charge.

Use careful watch; choose trusty sentinels.

*Nor.* I go, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle Norfolk.

*Nor.* I warrant you, my lord.

*[Exit.]*

*K. Rich.* Ratcliff!

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* Send out a pursuivant at arms

To Stanley's regiment: bid him bring his power

Before sun-rising, lest his son George fall

Into the blind cave of eternal night. —

Fill me a bowl of wine. — Give me a watch:

Saddle white Surrey for the field to-morrow. —

Look that my staves be sound, and not too heavy.

Ratcliff! —

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* Saw'st thou the melancholy lord Northumber-  
land?

*Rat.* Thomas the earl of Surrey, and himself,

Much about cock-shut time, from troop to troop

Went through the army, cheering up the soldiers.

*K. Rich.* So: I am satisfied. Give me a bowl of wine:  
*I have not that alacrity of spirit,*

Nor cheer of mind, that I was wont to have. —  
Set it down. — Is ink and paper ready?

*Rat.* It is, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Bid my guard watch. Leave me.  
Ratcliff, about the mid of night, come to my tent  
And help to arm me. — Leave me, I say.

[*King RICHARD retires into his Tent. Exit RAT-  
CLIFF and CATESBY.*]

*RICHMOND'S Tent opens, and discovers him and his Officers, &c.*

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Fortune and victory sit on thy helm!

*Richm.* All comfort that the dark night can afford,  
Be to thy person, noble father-in-law!  
Tell me, how fares our loving mother?

*Stan.* I, by attorney, bless thee from thy mother,  
Who prays continually for Richmond's good:  
So much for that. — The silent hours steal on,  
And flaky darkness breaks within the east.  
In brief, for so the season bids us be,  
Prepare thy battle early in the morning;  
And put thy fortune to the arbitrement  
Of bloody strokes, and mortal-staring war.  
I, as I may, (that which I would I cannot)  
With best advantage will deceive the time,  
And aid thee in this doubtful shock of arms:  
But on thy side I may not be too forward,  
Lest, being seen, thy brother, tender George,  
Be executed in his father's sight.

*Farewell.* The leisure and the fearful time  
Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love,  
And ample interchange of sweet discourse,  
Which so long sunder'd friends should dwell upon.  
God give us leisure for these rites of love!  
Once more, adieu. — Be valiant, and speed well!

*Richm.* Good lords, conduct him to his regiment.

I'll strive, with troubled thoughts, to take a nap;  
 Lest leaden slumber peise me down to-morrow,  
 When I should mount with wings of victory.  
 Once more, good night, kind lords, and gentlemen.

[*Exeunt Lords, &c. with STANLEY.*]

O! Thou, whose captain I account myself,  
 Look on my forces with a gracious eye;  
 Put in their hands thy bruising irons of wrath,  
 That they may crush down with a heavy fall  
 Th' usurping helmets of our adversaries!  
 Make us thy ministers of chastisement,  
 That we may praise thee in thy victory!  
 To thee I do commend my watchful soul,  
 Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes:  
 Sleeping, and waking, O! defend me still!

[*Sleeps.*]

*The Ghost of Prince EDWARD, Son to HENRY the Sixth, rises  
 between the two Tents.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!

[*To King RICHARD.*]

Think, how thou stab'dst me in my prime of youth  
 At Tewksbury: despair, therefore, and die. —  
 Be cheerful, Richmond; for the wronged souls  
 Of butcher'd princes fight in thy behalf:  
 King Henry's issue, Richmond, comforts thee.

*The Ghost of King HENRY the Sixth rises.*

*Ghost.* When I was mortal, my anointed body

[*To King RICHARD.*]

By thee was punched full of deadly holes.  
 Think on the Tower, and me: despair and die;  
 Harry the sixth bids thee despair and die. —

Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror!

[*To RICHMOND.*]

Harry that prophesy'd thou should'st be king,  
 Doth comfort thee in sleep: live, and flourish.

*The Ghost of CLARENCE rises.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!

[*To King RICHARD*]



I, that was wash'd to death with fulsome wine,  
 Poor Clarence, by thy guile betray'd to death!  
 To-morrow in the battle think on me,  
 And fall thy edgeless sword. Despair, and die.

Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster, [To RICHMO  
 The wronged heirs of York do pray for thee;  
 Good angels guard thy battle! Live and flourish.

*The Ghosts of RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN, rise.*

*Riv.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow.

[To King RICHARD

Rivers, that died at Pomfret. Despair, and die.

*Grey.* Think upon Grey, and let thy soul despair.

[To King RICHARD

*Vaugh.* Think upon Vaughan, and with guilty fear  
 Let fall thy lance. Despair, and die. — [To King RICHARD

*All.* Awake! and think our wrongs in Richard's bosom

[To RICHMOND

Will conquer him. — Awake, and win the day!

*The Ghost of HASTINGS rises.*

*Ghost.* Bloody and guilty, guiltily awake;

[To King RICHARD

And in a bloody battle end thy days.

Think on lord Hastings. Despair, and die. —

Quiet untroubled soul, awake, awake! [To RICHMOND  
 Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair England's sake.

*The Ghosts of the two young Princes rise.*

*Ghosts.* Dream on thy cousins smother'd in the Tower:  
 Let us be lead within thy bosom, Richard,  
 And weigh thee down to ruin, shame, and death.  
 Thy nephews' souls bid thee despair, and die. —

Sleep, Richmond, sleep in peace, and wake in joy;  
 Good angels guard thee from the boar's annoy!  
 Live, and beget a happy race of kings.

Edward's unhappy sons do bid thee flourish.

*The Ghost of Queen ANNE rises.*

*Ghost.* Richard, thy wife, that wretched Anne thy wife,  
That never slept a quiet hour with thee,  
Now fills thy sleep with perturbations:  
To-morrow in the battle think on me,  
And fall thy edgeless sword. Despair, and die. —  
Thou, quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep; [To RICHMOND.  
Dream of success and happy victory:  
Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee.

*The Ghost of BUCKINGHAM rises.*

*Ghost.* The first was I that help'd thee to the crown;  
[To King RICHARD.

The last was I that felt thy tyranny.  
O! in the battle think on Buckingham,  
And die in terror of thy guiltiness.  
Dream on, dream on, of bloody deeds and death:  
Fainting, despair; despairing, yield thy breath. —  
I died for hope ere I could lend thee aid: [To RICHMOND.  
But cheer thy heart, and be thou not dismay'd:  
God, and good angels fight on Richmond's side;  
And Richard fall in height of all his pride.

[The Ghosts vanish. King RICHARD starts out of his dream.

*R. Rich.* Give me another horse! — bind up my wounds! —  
Have mercy, Jesu! — Soft! I did but dream. —  
O, coward conscience, how dost thou afflict me! —  
The lights burn blue. — It is now dead midnight.  
Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh.  
What do I fear? myself? there's none else by:  
Richard loves Richard; that is, I am I.  
Is there a murderer here? No; — yes; I am:  
Then fly, — What, from myself? Great reason: why?  
Lest I revenge. What! Myself upon myself?  
Alack! I love myself. Wherefore? for any good,  
That I myself have done unto myself?  
O! no: alas! I rather hate myself,  
IV.

For hateful deeds committed by myself.  
I am a villain. Yet I lie; I am not.  
Fool, of thyself speak well: — Fool, do not flatter.  
My conscience hath a thousand several tongues,  
And every tongue brings in a several tale,  
And every tale condemns me for a villain.  
Perjury, perjury, in the high'st degree;  
Murder, stern murder, in the dir'st degree;  
All several sins, all us'd in each degree,  
Throng to the bar, crying all, — Guilty! guilty!  
I shall despair. — There is no creature loves me;  
And if I die, no soul shall pity me: —  
Nay, wherefore should they? since that I myself  
Find in myself no pity to myself.  
Methought, the souls of all that I had murder'd  
Came to my tent; and every one did threat  
To-morrow's vengeance on the head of Richard.

*Enter RATCLIFF.*

*Rat.* My lord, —

*K. Rich.* Who 's there?

*Rat.* Ratcliff, my lord; 't is I. The early village cock  
Hath twice done salutation to the morn:  
Your friends are up, and buckle on their armour.

*K. Rich.* O Ratcliff! I have dream'd a fearful dream. —  
What thinkest thou? will our friends prove all true?

*Rat.* No doubt, my lord.

*K. Rich.* O Ratcliff! I fear, I fear, —

*Rat.* Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of shadows.

*K. Rich.* By the apostle Paul, shadows to-night  
Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard,  
Than can the substance of ten thousand soldiers,  
Armed in proof, and led by shallow Richmond.  
It is not yet near day. Come, go with me:  
Under our tents I'll play the eaves-dropper,  
To hear if any mean to shrink from me.

*[Exit King RICHARD and RATCLIFF.]*

*Enter OXFORD and Others.*

*Lords.* Good morrow, Richmond.

*Richm.* Cry mercy, lords, [*Waking.*] and watchful gentlemen,  
That you have ta'en a tardy sluggard here.

*Lords.* How have you slept, my lord?

*Richm.* The sweetest sleep, and fairest-boding dreams,  
That ever enter'd in a drowsy head,

Have I since your departure had, my lords.

Methought, their souls, whose bodies Richard murder'd,

Came to my tent, and cried — On! victory!

I promise you, my heart is very jocund

In the remembrance of so fair a dream.

How far into the morning is it, lords?

*Lords.* Upon the stroke of four.

*Richm.* Why, then 't is time to arm, and give direction. —

*[He advances to the Troops.]*

More than I have said, loving countrymen,

The leisure and enforcement of the time

Forbids to dwell on: yet remember this, —

God and our good cause fight upon our side;

ok The prayers of holy saints, and wronged souls,  
Like high-rear'd bulwarks, stand before our faces.

Richard except, those whom we fight against

Had rather have us win, than him they follow.

— For what is he they follow? truly, gentlemen,

A bloody tyrant, and a homicide;

One rais'd in blood, and one in blood establish'd;

One that made means to come by what he hath,

And slaughter'd those that were the means to help him;

A base foul stone, made precious by the foil

Of England's chair, where he is falsely set;

One that hath ever been God's enemy.

Then, if you fight against God's enemy,

God will, in justice, ward you as his soldiers

If you do sweat to put a tyrant down,

You sleep in peace, the tyrant being slain;

177. *If you do fight against your country's foes,*

Your country's fat shall pay your pains the hire;  
 If you do fight in safeguard of your wives,  
 Your wives shall welcome home the conquerors;  
 If you do free your children from the sword,  
 Your children's children quit it in your age.  
 Then, in the name of God, and all these rights,  
 Advance your standards, draw your willing swords.  
 For me, the ransom of my bold attempt  
 Shall be this cold corpse on the earth's cold face;  
 But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt,  
 The least of you shall share his part thereof.  
 Sound, drums and trumpets, boldly and cheerfully;  
 God, and Saint George! Richmond, and victory!

*Re-enter King RICHARD; RATCLIFF, Attendants, and*

*R. Rich.* What said Northumberland, as touching R  
*Rat.* That he was never trained up in arms.

*R. Rich.* He said the truth: and what said Surrey t

*Rat.* He smil'd and said, the better for our purpos

*R. Rich.* He was i' the right; and so, indeed, it is  
 [Clo

Tell the clock there. — Give me a calendar. —

Who saw the sun to-day?

*Rat.* Not I, my lord.

*R. Rich.* Then he disdains to shine; for, by the be  
 He should have brav'd the east an hour ago:

A black day will it be to somebody. —

*Ratcliff,* —

*Rat.* My lord?

*R. Rich.* The sun will not be seen to-day:

The sky doth frown and lour upon our army.

I would, these dewy tears were from the ground.

Not shine to-day! Why, what is that to me,

More than to Richmond? for the self-same heaven,

That frowns on me, looks sadly upon him.

*Enter NORFOLK.*

*Nor.* Arm, arm, my lord! the foe vaunts in the f

*R. Rich.* Come, bustle, bustle. — Caparison my horse. —  
 Call up lord Stanley, bid him bring his power.  
 I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain,  
 And thus my battle shall be ordered.  
 My foreward shall be drawn out all in length,  
 Consisting equally of horse and foot:  
 Our archers shall be placed in the midst.  
 John duke of Norfolk, Thomas earl of Surrey,  
 Shall have the leading of the foot and horse.  
 They thus directed, we will follow  
 In the main battle; whose puissance on either side  
 Shall be well winged with our chiefest horse.

*His*, and Saint George to boot! — What think'st thou, Norfolk?

*Nor.* A good direction, warlike sovereign. —

*His* found I on my tent this morning. [Giving a Scroll.]

*R. Rich.* "Jocky of Norfolk, be not too bold, [Reads.]  
 For Dickon thy master is bought and sold."

A thing devised by the enemy. —  
 Go, gentlemen; every man to his charge.  
 Let not our babbling dreams affright our souls;  
 For conscience is a word that cowards use,  
 Devis'd at first to keep the strong in awe:  
 Our strong arms be our conscience, swords our law.  
 March on, join bravely, let us to 't pell-mell;  
 If not to heaven, then hand in hand to hell. —  
 What shall I say more than I have inferr'd?  
 Remember whom you are to cope withal; —  
 A sort of vagabonds, rascals, and run-aways,  
 A scum of Breagnes, and base lackey peasants,  
 Whom their o'er-cloyed country vomits forth  
 To desperate adventures and assur'd destruction.  
 You sleeping safe, they bring you to unrest;  
 You having lands, and bless'd with beauteous wives,  
 They would restrain the one, distain the other.  
 And who doth lead them, but a paltry fellow,  
 Long kept in Bretagne at our mother's cost;  
 A milk-sop, one that never in his life

Felt so much cold as over shoes in snow?  
 Let 's whip these stragglers o'er the seas again;  
 Lash hence these over-weening rags of France,  
 These famish'd beggars, weary of their lives;  
 Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit,  
 For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd themselves.  
 If we be conquer'd, let men conquer us,  
 And not these bastard Bretnagnes; whom our fathers  
 Have in their own land beaten, bob'd, and thump'd,  
 And, on record, left them the heirs of shame.  
 Shall these enjoy our lands? lie with our wives?  
 Ravish our daughters? — Hark, I hear their drum.

[*Drum afar*

Fight, gentlemen of England! fight, bold yeomen!  
 Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head;  
 Spur your proud horses hard, and ride in blood:  
 Amaze the welkin with your broken staves!

*Enter a Messenger.*

What says lord Stanley? will he bring his power?

*Mess.* My lord, he doth deny to come.

*R. Rich.* Off with his son George's head.

*Nor.* My lord, the enemy is pass'd the marsh:

After the battle let George Stanley die.

*R. Rich.* A thousand hearts are great within my bosom.

Advance our standards! set upon our foes!

Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint George,

Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons!

Upon them! Victory sits on our helms.

[*Exeunt*

## SCENE IV.

Another Part of the Field.

*Alarum: Excursions. Enter NORFOLK, and Forces; to him*

CATEBY.

*Cate.* Rescue, my lord of Norfolk! rescue, rescue!

*The king enacts more wonders than a man,*

Daring an opposite to every danger.  
 His horse is slain, and all on foot he fights,  
 Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death.  
 Rescue, fair lord, or else the day is lost!

*Alarum. Enter King RICHARD.*

*R. Rich.* A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!

*Cate.* Withdraw, my lord; I'll help you to a horse.

*R. Rich.* Slave! I have set my life upon a cast,  
 And I will stand the hazard of the die.

I think there be six Richmonds in the field;

Five have I slain to-day, instead of him. —

*Alarum.* A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!

[*Exeunt.*]

*Alarums. Enter King RICHARD and RICHMOND; and exeunt, fighting. Retreat and flourish. Then enter RICHMOND, STANLEY bearing the Crown, with divers other Lords, and Forces.*

*Richm.* God, and your arms, be prais'd, victorious friends,  
 The day is ours, the bloody dog is dead.

*Stan.* Courageous Richmond, well hast thou acquit thee.

Lo! here, this long-usurped royalty,  
 From the dead temples of this bloody wretch  
 Have I pluck'd off, to grace thy brows withal;  
 Wear it, enjoy it, and make much of it.

*Richm.* Great God of heaven, say, amen, to all! —  
 But, tell me, is young George Stanley living?

*Stan.* He is, my lord, and safe in Leicester town;  
 Whither, if you please, we may withdraw us.

*Richm.* What men of name are slain on either side?

*Stan.* John duke of Norfolk, Walter lord Ferrers,  
 Sir Robert Brakenbury, and Sir William Brandon.

*Richm.* Inter their bodies as becomes their births.  
 Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled,

That in submission will return to us;  
 And then, as we have ta'en the sacrament,  
 We will unite the white rose and the red: —

*Smile heaven upon this fair conjunction,*



That long hath frown'd upon their enmity! —  
What traitor hears me, and says not, amen?  
England hath long been mad, and scarr'd herself;  
The brother blindly shed the brother's blood,  
The father rashly slaughter'd his own son,  
The son, compell'd, been butcher to the sire;  
All this divided York and Lancaster  
Divided in their dire division. —  
O! now, let Richmond and Elizabeth,  
The true succeeders of each royal house,  
By God's fair ordinance conjoin together!  
And let their heirs, (God, if thy will be so)  
Enrich the time to come with smooth-fac'd peace,  
With smiling plenty, and fair prosperous days!  
Abate the edge of traitors, gracious Lord,  
That would reduce these bloody days again,  
And make poor England weep in streams of blood!  
Let them not live to taste this land's increase,  
That would with treason wound this fair land's peace!  
Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives again:  
That she may long live here, God say amen!

[*Ex.*

---



## P R O L O G U E.

I COME no more to make you laugh: things now,  
That bear a weighty and a serious brow,  
Sad, high, and working, full of state and woe,  
Such noble scenes as draw the eye to flow,  
We now present. Those that can pity, here  
May, if they think it well, let fall a tear;  
The subject will deserve it: such, as give  
Their money out of hope they may believe,  
May here find truth too: those, that come to see  
Only a show or two, and so agree  
The play may pass, if they be still and willing,  
I'll undertake, may see away their shilling  
Richly in two short hours. Only they,  
That come to hear a merry, bawdy play,  
A noise of targetts, or to see a fellow  
In a long motley coat, guarded with yellow,  
Will be deceiv'd; for, gentle hearers, know,  
To rank our chosen truth with such a show  
As fool and fight is, beside forfeiting  
Our own brains, and the opinion that we bring,  
To make that only true we now intend,  
Will leave us never an understanding friend.  
Therefore, for goodness' sake, and as you are known,  
The first and happiest hearers of the town,  
Be sad as we would make ye: think, ye see  
The very persons of our noble story,  
As they were living; think, you see them great,  
And follow'd with the general throng, and sweat  
Of thousand friends; then, in a moment, see  
How soon this mightiness meets misery:  
And, if you can be merry then, I'll say,  
A man may weep upon his wedding day.

---

## ACT I. SCENE I.

London. An Ante-chamber in the Palace.

*Enter the Duke of NORFOLK, at one door; at the other, the Duke of BUCKINGHAM, and the Lord ABERGAVENNY.*

**Buck.** Good morrow, and well met. How have you done, Since last we saw in France?

**Nor.** I thank your grace,  
Healthful; and ever since a fresh admirer  
Of what I saw there.

**Buck.** An untimely ague  
Stay'd me a prisoner in my chamber, when  
Those suns of glory, those two lights of men,  
Met in the vale of Andren.

**Nor.** 'Twixt Guynes and Arde:  
I was then present, saw them salute on horseback;  
Beheld them, when they lighted, how they clung  
In their embracement, as they grew together;  
Which had they, what four thron'd ones could have weigh'd  
Such a compounded one?

**Buck.** All the whole time  
I was my chamber's prisoner.

**Nor.** Then you lost  
The view of earthly glory: men might say,  
Till this time, pomp was single; but now married  
To one above itself. Each following day  
Became the next day's master, till the last  
Made former wonders it's: to-day the French  
All clinquant, all in gold, like heathen gods,  
Shone down the English; and to-morrow they  
Made Britain, India: every man that stood  
Shew'd like a mine. Their dwarfish pages were  
As cherubins, all gilt: the madams, too,  
Not us'd to toil, did almost sweet to bear  
The pride upon them, that their very labour  
Was to them as a painting: now this mask

Was cried incomparable; and the ensuing night  
 Made it a fool, and beggar. The two kings,  
 Equal in lustre, were now best, now worst,  
 As presence did present them; him in eye,  
 Still him in praise; and, being present both,  
 'T was said, they saw but one: and no discernor  
 Durst wag his tongue in censure. When these suns  
 (For so they phrase 'em) by their heralds challeng'd  
 The noble spirits to arms, they did perform  
 Beyond thought's compass; that former fabulous story,  
 Being now seen possible enough, got credit,  
 That Bevis was believ'd.

*Buck.* O! you go far.

*Nor.* As I belong to worship, and affect  
 In honour honesty, the tract of every thing  
 Would by a good discourser lose some life,  
 Which action's self was tongue to. All was royal:  
 To the disposing of it nought rebell'd;  
 Order gave each thing view; the office did  
 Distinctly his full function.

*Buck.* Who did guide,  
 I mean, who set the body and the limbs  
 Of this great sport together, as you guess?

*Nor.* One, certes, that promises no element  
 In such a business.

*Buck.* I pray you, who, my lord?

*Nor.* All this was order'd by the good discretion  
 Of the right reverend cardinal of York.

*Buck.* The devil speed him! no man's pie is freed  
 From his ambitious finger. What had he  
 To do in these fierce vanities? I wonder,  
 That such a keech can, with his very bulk,  
 Take up the rays o' the beneficial sun,  
 And keep it from the earth.

*Nor.* Surely, Sir,  
 There's in him stuff that puts him to these ends;  
*For, being not propp'd by ancestry, whose grace*

Chalks successors their way, nor call'd upon  
 For high feats done to the crown; neither allied  
 To eminent assistants, but, spider-like,  
 Out of his self-drawing web, he gives us note,  
 The force of his own merit makes his way;  
 A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys  
 A place next to the king.

*Aber.*

I cannot tell

What heaven hath given him: let some graver eye  
 Pierce into that; but I can see his pride  
 Peep through each part of him: whence has he that?  
 If not from hell, the devil is a niggard;  
 Or has given all before, and he begins  
 A new hell in himself.

*Buck.*

Why the devil,

Upon this French going-out, took he upon him,  
 (Without the privy o' the king) t' appoint  
 Who should attend on him? He makes up the file  
 Of all the gentry; for the most part such  
 Too, whom as great a charge as little honour  
 He meant to lay upon: and his own letter,  
 The honourable board of council out,  
 Must fetch him in he papers.

*Aber.*

I do know

Kinsmen of mine, three at the least, that have  
 By this so sicken'd their estates, that never  
 They shall abound as formerly.

*Buck.*

O! many

Have broke their backs, with laying manors on them  
 For this great journey. What did this vanity,  
 But minister communication of  
 A most poor issue?

*Nor.*

Grievingly I think,

The peace between the French and us not values  
 The cost that did conclude it.

*Buck.*

Every man,

After the hideous storm that follow'd, was

A thing inspir'd; and, not consulting, broke  
 Into a general prophecy, — that this tempest,  
 Dashing the garment of this peace, aboded  
 The sudden breach on 't.

*Nor.* Which is budded out;  
 For France hath flaw'd the league, and hath attach'd  
 Our merchants' goods at Bourdeaux.

*Aber.* Is it therefore  
 Th' ambassador is silenc'd?

*Nor.* Marry, is 't.

*Aber.* A proper title of a peace, and purchas'd  
 At a superfluous rate.

*Buck.* Why, all this business  
 Our reverend cardinal carried.

*Nor.* 'Like it your grace,  
 The state takes notice of the private difference  
 Betwixt you and the cardinal. I advise you,  
 (And take it from a heart that wishes towards you  
 Honour and plenteous safety) that you read  
 The cardinal's malice and his potency  
 Together: to consider farther, that  
 What his high hatred would effect wants not  
 A minister in his power. You know his nature,  
 That he's revengeful; and, I know, his sword  
 Hath a sharp edge: it's long, and 't may be said,  
 It reaches far; and where 't will not extend,  
 Thither he darts it. Bosom up my counsel;  
 You'll find it wholesome. Lo! where comes that rock,  
 That I advise your shunning.

*Enter Cardinal WOLSEY, (the Purse borne before him,) ce.  
 of the Guard, and two Secretaries with Papers. The  
 dinal in his passage fixeth his eye on BUCKINGHAM,  
 BUCKINGHAM on him, both full of disdain.*

*Wol.* The duke of Buckingham's surveyor? ha!  
 Where's his examination?

*1 Secr.*

Here, so please you.

*Wol.* Is he in person ready?

*1 Secr.*

Ay, please your grace.

*Wol.* Well, we shall then know more; and Buckingham  
Shall lessen this big look. [Exeunt WOLSEY, and Train.

*Buck.* This butcher's cur is venom-mouth'd, and I  
Have not the power to muzzle him; therefore, best  
Not wake him in his slumber. A beggar's book  
Out-worths a noble's blood.

*Nor.*

What! are you chaf'd?

Ask God for temperance; that's th' appliance only,  
Which your disease requires.

*Buck.*

I read in 's looks

Matter against me; and his eye revil'd

Me, as his abject object: at this instant

He bores me with some trick. He's gone t' the king:

I'll follow, and out-stare him.

*Nor.*

Stay, my lord,

And let your reason with your choler question

What 't is you go about. To climb steep hills,

Requires slow pace at first: anger is like

A full-hot horse, who being allow'd his way,

Self-mettle tires him. Not a man in England

Can advise me like you: be to yourself,

As you would to your friend.

*Buck.*

I'll to the king;

And from a mouth of honour quite cry down

This Ipswich fellow's insolence, or proclaim

There's difference in no persons.

*Nor.*

Be advis'd;

Heat not a furnace for your foe so hot

That it do singe yourself: we may outrun

By violent swiftness that which we run at,

And lose by over-running. Know you not,

The fire, that mounts the liquor till 't run o'er,

In seeming to augment it wastes it? Be advis'd:

I say again, there is no English soul

More *stronger to direct you than yourself,*



If with the sap of reason you would quench,  
Or but allay, the fire of passion.

*Buck.* Sir,  
I am thankful to you, and I 'll go along  
By your prescription; but this top-proud fellow,  
Whom from the flow of gall I name not, but  
From sincere motions, by intelligence,  
And proofs as clear as founts in July, when  
We see each grain of gravel, I do know  
To be corrupt and treasonous.

*Nor.* Say not, treasonous.

*Buck.* To the king I 'll say 't, and make my vouch as st  
As shore of rock. Attend. This holy fox,  
Or wolf, or both, (for he is equal ravenous,  
As he is subtle, and as prone to mischief,  
As able to perform 't, his mind and place  
Infecting one another, yea, reciprocally)  
Only to show his pomp, as well in France  
As here at home, suggests the king, our master,  
To this last costly treaty, th' interview,  
That swallow'd so much treasure, and like a glass  
Did break i' the rising.

*Nor.* Faith, and so it did.

*Buck.* Pray, give me favour, Sir. This cunning car  
The articles o' the combination drew,  
As himself pleas'd; and they were ratified,  
As he cried, "Thus let be," to as much end,  
As give a crutch t' the dead. But our count-cardinal  
Has done this, and 't is well; for worthy Wolsey,  
Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows,  
(Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy  
To the old dam, treason) Charles the emperor,  
Under pretence to see the queen, his aunt,  
(For 't was, indeed, his colour, but he came  
To whisper Wolsey) here makes visitation:  
His fears were, that the interview betwixt  
*England and France*, might, through their amity,

Breed him some prejudice; for from this league,  
 Peep'd harms that menac'd him. He privily  
 Deals with our cardinal, and, as I trow,  
 Which I do well; for, I am sure, the emperor  
 Paid ere he promis'd, whereby his suit was granted,  
 Ere it was ask'd: but when the way was made,  
 And pay'd with gold, the emperor thus desir'd: —  
 That he would please to alter the king's course,  
 And break the foresaid peace. Let the king know,  
 (As soon he shall by me) that thus the cardinal  
 Does buy and sell his honour as he pleases,  
 And for his own advantage.

*Nor.* I am sorry  
 To hear this of him; and could wish he were  
 Something mistaken in 't.

*Buck.* No, not a syllable:  
 I do pronounce him in that very shape,  
 He shall appear in proof.

*Enter BRANDON; a Sergeant at Arms before him, and two or three of the Guard.*

*Bran.* Your office, sergeant; execute it.

*Serg.* Sir,

My lord the duke of Buckingham, and earl  
 Of Hereford, Stafford, and Northampton, I  
 Arrest thee of high treason, in the name  
 Of our most sovereign king.

*Buck.* Lo, you, my lord!  
 The net has fall'n upon me: I shall perish  
 Under device and practice.

*Bran.* I am sorry  
 To see you ta'en from liberty, to look on  
 The business present. 'Tis his highness' pleasure,  
 You shall to the Tower.

*Buck.* It will help me nothing,  
 To plead mine innocence; for that die is on me,  
 Which makes my whit'st part black. The will of heaven

IV.

Be done in this and all things. — I obey. —  
O! my lord Abergavenny, fare you well.

*Bran.* Nay, he must bear you company. — The king  
[To ABERGAVENNY.]

Is pleas'd you shall to the Tower, till you know  
How he determines farther.

*Aber.* As the duke said,  
The will of heaven be done, and the king's pleasure  
By me obey'd.

*Bran.* Here is a warrant from  
The king t' attach lord Montacute; and the bodies  
Of the duke's confessor, John de la Car,  
One Gilbert Peck, his chancellor, —

*Buck.* So, so;  
These are the limbs o' the plot. No more, I hope.

*Bran.* A monk o' the Chartreux.

*Buck.* O! Nicholas Hopkins?

*Bran.* He.

*Buck.* My surveyor is false: the o'er-great cardinal  
Hath show'd him gold. My life is spann'd already:  
I am the shadow of poor Buckingham,  
Whose figure even this instant cloud puts on,  
By darkening my clear sun. — My lord, farewell.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

The Council-Chamber.

*Cornets.* Enter King HENRY, Cardinal WOLSEY, the Lords of  
the Council, Sir THOMAS LOVELL, Officers, Attendant. The  
King enters leaning on the Cardinal's Shoulder.

*K. Hen.* My life itself, and the best heart of it,  
Thanks you for this great care. I stood i' the level  
Of a full charg'd confederacy, and give thanks  
To you that chok'd it. — Let be call'd before us  
That gentleman of Buckingham's: in person  
I'll hear him his confessions justify,

And point by point the treasons of his master.  
He shall again relate.

*The King takes his State. The Lords of the Council occupy their several Places. The Cardinal places himself under the King's Feet on his right Side.*

*A Noise within, crying Room for the Queen. Enter the Queen, ushered by the Dukes of NORFOLK and SUFFOLK: she kneels. The King riseth from his State, takes her up, kisses, and placeth her by him.*

*Q. Kath.* Nay, we must longer kneel: I am a suitor.

*K. Hen.* Arise, and take place by us. — Half your suit  
Never name to us; you have half our power:  
The other moiety, ere you ask, is given;  
Repeat your will, and take it.

*Q. Kath.* Thank your majesty.

That you would love yourself, and in that love  
Not unconsider'd leave your honour, nor  
The dignity of your office, is the point  
Of my petition.

*K. Hen.* Lady mine, proceed.

*Q. Kath.* I am solicited not by a few,  
And those of true condition, that your subjects  
Are in great grievance. There have been commissions  
Sent down among them, which hath flaw'd the heart  
Of all their loyalties: wherein, although,  
My good lord cardinal, they vent reproaches  
Most bitterly on you, as putter-on  
Of these exactions, yet the king our master,  
Whose honour heaven shield from soil! even he escapes not  
Language unmannerly; yea, such which breaks  
The sides of loyalty, and almost appears  
In loud rebellion.

*Nor.* Not almost appears,  
It doth appear; for upon these taxations,  
The clothiers all, not able to maintain

The many to them 'longing, have put off  
 The spinsters, carders, fullers, weavers, who,  
 Unfit for other life, compell'd by hunger  
 And lack of other means, in desperate manner  
 Daring th' event to the teeth, are all in uproar,  
 And danger serves among them.

*R. Hen.*

Taxation!

Wherein? and what taxation? — My lord cardinal,  
 You that are blam'd for it alike with us,  
 Know you of this taxation?

*Wol.*

Please you, Sir,

I know but of a single part, in ought  
 Pertains to the state; and front but in that file  
 Where others tell steps with me.

*Q. Kath.*

No, my lord,

You know no more than others; but you frame  
 Things, that are known alike, which are not wholesome  
 To those which would not know them, and yet must  
 Perforce be their acquaintance. These exactions,  
 Whereof my sovereign would have note, they are  
 Most pestilent to the hearing; and, to bear them,  
 The back is sacrifice to the load. They say,  
 They are devis'd by you, or else you suffer  
 Too hard an exclamation.

*R. Hen.*

Still exaction!

The nature of it? In what kind, let's know,  
 Is this exaction?

*Q. Kath.*

I am much too venturous

In tempting of your patience; but am bolden'd  
 Under your promis'd pardon. The subjects' grief  
 Comes through commissions, which compel from each  
 The sixth part of his substance, to be levied  
 Without delay; and the pretence for this  
 Is nam'd, your wars in France. This makes bold mouths:  
 Tongues spit their duties out, and cold hearts freeze  
 Allegiance in them: their curses now,  
 Live where their prayers did; and it's come to pass,

his tractable obedience is a slave  
 to each incensed will. I would, your highness  
 would give it quick consideration, for  
 there is no primer baseness.

*R. Hen.*

By my life,

this is against our pleasure.

*Wol.*

And for me,

have no farther gone in this, than by  
 a single voice, and that not pass'd me but  
 by learned approbation of the judges. If I am  
 traduc'd by ignorant tongues, which neither know  
 my faculties, nor person, yet will be  
 the chronicles of my doing, let me say,  
 'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough brake  
 that virtue must go through. We must not stint  
 our necessary actions, in the fear  
 to cope malicious censurers; which ever,  
 as ravenous fishes, do a vessel follow  
 that is new trimm'd, but benefit no farther  
 than vainly longing. What we oft do best,  
 by sick interpreters (once weak ones) is  
 not ours, or not allow'd; what worst, as oft,  
 sitting a grosser quality, is cried up  
 for our best act. If we shall stand still,  
 we fear our motion will be mock'd or carp'd at,  
 we should take root here, where we sit, or sit  
 state statues only.

*R. Hen.*

Things done well,

and with a care, exempt themselves from fear.

Things done without example, in their issue

are to be fear'd. Have you a precedent

of this commission? I believe, not any.

We must not rend our subjects from our laws,

and stick them in our will. Sixth part of each?

A trembling contribution! Why, we take,

from every tree, lop, bark, and part o' the timber;

And, though we leave it with a root, thus hack'd,

The air will drink the sap. To every county  
Where this is question'd send our letters, with  
Free pardon to each man that has denied  
The force of this commission. Pray, look to 't;  
I put it to your care.

*Wol.* A word with you. [To the Sec

Let there be letters writ to every shire,  
Of the king's grace and pardon. The griev'd commons  
Hardly conceive of me: let it be nois'd,  
That through our intercession this revokement  
And pardon comes. I shall anon advise you  
Farther in the proceeding. [Exit Sec

*Enter Surveyor.*

*Q. Kath.* I am sorry that the duke of Buckingham  
Is run in your displeasure.

*R. Hen.* It grieves many:  
The gentleman is learn'd, and a most rare speaker;  
To nature none more bound; his training such,  
That he may furnish and instruct great teachers,  
And never seek for aid out of himself: yet see,  
When these so noble benefits shall prove  
Not well dispos'd, the mind growing once corrupt,  
They turn to vicious forms, ten times more ugly  
Than ever they were fair. This man so complete,  
Who was enroll'd 'mongst wonders, and when we,  
Almost with ravish'd list'ning, could not find  
His hour of speeck a minute; he, my lady,  
Hath into monstrous habits put the graces  
That once were his, and is become as black  
As if besmear'd in hell. Sit by us; you shall hear  
(This was his gentleman in trust) of him  
Things to strike honour sad. — Bid him recount  
The fore-recited practices, whereof  
We cannot feel too little, hear too much.

*Wol.* Stand forth; and with bold spirit relate what yo

a careful subject, have collected  
duke of Buckingham.

1. Speak freely.

First, it was usual with him, every day  
fect his speech, that if the king  
thout issue die, he 'd carry it so  
he sceptre his. These very words  
l him utter to his son-in-law,  
ga'ny, to whom by oath he menac'd  
pon the cardinal.

Please your highness, note  
erous conception in this point.  
ed by his wish, to your high person  
most malignant; and it stretches  
u, to your friends.

h. My learn'd lord cardinal,  
with charity.

1. Speak on.  
aded he his title to the crown,  
fail? to this point hast thou heard him  
ie speak aught?

He was brought to this  
prophecy of Nicholas Hopkins.

2. What was that Hopkins?

Sir, a Chartreux friar,  
sor; who fed him every minute  
ls of sovereignty.

2. How know'st thou this?

Not long before your highness sped to France,  
being at the Rose, within the parish  
rence Poultney, did of me demand  
the speech among the Londoners  
g the French journey? I replied,  
l the French would prove perfidious,  
g's danger. Presently the duke  
as the fear, indeed; and that he doubted,  
*rove the verity of certain words.*



Spoke by a holy monk; "that oft," says he,  
 "Hath sent to me, wishing me to permit  
 John de la Car, my chaplain, a choice hour  
 To hear from him a matter of some moment:  
 Whom after, under the confession's seal,  
 He solemnly had sworn, that what he spoke  
 My chaplain to no creature living, but  
 To me, should utter, with demure confidence  
 This pausingly ensu'd, — Neither the king, nor's heirs,  
 (Tell you the duke) shall prosper: bid him strive  
 To gain the love o' the commonalty: the duke  
 Shall govern England."

*Q. Kath.* If I know you well,  
 You were the duke's surveyor, and lost your office  
 On the complaint o' the tenants: take good heed,  
 You charge not in your spleen a noble person,  
 And spoil your nobler soul. I say, take heed;  
 Yes, heartily beseech you.

*K. Hen.* Let him on. —  
 Go forward.

*Surv.* On my soul, I 'll speak but truth.  
 I told my lord the duke, by the devil's illusions  
 The monk might be deceiv'd; and that 't was dangerous for  
 To ruminate on this so far, until  
 It forg'd him some design, which, being believ'd,  
 It was much like to do: He answer'd, "Tush!  
 It can do me no damage:" adding farther,  
 That had the king in his last sickness fail'd,  
 The cardinal's and Sir Thomas Lovell's heads  
 Should have gone off.

*K. Hen.* Ha! what, so rank? Ah, ha!  
 There's mischief in this man. — Canst thou say farther?

*Surv.* In can, my liege.

*K. Hen.* Proceed.

*Surv.* Being at Greenwi

After your highness had reprov'd the duke

About Sir William Blomer, —

*R. Hen.* I remember,  
Of such a time: being my sworn servant,  
The duke retain'd him his. — But on: what hence?  
*Surv.* "If," quoth he, "I for this had been committed,  
As, to the Tower, I thought, I would have play'd  
The part my father meant to act upon  
Th' usurper Richard; who, being at Salisbury,  
Made suit to come in 's presence, which if granted,  
As he made semblance of his duty, would  
Have put his knife into him."

*R. Hen.* A giant traitor!

*Wol.* Now, Madam, may his highness live in freedom,  
And this man out of prison?

*Q. Kath.* God mend all!

*R. Hen.* There 's something more would out of thee: what  
say'st?

*Surv.* After "the duke his father," with "the knife,"  
He stretch'd him, and, with one hand on his dagger,  
Another spread on 's breast, mounting his eyes,  
He did discharge a horrible oath; whose tenor  
Was, — were he evil us'd, he would out-go  
His father, by as much as a performance  
Does an irresolute purpose.

*R. Hen.* There 's his period,  
To sheath his knife in us. He is attach'd;  
Call him to present trial: if he may  
Find mercy in the law, 't is his; if none,  
Let him not seek't of us. By day and night,  
He's traitor to the height.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.

A Room in the Palace.

*Enter the Lord Camberlain, and Lord SANDS.*

*Cham.* Is 't possible, the spells of France should juggle  
Men into such strange mysteries?

*Sands.* New customs,

Though they be never so ridiculous,  
Nay, let 'em be unmanly, yet are follow'd.

*Cham.* As far as I see, all the good our English  
Have got by the late voyage is but merely  
A fit or two o' the face; but they are shrewd ones,  
For when they hold 'em, you would swear directly,  
Their very noses had been counsellors  
To Pepin or Clotharius, they keep state so.

*Sands.* They have all new legs, and lame ones: one  
take it,  
That newer saw 'em pace before, the spavin,  
A springhalt reign'd among them.

*Cham.* Death! my lord,  
Their clothes are after such a pagan cut too,  
That, sure, they 've worn out christendom. How now?  
What news, Sir Thomas Lovell?

*Enter Sir THOMAS LOVELL.*

*Lov.* 'Faith, my lord,  
I hear of none, but the new proclamation  
That 's clapp'd upon the court-gate.

*Cham.* What is 't for?

*Lov.* The reformation of our travell'd gallants,  
That fill the court with quarrels, talk, and tailors.

*Cham.* I am glad 't is there: now, I would pray our mons  
To think an English courtier may be wise,  
And never see the Louvre.

*Lov.* They must either  
(For so run the conditions) leave those remnants  
Of fool, and feather, that they got in France,  
With all their honourable points of ignorance  
Pertaining thereunto, as fights and fireworks;  
Abusing better men than they can be,  
Out of a foreign wisdom; renouncing clean  
The faith they have in tennis, and tall stockings,  
Short blister'd breeches, and those types of travel,  
And understand again like honest men,

Or pack to their old playfellows: there, I take it,  
They may, *cum privilegio*, wear away  
The lag end of their lewdness, and be laugh'd at.

*Sands.* 'T is time to give 'em physic, their diseases  
Are grown so catching.

*Cham.* What a loss our ladies  
Will have of these trim vanities.

*Lov.* Ay, marry,  
There will be woe indeed, lords: the sly whoresons  
Have got a speeding trick to lay down ladies;  
A French song, and a fiddle, has no fellow.

*Sands.* The devil fiddle them! I am glad they're going,  
For, sure, there's no converting of them: now,  
An honest country lord, as I am, beaten  
A long time out of play, may bring his plain-song,  
And have an hour of hearing, and, by 'r-lady,  
Held current music too.

*Cham.* Well said, lord Sands:  
Your colt's tooth is not cast yet.

*Sands.* No, my lord;  
Nor shall not, while I have a stump.

*Cham.* Sir Thomas,  
Whither were you a going?

*Lov.* To the cardinal's.  
Your lordship is a guest too.

*Cham.* O! 't is true:  
This night he makes a supper, and a great one,  
To many lords and ladies: there will be  
The beauty of this kingdom, I'll assure you.

*Lov.* That churchman bears a bounteous mind indeed,  
A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us:  
His dews fall every where.

*Cham.* No doubt, he's noble;  
He had a black mouth that said other of him.

*Sands.* He may, my lord, he has wherewithal: in him,  
*Sparing would show a worse sin than ill doctrine.*

Men of his way should be most liberal;  
They are set here for examples.

*Cham.* True, they are so;  
But few now give so great ones. My barge stays;  
Your lordship shall along: — Come, good Sir Thomas,  
We shall be late else; which I would not be,  
For I was spoke to, with Sir Henry Guildford,  
This night to be comptrollers.

*Sands.* I am your lordship's. [*Exit*]

### SCENE IV.

The Presence-Chamber in York-Place.

*Hautboys.* A small Table under a State for the Cardinal  
longer Table for the Guests; then enter ANNE BULLEN,  
divers Lords, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, as Guests, at  
door; at another door, enter Sir HENRY GUILDFORD.

*Guild.* Ladies, a general welcome from his grace  
Salutes ye all: this night he dedicates  
To fair content, and you. None here, he hopes,  
In all this noble bevy, has brought with her  
One care abroad: he would have all as merry  
As first good company, good wine, good welcome  
Can make good people. — O, my lord! y' are tardy;

*Enter Lord Chamberlain, Lord SANDS, and Sir THOMAS  
LOVELL.*

The very thought of this fair company  
Clapp'd wings to me.

*Cham.* You are young, Sir Harry Guildford.

*Sands.* Sir Thomas Lovell, had the cardinal  
But half my lay-thoughts in him, some of these  
Should find a running banquet ere they rested,  
I think, would better please 'em: by my life,  
They are a sweet society of fair ones.

*Lov.* O! that your lordship were but now confessor  
To one or two of these.

*Sands.* I would, I were;  
They should find easy penance.

*Lov.* Faith, how easy?

*Sands.* As easy as a down-bed would afford it.

*Cham.* Sweet ladies, will it please you sit? Sir Harry,  
Place you that side, I'll take the charge of this:  
His grace is entering. — Nay, you must not freeze;  
Two women plac'd together makes cold weather: —  
My lord Sands, you are one will keep 'em waking;  
Pray, sit between these ladies.

*Sands.* By my faith,  
And thank your lordship. — By your leave, sweet ladies:  
[*Sits himself between ANNE BULLEN and another Lady.*]

If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me;  
I had it from my father.

*Anne.* Was he mad, Sir?

*Sands.* O! very mad, exceeding mad; in love too;  
But he would bite none: just as I do now,  
He would kiss you twenty with a breath. [Kisses her.

*Cham.* Well said, my lord. —  
So, now you are fairly seated. — Gentlemen,  
The penance lies on you, if these fair ladies  
Pass away frowning.

*Sands.* For my little cure,  
Let me alone.

*Hautboys.* Enter Cardinal WOLSEY, attended, and takes  
his state.

*Wol.* Y' are welcome, my fair guests: that noble lady,  
Or gentleman, that is not freely merry,  
Is not my friend. This, to confirm my welcome;  
And to you all good health. [Drinks.

*Sands.* Your grace is noble:  
Let me have such a bowl may hold my thanks,  
And save me so much talking.

*Wol.* My lord Sands,

I am beholding to you : cheer your neighbours. —  
 Ladies, you are not merry : — gentlemen,  
 Whose fault is this ?

*Sands.* The red wine first must rise  
 In their fair cheeks, my lord ; then, we shall have 'em  
 Talk us to silence.

*Anne.* You are a merry gamester,  
 My lord Sands.

*Sands.* Yes, if I make my play.  
 Here 's to your ladyship ; and pledge it, Madam,  
 For 't is to such a thing, —

*Anne.* You cannot show me.

*Sands.* I told your grace, they would talk anon.  
 [*Drum and Trumpets within ; Chambers dis*

*Wol.* What 's t

*Cham.* Look out there, some of you. [*Exit a*

*Wol.* What warlik

And to what end is this ? — Nay, ladies, fear not ;  
 By all the laws of war y' are privileg'd.

*Re-enter Servant.*

*Cham.* How now ! what is 't ?

*Serv.* A noble troop of strai  
 For so they seem : they 've left their barge, and landed ;  
 And hither make, as great ambassadors  
 From foreign princes.

*Wol.* Good lord chamberlain,  
 Go, give them welcome ; you can speak the French tong  
 And, pray, receive them nobly, and conduct them  
 Into our presence, where this heaven of beauty  
 Shall shine at full upon them. — Some attend him. —

[*Exit Chamberlain attended. All arise, an  
 removed.*

You have now a broken banquet ; but we 'll mend it.  
 A good digestion to you all ; and, once more,  
 I shower a welcome on ye. — Welcome all.

*Hautboys. Enter the King, and Others, as Maskers, habited like Shepherds, ushered by the Lord Chamberlain. They pass directly before the Cardinal; and gracefully salute him.*

A noble company! what are their pleasures?

*Cham.* Because they speak no English, thus they pray'd  
To tell your grace: — That, having heard by fame  
Of this so noble and so fair assembly  
This night to meet here, they could do no less,  
Out of the great respect they bear to beauty,  
But leave their flocks, and under your fair conduct,  
Crave leave to view these ladies, and entreat  
An hour of revels with them.

*Wol.* Say, lord chamberlain,  
They have done my poor house grace; for which I pay them  
A thousand thanks, and pray them take their pleasures.

*[Ladies chosen for the Dance. The King takes ANNE BULLEN.]*

*R. Hen.* The fairest hand I ever touch'd. O, beauty!  
Till now I never knew thee. *[Music. Dance.]*

*Wol.* My lord, —

*Cham.* Your grace?

*Wol.* Pray tell them thus much from me.  
There should be one amongst them, by his person,  
More worthy this place than myself; to whom,  
If I but knew him, with my love and duty  
I would surrender it.

*Cham.* I will, my lord.

*[Cham. goes to the Maskers, and returns.]*

*Wol.* What say they?

*Cham.* Such a one, they all confess,  
There is, indeed; which they would have your grace  
Find out, and he will take it.

*Wol.* Let me see then. —

*[Comes from his State.]*

By all your good leaves, gentlemen, here I'll make  
My royal choice.



*R. Hen.* You have found him, cardinal.

[*Unmasking.*

You hold a fair assembly; you do well, lord:  
You are a churchman, or, I'll tell you, cardinal,  
I should judge now unhappily.

*Wol.* I am glad,  
Your grace is grown so pleasant.

*R. Hen.* My lord chamberlain,  
Pr'ythee, come hither. What fair lady's that?

*Cham.* An 't please your grace, Sir Thomas Bullen's  
daughter, —

The viscount Rochford, — one of her highness' women.

*R. Hen.* By heaven, she is a dainty one. — Sweet-heart,  
I were unmannerly to take you out,  
And not to kiss you. — A health, gentlemen!  
Let it go round.

*Wol.* Sir Thomas Lovell, is the banquet ready  
I' the privy chamber?

*Lov.* Yes, my lord.

*Wol.* Your grace,  
I fear, with dancing is a little heated.

*R. Hen.* I fear, too much.

*Wol.* There's fresher air, my lord,  
In the next chamber.

*R. Hen.* Lead in your ladies, every one. — Sweet partner  
I must not yet forsake you. — Let's be merry,  
Good my lord cardinal: I have half a dozen healths  
To drink to these fair ladies, and a measure  
To lead them once again; and then let's dream  
Who's best in favour. — Let the music knock it.

[*Exeunt with Trumpets*

## ACT II. SCENE I.

A Street.

*Enter Two Gentlemen, meeting.*

1 Gent. Whither away so fast?

2 Gent. O! — God save you.

E'en to the hall, to hear what shall become  
Of the great duke of Buckingham.

1 Gent. I'll save you  
That labour, Sir. All's now done, but the ceremony  
Of bringing back the prisoner.

2 Gent. Were you there?

1 Gent. Yes, indeed, was I.

2 Gent. Pray, speak what has happen'd.

1 Gent. You may guess quickly what.

2 Gent. Is he found guilty?

1 Gent. Yes, truly is he, and condemn'd upon it.

2 Gent. I am sorry for't.

1 Gent. So are a number more.

2 Gent. But, pray, how pass'd it?

1 Gent. I'll tell you in a little. The great duke  
came to the bar; where, to his accusations  
pleaded still not guilty, and alleg'd  
my sharp reasons to defeat the law.  
The king's attorney, on the contrary,  
g'd on the examinations, proofs, confessions  
divers witnesses, which the duke desir'd  
have brought, *vivâ voce*, to his face:  
which appeared against him, his surveyor;  
Gilbert Peck his chancellor; and John Car,  
nessor to him; with that devil-monk,  
pkins, that made this mischief.

2 Gent. That was he,  
that fed him with his prophecies?

1 Gent. The same.  
these accus'd him strongly; which he fain

Would have flung from him, but, indeed, he could not:  
 And so his peers, upon this evidence,  
 Have found him guilty of high treason. Much  
 He spoke, and learnedly, for life; but all  
 Was either pitied in him, or forgotten.

2 *Gent.* After all this, how did he bear himself?

1 *Gent.* When he was brought again to the bar, to hear  
 His knell rung out, his judgment, he was stirr'd  
 With such an agony; he sweat extremely,  
 And something spoke in choler, ill, and hasty:  
 But he fell to himself again, and sweetly  
 In all the rest show'd a most noble patience.

2 *Gent.* I do not think, he fears death.

1 *Gent.* Sure, he does not.  
 He was never so womanish: the cause  
 He may a little grieve at.

2 *Gent.* Certainly,  
 The cardinal is the end of this.

1 *Gent.* 'T is likely,  
 By all conjectures: first, Kildare's attainder,  
 Then deputy of Ireland; who remov'd,  
 Earl Surrey was sent thither, and in haste too,  
 Lest he should help his father.

2 *Gent.* That trick of state  
 Was a deep envious one.

1 *Gent.* At his return,  
 No doubt, he will requite it. This is noted,  
 And generally; whoever the king favours,  
 The cardinal instantly will find employment,  
 And far enough from court too.

2 *Gent.* All the commons  
 Hate him perniciously, and, o' my conscience,  
 Wish him ten fathom deep: this duke as much  
 They love and dote on; call him, bounteous Buckingham,  
 The mirror of all courtesies —

1 *Gent.* Stay there, Sir;  
 And see the noble ruin'd man you speak of.

*BUCKINGHAM from his Arraignment; Tipstaves before the Axe with the Edge towards him; Halberds on each accompanied with Sir THOMAS LOVELL, Sir NICHOLAS, Sir WILLIAM SANDS, and common people.*

*nt.* Let 's stand close, and behold him.

*i.* All good people,

thus far have come to pity me,  
at I say, and then go home and lose me.  
is day receiv'd a traitor's judgment,  
hat name must die: yet, heaven bear witness  
have a conscience let it sink me,  
the axe falls, if I be not faithful.  
I bear no malice for my death,  
ne upon the premises but justice;  
e that sought it I could wish more Christians:  
they will, I heartily forgive them.  
iem look they glory not in mischief,  
d their evils on the graves of great men;  
my guiltless blood must cry against them.  
er life in this world I ne'er hope,  
I sue, although the king have mercies  
n I dare make faults. You few that lov'd me,  
be bold to weep for Buckingham,  
e friends and fellows, whom to leave  
itter to him, only dying,  
me, like good angels, to my end;  
the long divorce of steel falls on me,  
your prayers one sweet sacrifice,  
my soul to heaven. — Lead on, o' God's name.

I do beseech your grace for charity.

ny malice in your heart

d against me, now to forgive me frankly.

. Sir Thomas Lovell, I as free forgive you,

ld be forgiven: I forgive all;

nnot be those numberless offences

ie, *that I can not take peace with: no black envy*

Shall make my grave. Commend me to his grace;  
 And, if he speak of Buckingham, pray, tell him,  
 You met him half in heaven. My vows and prayers  
 Yet are the king's; and, till my soul forsake,  
 Shall cry for blessings on him; may he live  
 Longer than I have time to tell his years!  
 Ever belov'd, and loving, may his rule be!  
 And when old time shall lead him to his end,  
 Goodness and he fill up one monument!

*Lov.* To the water side I must conduct your grace;  
 Then, give my charge up to Sir Nicholas Vaux,  
 Who undertakes you to your end.

*Vaux.* Prepare there!  
 The duke is coming: see, the barge be ready;  
 And fit it with such furniture, as suits  
 The greatness of his person.

*Buck.* Nay, Sir Nicholas,  
 Let it alone: my state now will but mock me.  
 When I came hither, I was lord high constable,  
 And duke of Buckingham; now, poor Edward Bohun:  
 Yet I am richer than my base accusers,  
 That never knew what truth meant. I now seal it;  
 And with that blood will make them one day groan for 't.  
 My noble father, Henry of Buckingham,  
 Who first rais'd head against usurping Richard,  
 Flying for succour to his servant Banister,  
 Being distress'd, was by that wretch betray'd,  
 And without trial fell: God's peace be with him!  
 Henry the seventh succeeding, truly pitying  
 My father's loss, like a most royal prince,  
 Restor'd me to my honours; and out of ruins  
 Made my name once more noble. Now, his son,  
 Henry the eighth, life, honour, name, and all  
 That made me happy, at one stroke has taken  
 For ever from the world. I had my trial,  
 And, must needs say, a noble one; which makes me  
 A little happier than my wretched father:

ar we are one in fortunes, — both  
 r servants, by those men we lov'd most:  
 natural and faithless service!  
 is an end in all: yet, you that hear me,  
 a dying man receive as certain:  
 u are liberal of your loves, and counsels,  
 you be not loose; for those you make friends,  
 our hearts to, when they once perceive  
 ub in your fortunes, fall away  
 : from ye, never found again  
 they mean to sink ye. All good people,  
 e. I must now forsake ye: the last hour  
 g weary life is come upon me.  
 and when you would say something that is sad,  
 I fell. — I have done, and God forgive me!

[*Exeunt* BUCKINGHAM, &c.]

. O! this is full of pity. — Sir, it calls,  
 many curses on their heads  
 the authors.

If the duke be guiltless,  
 'woe; yet I can give you inkling  
 ing evil, if it fall,  
 in this.

Good angels keep it from us!  
 it be? You do not doubt my faith, Sir?

This secret is so weighty, 't will require  
 ith to conceal it.

Let me have it:

k much.

I am confident:

Sir. Did you not of late days hear  
 of a separation  
 e king and Katharine?

Yes, but it held not;  
 ie king once heard it, out of anger  
 nmand to the lord Mayor straight

To stop the rumour, and allay those tongues  
That durst disperse it.

2 *Gent.* But that slander, Sir,  
Is found a truth now; for it grows again  
Fresher than e'er it was, and held for certain  
The king will venture at it. Either the cardinal,  
Or some about him near, have out of malice  
To the good queen possess'd him with a scruple,  
That will undo her: to confirm this, too,  
Cardinal Campeius is arriv'd, and lately,  
As all think, for this business.

1 *Gent.* 'T is the cardinal;  
And merely to revenge him on the emperor,  
For not bestowing on him, at his asking,  
The archbishoprick of Toledo, this is purpos'd.

2 *Gent.* I think, you have hit the mark: but is 't not cruel,  
That she should feel the smart of this? The cardinal  
Will have his will, and she must fall.

1 *Gent.* 'T is woful.  
We are too open here to argue this;  
Let's think in private more.

[*Exeunt*]

## SCENE II.

An Ante-chamber in the Palace.

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain, reading a Letter.*

*Cham.* "My Lord, — The horses your lordship sent for, with all the care I had, I saw well chosen, ridden, and furnished. They were young, and handsome, and of the best breed in the north. When they were ready to set out for London, a man of my lord cardinal's, by commission and main power, took them from me; with this reason, — his master would be served before a subject, if not before the king; which stopped our mouths, Sir." I fear, he will, indeed. Well, let him have them  
*He will have all, I think.*

*Enter the Dukes of NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.*

*r.* Well met, my lord chamberlain.

*m.* Good day to both your graces.

*f.* How is the king employ'd?

*am.* I left him private,  
sad thoughts and troubles.

*r.* What 's the cause?

*am.* It seems, the marriage with his brother's wife  
ept too near conscience.

*f.* No; his conscience  
ept too near another lady.

*r.* 'T is so.

the cardinal's doing, the king-cardinal:  
blind priest, like the eldest son of fortune,  
what he list. The king will know him one day.

*f.* Pray God, he do: he'll never know himself else.

*r.* How holily he works in all his business,  
ith what zeal; for, now he has crack'd the league  
en us and the emperor, the queen's great nephew,  
es into the king's soul; and there scatters  
rs, doubts, wringing of the conscience,  
and despairs, and all these for his marriage:

out of all these, to restore the king,  
insels a divorce: a loss of her,  
ke a jewel has hung twenty years  
his neck, yet never lost her lustre;  
, that loves him with that excellence  
ngels love good men with; even of her  
hen the greatest stroke of fortune falls,  
less the king. And is not this course pious?

*am.* Heaven keep me from such counsel! 'T is most true,  
news are every where; every tongue speaks them,  
very true heart weeps for 't. All, that dare  
nto these affairs, see this main end, —  
rench king's sister. Heaven will one day open  
ng's eyes, that so long have slept upon  
*old bad man.*



*Suf.* And free us from his slavery.

*Nor.* We had need pray,  
And heartily, for our deliverance,  
Or this imperious man will work us all  
From princes into pages. All men's honours  
Lie like one lump before him, to be fashion'd  
Into what pitch he please.

*Suf.* For me, my lords,  
I love him not, nor fear him; there's my creed.  
As I am made without him, so I'll stand,  
If the king please: his curses and his blessings  
Touch me alike, they're breath I not believe in.  
I knew him, and I know him; so I leave him  
To him that made him proud, the pope.

*Nor.* Let's in.  
And with some other business put the king  
From these sad thoughts, that work too much upon him. —  
My lord, you'll bear us company?

*Cham.* Excuse me;  
The king hath sent me other-where: besides,  
You'll find a most unfit time to disturb him.  
Health to your lordships.

*Nor.* Thanks, my good lord chamberl  
[Exit Lord Chamberl]

*NORFOLK opens a folding-door. The King is discovered sitting and reading pensively.*

*Suf.* How sad he looks: sure, he is much afflicted.

*K. Hen.* Who is there? ha!

*Nor.* Pray God, he be not angry.

*K. Hen.* Who's there, I say? How dare you thrust your  
Into my private meditations?  
Who am I? ha!

*Nor.* A gracious king, that pardons all offences,  
Malice ne'er meant: our breach of duty this way  
Is business of estate; in which we come  
To know your royal pleasure.



*R. Hen.* And once more in mine arms I bid him welcome,  
And thank the holy conclave for their loves:  
They have sent me such a man I would have wish'd for.

*Cam.* Your grace must needs deserve all strangers' loves,  
You are so noble. To your highness' hand  
I tender my commission; by whose virtue,  
(The court of Rome commanding) you, my lord  
Cardinal of York, are join'd with me, their servant,  
In the impartial judging of this business.

*R. Hen.* Two equal men. The queen shall be acquainted  
Forthwith for what you come. — Where 's Gardiner?

*Wol.* I know, your majesty has always lov'd her  
So dear in heart, not to deny her that  
A woman of less place might ask by law,  
Scholars, allow'd freely to argue for her.

*R. Hen.* Ay, and the best, she shall have; and my favour  
To him that does best: God forbid else. Cardinal,  
Pr'ythee, call Gardiner to me, my new secretary:  
I find him a fit fellow. [Exit WOLSEY]

*Re-enter WOLSEY, with GARDINER.*

*Wol.* Give me your hand; much joy and favour to you:  
You are the king's now.

*Gard.* But to be commanded  
For ever by your grace, whose hand has rais'd me.

*R. Hen.* Come hither, Gardiner. [They walk and whisper]

*Cam.* My lord of York, was not one doctor Pace  
In this man's place before him?

*Wol.* Yes, he was.

*Cam.* Was he not held a learned man?

*Wol.* Yes, surely.

*Cam.* Believe me, there 's an ill opinion spread, then,  
Even of yourself, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How! of me?

*Cam.* They will not stick to say, you envied him;  
And fearing he would rise, he was so virtuous,

Kept him a foreign man still; which so griev'd him,  
That he ran mad, and died.

*Wol.*

Heaven's peace be with him!

That 's Christian care enough: for living murmurers  
There 's places of rebuke. He was a fool,  
For he would needs be virtuous: that good fellow,  
If I command him, follows my appointment:  
I will have none so near else. Learn this, brother,  
We live not to be grip'd by meaner persons.

*R. Hen.* Deliver this with modesty to the queen.

[*Exit GARDINER.*]

The most convenient place that I can think of,  
For such receipt of learning, is Black-Friars:  
There ye shall meet about this weighty business. —  
My Wolsey, see it furnish'd. — O my lord!  
Would it not grieve an able man, to leave  
So sweet a bedfellow? But, conscience, conscience, —  
O! 't is a tender place, and I must leave her. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.

An Ante-chamber in the Queen's Apartments.

*Enter ANNE BULLEN, and an old Lady.*

*Anne.* Not for that neither: — here 's the pang that pinches;  
His highness having liv'd so long with her, and she  
So good a lady, that no tongue could ever  
Pronounce dishonour of her, — by my life,  
She never knew harm-doing, — O! now, after  
So many courses of the sun enthron'd,  
Still growing in a majesty and pomp, the which  
To leave, a thousand-fold more bitter, than  
'T is sweet at first t' acquire, — after this process,  
To give her the avaunt! it is a pity  
Would move a monster.

*Old L.*

Hearts of most hard temper

Melt and lament for her.

*Anne.* O, God's will! much better,  
 She ne'er had known pomp: though it be temporal,  
 Yet, if that quarrel, fortune, do divorce  
 It from the bearer, 't is a sufferance panging  
 As soul and body's severing.

*Old L.* Alas, poor lady!  
 She's a stranger now again?

*Anne.* So much the more  
 Must pity drop upon her. Verily,  
 I swear, 't is better to be lowly born,  
 And range with humble livers in content,  
 Than to be perk'd up in a glistening grief,  
 And wear a golden sorrow.

*Old L.* Our content  
 Is our best having.

*Anne.* By my troth, and maidenhead,  
 I would not be a queen.

*Old L.* Beshrew me, I would,  
 And venture maidenhead for 't; and so would you,  
 For all this spice of your hypocrisy.  
 You that have so fair parts of woman on you,  
 Have, too, a woman's heart; which ever yet  
 Affected eminence, wealth, sovereignty:  
 Which, to say sooth, are blessings, and which gifts  
 (Saving your mincing) the capacity  
 Of your soft cheveril conscience would receive,  
 If you might please to stretch it.

*Anne.* Nay, good troth, —

*Old L.* Yes, troth, and troth. — You would not be a q

*Anne.* No, not for all the riches under heaven.

*Old L.* 'T is strange: a three-pence bowed would hire:  
 Old as I am, to queen it. But, I pray you,  
 What think you of a duchess? have you limbs  
 To bear that load of title?

*Anne.* No, in truth.

*Old L.* Then you are weakly made. Pluck off a little:  
 I would not be a young count in your way,

than blushing comes to. If your back  
ouchsafe this burden, 't is too weak  
et a boy.

How you do talk !  
gain, I would not be a queen  
e world.

L. In faith, for little England  
enture an emballing: I myself  
or Carnarvonshire, although there 'long'd  
to the crown but that. Lo! who comes here?

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain.*

Good morrow, ladies. What were 't worth to know  
et of your conference?

My good lord,  
demand: it values not your asking.  
ress' sorrows we were pitying.  
It was a gentle business, and becoming  
on of good women: there is hope  
e well.

Now, I pray God, amen !  
You bear a gentle mind, and heavenly blessings  
uch creatures. That you may, fair lady,  
I speak sincerely, and high notes  
your many virtues, the king's majesty  
ds his good opinion of you to you, and  
pose honour to you, no less flowing  
rchioness of Pembroke; to which title  
nd pound a-year; annual support,  
s grace he adds.

I do not know,  
id of my obedience I should tender:  
n my all is nothing; nor my prayers  
words duly hallow'd, nor my wishes  
rth than empty vanities: yet prayers, and wishes,  
can return. Beseech your lordship,  
e to speak my thanks, and my obedience,

*R. Hen.* Here.

*Scribe.* Say, Katharine queen of England, come into the court.

*Crier.* Katharine, queen of England, &c.

*[The Queen makes no answer, rises out of her chair, goes about the court, comes to the King, and kneels at his feet; then speaks.]*

*Q. Kath.* Sir, I desire you, do me right and justice,  
And to bestow your pity on me; for  
I am a most poor woman, and a stranger,  
Born out of your dominions; having here  
No judge indifferent, nor no more assurance  
Of equal friendship and proceeding. Alas! Sir,  
In what have I offended you? what cause  
Hath my behaviour given to your displeasure,  
That thus you should proceed to put me off,  
And take your good grace from me? Heaven witness,  
I have been to you a true and humble wife,  
At all times to your will conformable:  
Ever in fear to kindle your dislike,  
Yea, subject to your countenance; glad, or sorry,  
As I saw it inclin'd. When was the hour  
I ever contradicted your desire,  
Or made it not mine too? Or which of your friends  
Have I not strove to love, although I knew  
He were mine enemy? what friend of mine,  
That had to him deriv'd your anger, did I  
Continue in my liking? nay, gave notice  
He was from thence discharg'd. Sir, call to mind  
That I have been your wife, in this obedience,  
Upward of twenty years, and have been blest  
With many children by you: if in the course  
And process of this time, you can report,  
And prove it too, against mine honour aught,  
My bond to wedlock, or my love and duty,  
Against your sacred person, in God's name,  
*Turn me away; and let the foul'st contempt*

Shut door upon me, and so give me up  
 To the sharp'st kind of justice. Please you, Sir,  
 The king, your father, was reputed for  
 A prince most prudent, of an excellent  
 And unmatched wit and judgment: Ferdinand,  
 My father, king of Spain, was reckon'd one  
 The wisest prince, that there had reign'd by many  
 A year before: it is not to be question'd  
 That they had gather'd a wise council to them  
 Of every realm, that did debate this business,  
 Who deem'd our marriage lawful. Wherefore I humbly  
 Beseech you, Sir, to spare me, till I may  
 Be by my friends in Spain advis'd, whose counsel  
 I will implore: if not, i' the name of God,  
 Your pleasure be fulfill'd!

*Wol.*

You have here, lady,  
 (And of your choice) these reverend fathers; men  
 Of singular integrity and learning,  
 Yea, the elect o' the land, who are assembled  
 To plead your cause. It shall be therefore bootless,  
 That longer you desire the court, as well  
 For your own quiet, as to rectify  
 What is unsettled in the king.

*Cam.*

His grace  
 Hath spoken well, and justly: therefore, Madam,  
 It's fit this royal session do proceed,  
 And that, without delay, their arguments  
 Be now produc'd and heard.

*Q. Kath.*

Lord cardinal,  
 To you I speak.

*Wol.*

Your pleasure, Madam?

*Q. Kath.*

Sir,  
 I am about to weep; but, thinking that  
 We are a queen, (or long have dream'd so) certain  
 The daughter of a king, my drops of tears  
 I'll turn to sparks of fire.

*Wol.*

Be patient yet.

*IV.*



*Q. Kath.* I will, when you are humble; nay, before,  
 Or God will punish me. I do believe,  
 Induc'd by potent circumstances, that  
 You are mine enemy, and make my challenge:  
 You shall not be my judge; for it is you  
 Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and me,  
 Which God's dew quench. — Therefore, I say again,  
 I utterly abhor, yea, from my soul,  
 Refuse you for my judge; whom, yet once more,  
 I hold my most malicious foe, and think not  
 At all a friend to truth.

*Wol.* I do profess,  
 You speak not like yourself; who ever yet  
 Have stood to charity, and display'd th' effects  
 Of disposition gentle, and of wisdom  
 O'ertopping woman's power. Madam, you do me wrong:  
 I have no spleen against you; nor injustice  
 For you, or any: how far I have proceeded,  
 Or how far farther shall, is warranted  
 By a commission from the consistory,  
 Yea, the whole consistory of Rome. You charge me,  
 That I have blown this coal: I do deny it.  
 The king is present: if it be known to him,  
 That I gainsay my deed, how may he wound,  
 And worthily, my falsehood; yea, as much  
 As you have done my truth. If he know  
 That I am free of your report, he knows,  
 I am not of your wrong: therefore, in him  
 It lies, to cure me; and the cure is, to  
 Remove these thoughts from you: the which before  
 His highness shall speak in, I do beseech  
 You, gracious Madam, to unthink your speaking,  
 And to say so no more.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, my lord,  
 I am a simple woman, much too weak  
 To oppose your cunning. Y' are meek, and humble-mouth'd  
 You sign your place and calling in full seeming,

th meekness and humility; but your heart  
 cram'd with arrogancy, spleen, and pride.  
 u have, by fortune and his highness' favours,  
 ne slightly o'er low steps, and now are mounted  
 here powers are your retainers; and your words,  
 mestics to you, serve your will, as 't please  
 urself pronounce their office. I must tell you,  
 u tender more your person's honour, than  
 ur high profession spiritual; that again  
 lo refuse you for my judge, and here,  
 fore you all, appeal unto the pope,  
 bring my whole cause 'fore his holiness,  
 d to be judg'd by him.

*[She curtsies to the King, and offers to depart.]*

*Cam.* The queen is obstinate,  
 ubborn to justice, apt to accuse it, and  
 sdainful to be tried by 't: 't is not well.  
 ie's going away.

*K. Hen.* Call her again.

*Crier.* Katharine, queen of England, come into the court.

*Gent. Ush.* Madam, you are call'd back.

*Q. Kath.* What need you note it? pray you, keep your way:  
 hen you are call'd, return. — Now the Lord help!  
 ey vex me past my patience. — Pray you, pass on:  
 will not tarry; no, nor ever more,  
 pon this business, my appearance make  
 any of their courts. *[Exeunt Queen, and her Attendants.]*

*K. Hen.* Go thy ways, Kate:  
 at man i' the world who shall report he has  
 better wife, let him in nought be trusted,  
 or speaking false in that. Thou art, alone,  
 f thy rare qualities, sweet gentleness,  
 y meekness saint-like, wife-like government,  
 beying in commanding, and thy parts  
 vereign and pious else, could speak thee cat)  
 ie queen of earthly queens. — She's noble born;

And, like her true nobility, she has  
Carried herself towards me.

*Wol.* Most gracious Sir,  
In humblest manner I require your highness,  
That it shall please you to declare, in hearing  
Of all these ears, (for where I am robb'd and bound,  
There must I be unloos'd, although not there  
At once, and fully satisfied) whether ever I  
Did broach this business to your highness, or  
Laid any scruple in your way, which might  
Induce you to the question on 't? or ever  
Have to you, but with thanks to God for such  
A royal lady, spake one the least word, that might  
Be to the prejudice of her present state,  
Or touch of her good person?

*K. Hen.* My lord cardinal,  
I do excuse you; yea, upon mine honour,  
I free you from 't. You are not to be taught  
That you have many enemies, that know not  
Why they are so, but, like to village curs,  
Bark when their fellows do: by some of these  
The queen is put in anger. Y' are excus'd;  
But will you be more justified?—you ever  
Have wish'd the sleeping of this business; never  
Desir'd it to be stirr'd; but oft have hinder'd, oft,  
The passages made toward it. — On my honour,  
I speak my good lord cardinal to this point,  
And thus far clear him. Now, what mov'd me to 't.  
I will be bold with time, and your attention: —  
Then, mark th' inducemen.. Thus it came; — give heed to  
My conscience first received a tenderness,  
Scruple, and prick, on certain speeches utter'd  
By the bishop of Bayonne, then French ambassador;  
Who had been hither sent on the debating,  
A marriage 'twixt the duke of Orleans and  
Our daughter Mary. I' the progress of this business,  
*Ere a determinate resolution, ha.*

(I mean, the bishop) did require a respite;  
 Wherein he might the king his lord advertise  
 Whether our daughter were legitimate,  
 Respecting this our marriage with the dowager,  
 Sometimes our brother's wife. This respite shook  
 The bosom of my conscience, enter'd me,  
 Yea, with a splitting power, and made to tremble  
 The region of my breast; which forc'd such way,  
 That many maz'd considerings did throng,  
 And press'd in with this caution. First, methought,  
 I stood not in the smile of Heaven; who had  
 Commanded nature, that my lady's womb,  
 If it conceiv'd a male child by me, should  
 Do no more offices of life to 't, than  
 The grave does to the dead; for her male issue  
 Or died where they were made, or shortly after  
 This world had air'd them. Hence I took a thought,  
 This was a judgment on me; that my kingdom,  
 Well worthy the best heir o' the world, should not  
 Be gladdened in 't by me. Then follows, that  
 I weigh'd the danger which my realms stood in  
 By this my issue's fail; and that gave to me  
 Many a groaning throe. Thus hulling in  
 The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer  
 Toward this remedy, whereupon we are  
 Now present here together; that 's to say,  
 I meant to rectify my conscience, — which  
 I then did feel full sick, and yet not well, —  
 By all the reverend fathers of the land,  
 And doctors learn'd. First, I began in private  
 With you, my lord of Lincoln: you remember  
 How under my oppression I did reek,  
 When I first mov'd you.

*Lin.*

Very well, my liege.

*R. Hen.* I have spoke long: be pleas'd yourself to say  
 How far you satisfied me.

*Lin.*

So please your highness,

The question did at first so stagger me, —  
 Bearing a state of mighty moment in 't,  
 And consequence of dread, — that I committed  
 The daring'st counsel which I had to doubt,  
 And did entreat your highness to this course,  
 Which you are running here.

*R. Hen.* I then mov'd you,  
 My lord of Canterbury; and got your leave  
 To make this present summons. — Unsolicited  
 I left no reverend person in this court;  
 But by particular consent proceeded,  
 Under your hands and seals: therefore, go on;  
 For no dislike i' the world against the person  
 Of the good queen, but the sharp thorny points  
 Of my alleged reasons drive this forward.  
 Prove but our marriage lawful, by my life,  
 And kingly dignity, we are contented  
 To wear our mortal state to come with her,  
 Katharine our queen, before the primest creature  
 That's paragon'd o' the world.

*Cam.* So please your highness  
 The queen being absent, 't is a needful fitness  
 That we adjourn this court till farther day:  
 Meanwhile must be an earnest motion  
 Made to the queen, to call back her appeal  
 She intends unto his holiness.

*R. Hen.* I may perceive,  
 These cardinals trifle with me: I abhor  
 This dilatory sloth, and tricks of Rome.  
 My learn'd and well-beloved servant, Cranmer!  
 Pr'ythee, return: with thy approach, I know,  
 My comfort comes along. — Break up the court:  
 I say, set on.

{*Exeunt, in manner as they*

## ACT III. SCENE I.

The Palace at Bridewell.

A Room in the Queen's Apartment.

*The Queen, and her Women, as at work.*

*Kath.* Take thy lute, wench: my soul grows sad with  
troubles;  
and disperse them, if thou canst. Leave working.

## S O N G.

*Orpheus with his lute made trees,  
And the mountain-tops, that freeze,  
Bow themselves, when he did sing:  
To his music, plants, and flowers,  
Ever sprung; as sun, and showers,  
There had made a lasting spring.*

*Every thing that heard him play,  
Even the billows of the sea,  
Hung their heads, and then lay by.  
In sweet music is such art,  
Killing care, and grief of heart,  
Fall asleep, or, hearing, die.*

*Enter a Gentleman.**Kath.* How now!

*mt.* An't please your grace, the two great cardinals  
in the presence.

*Kath.* Would they speak with me?  
*mt.* They will 'd me say so, Madam.

*Kath.* Pray their graces  
me near. [*Exit Gent.*] What can be their business  
me, a poor weak woman, fallen from favour?  
ot like their coming, now I think on 't.  
should be good men, their affairs as righteous;  
hoods make not monks.

*Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS.*

*Wol.* Peace to your highness.

*Q. Kath.* Your graces find me here part of a housewife;  
I would be all, against the worst may happen.  
What are your pleasures with me, reverend lords?

*Wol.* May it please you, noble Madam, to withdraw  
Into your private chamber, we shall give you  
The full cause of our coming.

*Q. Kath.* Speak it here.  
There 's nothing I have done yet, o' my conscience,  
Deserves a corner: would all other women  
Could speak this with as free a soul as I do!  
My lords, I care not, (so much I am happy  
Above a number) if my actions  
Were tried by every tongue, every eye saw them,  
Envy and base opinion set against them,  
I know my life so even. If your business  
Seek me out, and that way I am wise in,  
Out with it boldly: truth loves open dealing.

*Wol.* *Tanta est erga te mentis integritas, regina serenis-  
sima, —*

*Q. Kath.* O, good my lord, no Latin:  
I am not such a truant since my coming,  
As not to know the language I have liv'd in:  
A strange tongue makes my cause more strange, suspicious;  
Pray, speak in English. Here are some will thank you,  
If you speak truth, for their poor mistress' sake:  
Believe me, she has had much wrong. Lord cardinal,  
The willing'st sin I ever yet committed,  
May be absolv'd in English.

*Wol.* Noble lady,  
I am sorry, my integrity should breed,  
(And service to his majesty and you)  
So deep suspicion, where all faith was meant.  
We come not by the way of accusation,  
To taint that honour every good tongue blesses,  
Nor to betray any your way to sorrow;

so much, good lady; but to know  
 and minded in the weighty difference  
 e king and you, and to deliver,  
 and honest men, our just opinions,  
 rts to your cause.

Most honour'd Madam,  
 York, — out of his noble nature,  
 edience he still bore your grace,  
 like a good man, your late censure  
 truth and him, (which was too far) —  
 I do, in a sign of peace,  
 and his counsel.

To betray me. [Aside  
 I thank you both for your good wills,  
 e honest men, (pray God, ye prove so!)  
 make ye suddenly an answer,  
 int of weight, so near mine honour,  
 my life, I fear,) with my weak wit,  
 men of gravity and learning,  
 know not. I was set at work  
 maids; full little, God knows, looking  
 ich men, or such business.  
 : that I have been, for I feel  
 f my greatness, good your graces,  
 time and counsel for my cause.  
 : a woman, friendless, hopeless.  
 fadam, you wrong the king's love with these fears:  
 and friends are infinite.

In England,  
 my profit: can you think, lords,  
 glishman dare give me counsel?  
 n friend, 'gainst his highness' pleasure,  
 be grown so desperate to be honest)  
 bject? Nay, forsooth, my friends,  
 ist weigh out my afflictions,  
 trust must grow to, live not here:



They are, as all my other comforts, far hence,  
In mine own country, lords.

*Cam.* I would, your grace  
Would leave your griefs, and take my counsel.

*Q. Kath.* How, Sir?

*Cam.* Put your main cause into the king's protection;  
He's loving, and most gracious: 't will be much  
Both for your honour better, and your cause;  
For if the trial of the law o'ertake you,  
You'll part away disgrac'd.

*Wol.* He tells you rightly.

*Q. Kath.* Ye tell me what ye wish for both, — my ruin.  
Is this your Christian counsel? out upon ye!  
Heaven is above all yet: there sits a Judge  
That no king can corrupt.

*Cam.* Your rage mistakes us.

*Q. Kath.* The more shame for ye! holy men I thought ye,  
Upon my soul, two reverend cardinal virtues;  
But cardinal sins, and hollow hearts, I fear ye.  
Mend them for shame, my lords. Is this your comfort?  
The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady?  
A woman lost among ye, laugh'd at, scorn'd?  
I will not wish ye half my miseries,  
I have more charity; but say, I warn'd ye:  
Take heed, for heaven's sake, take heed, lest at once  
The burden of my sorrows fall upon ye.

*Wol.* Madam, this is a mere distraction;  
You turn the good we offer into envy.

*Q. Kath.* Ye turn me into nothing. Woe upon ye,  
And all such false professors! Would ye have me  
If ye have any justice, any pity,  
I shall be any thing but churchmen's habits)  
Put my sick cause into his hands that hates me?  
Alas! he has banish'd me his bed already;  
His love, too long ago: I am old, my lords,  
And all the fellowship I hold now with him  
Is only my obedience. What can happen

To me above this wretchedness? all your studies  
Make me a curse like this.

*Cam.*

Your fears are worse.

*Q. Kath.* Have I liv'd thus long — (let me speak myself,  
Since virtue finds no friends,) — a wife, a true one?  
A woman (I dare say without vain-glory)  
Never yet branded with suspicion?  
Have I with all my full affections  
Still met the king? lov'd him next heaven? obey'd him?  
Been, out of fondness, superstitious to him?  
Almost forgot my prayers to content him?  
And am I thus rewarded? 't is not well, lords.  
Bring me a constant woman to her husband,  
One that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his pleasure,  
And to that woman, when she has done most,  
Yet will I add an honour, — a great patience.

*Wol.* Madam, you wander from the good we aim at.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, I dare not make myself so guilty,  
To give up willingly that noble title  
Your master wed me to: nothing but death  
Shall e'er divorce my dignities.

*Wol.*

Pray, hear me.

*Q. Kath.* Would I had never trod this English earth,  
Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it!  
Ye have angels' faces, but heaven knows your hearts.  
What will become of me now, wretched lady?  
I am the most unhappy woman living. —  
Alas! poor wenches, where are now your fortunes!

[*To her Women.*

Shipwreck'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,  
No friends, no hope, no kindred weep for me,  
Almost no grave allow'd me. — Like the lily,  
That once was mistress of the field and flourish'd,  
I'll hang my head, and perish.

*Wol.*

If your grace

Could but be brought to know our ends are honest,  
You 'd feel more comfort. Why should we, good lady,

Upon what cause, wrong you? alas! our places,  
The way of our profession is against it:  
We are to cure such sorrows, not to sow them.  
For goodness' sake, consider what you do;  
How you may hurt yourself, ay, utterly  
Grow from the king's acquaintance by this carriage.  
The hearts of princes kiss obedience,  
So much they love it; but to stubborn spirits,  
They swell, and grow as terrible as storms.  
I know, you have a gentle, noble temper,  
A soul as even as a calm: pray, think us  
Those we profess, peace-makers, friends, and servants  
*Cam.* Madam, you'll find it so. You wrong your  
With these weak women's fears: a noble spirit,  
As yours was put into you, ever casts  
Such doubts, as false coin, from it. The king loves you  
Beware, you lose it not: for us, if you please  
To trust us in your business, we are ready  
To use our utmost studies in your service.

*Q. Kath.* Do what ye will, my lords: and, pray, let  
If I have us'd myself unmannerly.  
You know I am a woman, lacking wit  
To make a seemly answer to such persons.  
Pray do my service to his majesty:  
He has my heart yet, and shall have my prayers,  
While I shall have my life. Come, reverend fathers;  
Bestow your counsels on me: she now begs,  
That little thought, when she set footing here,  
She should have bought her dignities so dear.

## SCENE II.

Ante-chamber to the King's Apartment.

*Enter the Duke of NORFOLK, the Duke of SUFFOLK, the  
SURREY, and the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Nor.* If you will now unite in your complaints,  
And force them with a constancy, the cardinal

Cannot stand under them: if you omit  
The offer of this time, I cannot promise,  
But that you shall sustain more new disgraces,  
With these you bear already.

*Sur.* I am joyful  
To meet the least occasion, that may give me  
Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke,  
To be reveng'd on him.

*Suf.* Which of the peers  
Have uncontentn'd gone by him, or at least  
Strangely neglected? when did he regard  
The stamp of nobleness in any person,  
Out of himself?

*Cham.* My lords, you speak your pleasures.  
What he deserves of you and me, I know;  
What we can do to him, (though now the time  
Gives way to us) I much fear. If you cannot  
Bar his access to the king, never attempt  
Any thing on him, for he hath a witchcraft  
Over the king in 's tongue.

*Nor.* O! fear him not;  
His spell in that is out: the king hath found  
Matter against him, that for ever mars  
The honey of his language. No, he 's settled,  
Not to come off, in his displeasure.

*Sur.* Sir,  
I should be glad to hear such news as this  
Once every hour.

*Nor.* Believe it, this is true.  
In the divorce his contrary proceedings  
Are all unfolded; wherein he appears,  
As I could wish mine enemy.

*Sur.* How came  
His practices to light?

*Suf.* Most strangely.

*Sur.* O! how? how?

*Suf.* The cardinal's letter to the pope miscarried,

And came to the eye o' the king; wherein was read,  
 How that the cardinal did entreat his holiness  
 To stay the judgment o' the divorce; for if  
 It did take place, "I do," quoth he, "perceive,  
 My king is tangled in affection to  
 A creature of the queen's, lady Anne Bullen."

*Sur.* Has the king this?

*Suf.*

Believe it.

*Sur.*

Will this work?

*Cham.* The king in this perceives him, how he coasts,  
 And hedges, his own way. But in this point  
 All his tricks founder, and he brings his physic  
 After his patient's death: the king already  
 Hath married the fair lady.

*Sur.*

Would he had!

*Suf.* May you be happy in your wish, my lord;  
 For, I profess, you have it.

*Sur.*

Now all my joy

Trace the conjunction!

*Suf.*

My amen to 't

*Nor.*

All men's.

*Suf.* There's order given for her coronation:  
 Marry, this is yet but young, and may be left  
 To some ears unrecounted. — But, my lords,  
 She is a gallant creature, and complete  
 In mind and feature: I persuade me, from her  
 Will fall some blessing to this land, which shall  
 In it be memoriz'd.

*Sur.*

But, will the king

Digest this letter of the cardinal's?

Lord forbid!

*Nor.*

Marry, amen!

*Suf.*

No, no:

There be more wasps that buz about his nose,  
 Will make this sting the sooner. Cardinal Campeius  
 Is stolen away to Rome; hath ta'en no leave;  
 Has left the cause o' the king unhandled, and

I, as the agent of our cardinal,  
 and all his plot. I do assure you  
 I cried, ha! at this.

n. Now, God incense him,  
 him cry ha! louder.

But, my lord,  
 returns Cranmer?

He is return'd, in his opinions, which  
 satisfied the king for his divorce,  
 and with all famous colleges  
 in Christendom. Shortly, I believe,  
 and marriage shall be publish'd, and  
 nation. Katharine no more  
 call'd queen, but princess dowager,  
 low to prince Arthur.

This same Cranmer's  
 my fellow, and hath ta'en much pain  
 in his business.

He has; and we shall see him  
 as archbishop.

So I hear.

'T is so.

final —

*Enter WOLSEY and CROMWELL.*

Observe, observe; he's moody.  
 The packet, Cromwell, gave it you the king?  
 n. To his own hand, in his bedchamber.  
 Look'd he o' th' inside of the paper?

n. Presently  
 unseal them, and the first he view'd,  
 with a serious mind; a heed  
 in his countenance: you he bade  
 him here this morning.

Is he ready  
 to go abroad?

n. I think, by this he is. [Exit CROMWELL.]

*Wol.* Leave me awhile. —

It shall be to the duchess of Alencon,  
The French king's sister: he shall marry her. —  
Anne Bullen? No; I'll no Anne Bullens for him:  
There's more in 't than fair visage. — Bullen!  
No, we'll no Bullens. — Speedily I wish  
To hear from Rome. — The marchioness of Pembroke!

*Nor.* He's discontented.

*Suf.* May be, he hears the king

Does whet his anger to him.

*Sur.* Sharp enough,

Lord! for thy justice.

*Wol.* The late queen's gentlewoman, a knight's daughter  
To be her mistress' mistress! the queen's queen! —  
This candle burns not clear: 't is I must snuff it;  
Then, out it goes. — What though I know her virtuous,  
And well deserving, yet I know her for  
A spleeny Lutheran; and not wholesome to  
Our cause, that she should lie i' the bosom of  
Our hard-rul'd king. Again, there is sprung up  
An heretic, an arch one, Cranmer; one  
Hath crawl'd into the favour of the king,  
And is his oracle.

*Nor.* He is vex'd at something.

*Suf.* I would, 't were something that would fret the str  
The master-cord on 's heart!

*Enter the King, reading a Schedule; and Lovell.*

*Suf.* The king, the king.

*R. Hen.* What piles of wealth hath he accumulated,  
To his own portion! and what expence by the hour  
Seems to flow from him! How, i' the name of thrift,  
Does he rake this together? — Now, my lords;  
Saw you the cardinal?

*Nor.* My lord, we have

*Stood here observing him. Some strange commotion  
Is in his brain: he bites his lip, and starts;*

Stops on a sudden, looks upon the ground,  
Then, lays his finger on his temple; straight,  
Springs out into fast gait; then, stops again,  
Strikes his breast hard; and anon, he casts  
His eye against the moon. In most strange postures  
We have seen him set himself.

*R. Hen.* It may well be:  
There is a mutiny in 's mind. This morning  
Papers of state he sent me to peruse,  
As I requir'd; and, wot you, what I found  
There, on my conscience, put unwittingly?  
Forsooth an inventory, thus importing, —  
The several parcels of his plate, his treasure,  
Rich stuffs, and ornaments of household, which  
I find at such proud rate, that it out-speaks  
Possession of a subject.

*Nor.* It 's heaven's will:  
Some spirit put this paper in the packet,  
To bless your eye withal.

*R. Hen.* If we did think  
His contemplation were above the earth,  
And fix'd on spiritual object, he should still  
Dwell in his musings; but, I am afraid,  
His thinkings are below the moon, not worth  
His serious considering.

*[He takes his seat, and whispers LOVELL, who goes  
to WOLSEY.]*

*Wol.* Heaven forgive me!  
Ever God bless your highness.

*R. Hen.* Good my lord,  
You are full of heavenly stuff, and bear the inventory  
Of your best graces in your mind, the which  
You were now running o'er: you have scarce time  
To steal from spiritual leisure a brief span,  
To keep your earthly audit. Sure, in that  
deem you an ill husband, and am glad  
To have you therein my companion.

*IV.*



*Wol.*

Sir,

For holy offices I have a time; a time  
 To think upon the part of business, which  
 I bear i' the state; and nature does require  
 Her times of preservation, which, perforce,  
 I her frail son, amongst my brethren mortal,  
 Must give my tendance to.

*K. Hen.*

You have said well.

*Wol.* And ever may your highness yoke together,  
 As I will lend you cause, my doing well  
 With my well saying!

*K. Hen.*

'T is well said again;

And 't is a kind of good deed, to say well:  
 And yet words are no deeds. My father lov'd you;  
 He said he did, and with his deed did crown  
 His word upon you: since I had my office,  
 I have kept you next my heart; have not alone  
 Employ'd you where high profits might come home,  
 But par'd my present havings, to bestow  
 My bounties upon you.

*Wol.*

What should this mean?

*Sur.* The Lord increase this business!

[

*K. Hen.*

Have I not made

The prime man of the state? I pray you, tell me,  
 If what I now pronounce you have found true;  
 And, if you may confess it, say withal,  
 If you are bound to us, or no. What say you?

*Wol.* My sovereign, I confess, your royal graces,

Shower'd on me daily, have been more than could  
 My studied purposes requite; which went  
 Beyond all man's endeavours: my endeavours  
 Have ever come too short of my desires,  
 Yet fill'd with my abilities. Mine own ends  
 Have been mine so, that evermore they pointed  
 To the good of your most sacred person, and  
 The profit of the state. For your great graces  
 Heap'd upon me, poor undeserver, I

ing render but allegiant thanks ;  
 rs to heaven for you ; my loyalty ,  
 ver has , and ever shall be growing ,  
 1 , that winter , kill it .

m. Fairly answer'd :  
 nd obedient subject is  
 llustrated. The honour of it  
 the act of it ; as , i' the contrary ,  
 erness is the punishment. I presume ,  
 y hand has open'd bounty to you ,  
 dropp'd love , my power rain'd honour , more  
 an any ; so your hand , and heart ,  
 in , and every function of your power ,  
 notwithstanding that your bond of duty ,  
 e in love's particular , be more  
 your friend , than any .

I do profess ,  
 your highness' good I ever labour'd  
 n mine own : that am , have , and will be —  
 all the world should crack their duty to you ,  
 w it from their soul ; though perils did  
 as thick as thought could make them , and  
 1 forms more horrid) yet my duty ,  
 1 rock against the chiding flood ,  
 ie approach of this wild river break ,  
 d unshaken yours .

m. 'T is nobly spoken.  
 ice , lords , he has a loyal breast ,  
 ave seen him open 't. — Read o'er this :

*[Giving him Papers.]*

er , this ; and then to breakfast , with  
 etite you have .

*[Exit King , frowning upon Cardinal WOLSKY : the  
 Nobles throng after him , smiling , and whisper'g.]*

What should this mean ?

Iden anger 's this ? how have I reap'd it ?  
 frowning from me , as if ruin

Leap'd from his eyes: so looks the chafed lion  
 Upon the daring huntsman that has gall'd him,  
 Then, makes him nothing. I must read this paper;  
 I fear, the story of his anger. — 'T is so:  
 This paper has undone me! — 'T is th' account  
 Of all that world of wealth I have drawn together  
 For mine own ends; indeed, to gain the popedom,  
 And fee my friends in Rome. O negligence!  
 Fit for a fool to fall by. What cross devil  
 Made me put this main secret in the packet  
 I sent the king? Is there no way to cure this?  
 No new device to beat this from his brains?  
 I know 't will stir him strongly; yet I know  
 A way, if it take right, in spite of fortune  
 Will bring me off again. What's this? — "To the Pope?"  
 The letter, as I live, with all the business  
 I writ to his holiness. Nay then, farewell!  
 I have touch'd the highest point of all my greatness,  
 And from that full meridian of my glory,  
 I haste now to my setting: I shall fall  
 Like a bright exhalation in the evening,  
 And no man see me more.

*Re-enter the Dukes of NORFOLK and SUFFOLK, the Earl  
 SURREY, and the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Nor.* Hear the king's pleasure, cardinal; who command  
 To render up the great seal presently  
 Into our hands, and to confine yourself  
 To Asher-house, my lord of Winchester's,  
 Till you hear farther from his highness.

*Wol.*

*Stay:*

Where's your commission, lords? words cannot carry  
 Authority so weighty.

*Suf.*

Who dare cross them,  
 Bearing the king's will from his mouth expressly?

*Wol.* Till I find more than will, or words, to do it,  
 (I mean your malice) know, officious lords,

nd must deny it. Now, I feel  
 coarse metal ye are moulded, — envy.  
 rly ye fellow my disgraces,  
 d ye! and how sleek and wanton  
 in every thing may bring my ruin!  
 ur envious courses, men of malice;  
 Christian warrant for them, and, no doubt,  
 ill find their fit rewards. That seal,  
 with such a violence, the king,  
 and your master) with his own hand gave me;  
 enjoy it, with the place and honours,  
 y life, and to confirm his goodness, •  
 letters patent. Now, who 'll take it?  
 The king that gave it.

It must be himself, then.

Thou art a proud traitor, priest.

Proud lord, thou liest:

ese forty hours Surrey durst better  
 at that tongue, than said so.

Thy ambition,

let sin, robb'd this bewailing land  
 Buckingham, my father-in-law:  
 of all thy brother cardinals,  
 e, and all thy best parts bound together)  
 ot a hair of his. Plague of your policy!  
 ne deputy for Ireland,  
 his succour, from the king, from all  
 t have mercy on the fault thou gav'st him;  
 ur great goodness, out of holy pity,  
 him with an axe.

This, and all else  
 ug lord can lay upon my credit,  
 is most false. The duke by law  
 deserts: how innocent I was  
 private malice in his end,  
 ury and foul cause can witness.  
 any words, lord, I should tell you,

You have as little honesty as honour,  
That in the way of loyalty and truth  
Toward the king, my ever royal master,  
Dare mate a sounder man than Surrey can be,  
And all that love his follies.

*Sur.*

By my soul,

Your long coat, priest, protects you: thou should'st feel  
My sword i' the life-blood of thee else. — My lords,  
Can ye endure to hear this arrogance?  
And from this fellow? If we live thus tamely,  
To be thus jaded by a piece of scarlet,  
Farewell nobility; let his grace go forward,  
And dare us with his cap, like larks.

*Wol.*

All goodness

Is poison to thy stomach.

*Sur.*

Yes, that goodness

Of gleaning all the land's wealth into one,  
Into your own hands, cardinal, by extortion;  
The goodness of your intercepted packets,  
You writ to the pope, against the king; your goodness,  
Since you provoke me, shall be most notorious. —  
My lord of Norfolk, — as you are truly noble,  
As you respect the common good, the state  
Of our despis'd nobility, or issues,  
(Who, if he live, will scarce be gentlemen)  
Produce the grand sum of his sins, the articles  
Collected from his life: — I'll startle you  
Worse than the sacring bell, when the brown wench  
Lay kissing in your arms, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How much, methinks, I could despise this man,  
But that I am bound in charity against it.

*Nor.* Those articles, my lord, are in the king's hand;  
But, thus much, they are foul ones.

*Wol.*

So much fairer,

And spotless, shall mine innocence arise,  
When the king knows my truth.

*Sur.*

This cannot save you.

I thank my memory, I yet remember  
Some of these articles; and out they shall.  
Now, if you can blush, and cry guilty, cardinal,  
You 'll show a little honesty.

*Wol.* Speak on, Sir;  
I dare your worst objections: if I blush,  
It is to see a nobleman want manners.

*Sur.* I had rather want those, than my head. Have at you.  
First, that without the king's assent or knowledge,  
You wrought to be a legate; by which power  
You maim'd the jurisdiction of all bishops.

*Nor.* Then, that in all you writ to Rome, or else  
To foreign princés, *Ego et Rex meus*  
Was still inscrib'd; in which you brought the king  
To be your servant.

*Suf.* Then, that without the knowledge  
Either of king or council, when you went  
Ambassador to the emperor, you made bold  
To carry into Flanders the great seal.

*Sur.* Item, you sent a large commission  
To Gregory de Cassalis, to conclude,  
Without the king's will or the state's allowance,  
A league between his highness and Ferrara.

*Suf.* That out of mere ambition you have caus'd  
Your holy hat to be stamp'd on the king's coin.

*Sur.* Then, that you have sent innumerable substance,  
(By what means got, I leave to your own conscience)  
To furnish Rome, and to prepare the ways  
You have for dignities; to the mere undoing  
Of all the kingdom. Many more there are;  
Which, since they are of you, and odious,  
I will not taint my mouth with.

*Cham.* O my lord!  
Press not a falling man too far; 't is virtue.  
His faults lie open to the laws: let them,  
Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to see him  
So little of his great self.

*Sur.* I forgive him.

*Suf.* Lord cardinal, the king's farther pleasure is, —  
Because all those things, you have done of late  
By your power legatine within this kingdom,  
Fall into the compass of a *præmunire*, —  
That therefore such a writ be sued against you;  
To forfeit all your goods, lands, tenements,  
Chattels, and whatsoever, and to be  
Out of the king's protection. — This is my charge.

*Nor.* And so we'll leave you to your meditations,  
How to live better. For your stubborn answer,  
About the giving back the great seal to us,  
The king shall know it, and, no doubt, shall thank you.  
So, fare you well, my little good lord cardinal.

[*Exeunt all but Wol.*]

*Wol.* So, farewell to the little good you bear me.  
Farewell! a long farewell, to all my greatness!  
This is the state of man: to-day he puts forth  
The tender leaves of hopes, to-morrow blossoms,  
And bears his blushing honours thick upon him:  
The third day comes a frost, a killing frost;  
And, — when he thinks, good easy man, full surely  
His greatness is a ripening, — nips his root,  
And then he falls, as I do. I have ventur'd,  
Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,  
This many summers in a sea of glory,  
But far beyond my depth: my high blown pride  
At length broke under me; and now has left me  
Weary, and old with service, to the mercy  
Of a rude stream, that must for ever hide me.  
Vain pomp and glory of this world, I hate ye:  
If feel my heart new open'd. O! how wretched  
Is that poor man, that hangs on princes' favours.  
There is, betwixt that smile we would aspire to,  
That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin,  
More pangs and fears than wars or women have;

When he falls, he falls like Lucifer,  
No hope again. —

*Enter CROMWELL, amazedly.*

Why, how now, Cromwell!

*m.* I have no power to speak, Sir.

*l.* What! amaz'd

misfortunes? can thy spirit wonder,  
A man should decline? Nay, an you weep,  
Then indeed.

*m.* How does your grace?

*l.* Why, well:

So truly happy, my good Cromwell.  
Myself now; and I feel within me  
Above all earthly dignities,  
And quiet conscience. The king has cur'd me,  
I thank his grace, and from these shoulders,  
Uin'd pillars, out of pity, taken  
Would sink a navy — too much honour.  
A burden, Cromwell, 't is a burden,  
Aavy for a man that hopes for heaven.

*m.* I am glad your grace has made that right use of it.

*l.* I hope I have: I am able now, methinks,  
(A fortitude of soul I feel)  
More miseries, and greater far,  
My weak-hearted enemies dare offer.  
News abroad?

*m.* The heaviest, and the worst,  
Displeasure with the king.

*l.* God bless him!

*m.* The next is, that Sir Thomas More is chosen  
Chancellor in your place.

*l.* That's somewhat sudden;  
's a learned man. May he continue  
His highness' favour, and do justice  
His sake, and his conscience; that his bones,  
He has run his course and sleeps in blessings,



May have a tomb of orphans' tears wept on 'em!  
What more?

*Crom.* That Cranmer is returned with welcome,  
Install'd lord archbishop of Canterbury.

*Wol.* That's news indeed!

*Crom.* Last, that the lady Anne  
Whom the king hath in secrecy long married,  
This day was view'd in open, as his queen,  
Going to chapel; and the voice is now  
Only about her coronation.

*Wol.* There was the weight that pulled me down. O  
well!

The king has gone beyond me: all my glories  
In that one woman I have lost for ever.  
No sun shall ever usher forth mine honours,  
Or gild again the noble troops that waited  
Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me, Cromwell;  
I am a poor fallen man, unworthy now  
To be thy lord and master. Seek the king;  
(That sun, I pray, may never set!) I have told him  
What, and how true thou art: he will advance thee.  
Some little memory of me will stir him,  
(I know his noble nature) not to let  
Thy hopeful service perish too. Good Cromwell,  
Neglect him not; make use now, and provide  
For thine own future safety.

*Crom.* O my lord!  
Must I then leave you? must I needs forego  
So good, so noble, and so true a master?  
Bear witness all that have no hearts of iron,  
With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his lord. —  
The king shall have my service; but my prayers,  
For ever and for ever, shall be yours.

*Wol.* Cromwell, I did not think to shed a tear  
In all my miseries; but thou hast forc'd me,  
Out of thy honest truth, to play the woman.  
Let's dry our eyes; and thus far hear me, Cromwell:

And, — when I am forgotten, as I shall be,  
 And sleep in dull cold marble, where no mention  
 Of me more must be heard of, — say, I taught thee,  
 Say, Wolsey, that once trod the ways of glory,  
 And sounded all the depths and shoals of honour,  
 Found thee a way, out of his wreck, to rise in;  
 A sure and safe one, though thy master miss'd it.  
 Mark but my fall, and that that ruin'd me.  
 Cromwell, I charge thee, fling away ambition:  
 By that sin fell the angels; how can man, then,  
 The image of his Maker, hope to win by 't?  
 Love thyself last: cherish those hearts that hate thee:  
 Corruption wins not more than honesty.  
 Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace,  
 To silence envious tongues: be just, and fear not.  
 Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's,  
 Thy God's, and truth's: then, if thou fall'st, O Cromwell!  
 Thou fall'st a blessed martyr.  
 Serve the king; and, — Pr'ythee, lead me in:  
 There take an inventory of all I have,  
 To the last penny; 't is the king's: my robe,  
 And my integrity to heaven, is all  
 I dare now call mine own. O Cromwell, Cromwell!  
 Had I but serv'd my God with half the zeal  
 I serv'd my king, he would not in mine age  
 Have left me naked to mine enemies.

*Crom.* Good Sir, have patience.

*Wol.*

So I have. Farewell

The hopes of court: my hopes in heaven do dwell.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV. SCENE I.

A Street in Westminster.

*Enter Two Gentlemen, meeting.*

*1 Gent.* You're well met once again.

*2 Gent.* So are you.

1 *Gent.* You come to take your stand here, and bet  
The lady Anne pass from her coronation?

2 *Gent.* 'T is all my business. At our last encount  
The duke of Buckingham came from his trial.

1 *Gent.* 'T is very true; but that time offer'd sorrow  
This, general joy.

2 *Gent.* 'T is well: the citizens,  
I am sure, have shown at full their royal minds;  
As, let 'em have their rights, they are ever forward  
In celebration of this day with shows,  
Pageants, and sights of honour.

1 *Gent.* Never greater;  
Nor, I 'll assure you, better taken, Sir.

2 *Gent.* May I be bold to ask what that contains,  
That paper in your hand?

1 *Gent.* Yes; 't is the list  
Of those that claim their offices this day,  
By custom of the coronation.

The duke of Suffolk is the first, and claims  
To be high steward: next, the duke of Norfolk,  
He to be earl marshal. You may read the rest.

2 *Gent.* I thank you, Sir: had I not known those cu  
I should have been beholding to your paper.  
But, I beseech you, what 's become of Katharine.  
The princess dowager? how goes her business?

1 *Gent.* That I can tell you too. The archbishop  
Of Canterbury, accompanied with other  
Learned and reverend fathers of his order,  
Held a late court at Dunstable, six miles off  
From Ampthill, where the princess lay; to which  
She was often cited by them, but appear'd not:  
And, to be short, for not appearance, and  
The king's late scruple, by the main assent  
Of all these learned men she was divorc'd,  
And the late marriage made of none effect:  
Since which she was removed to Kimbolton,  
Where she remains now, sick.

2 Gent.

Alas, good lady! —

[*Trumpets.*

The trumpets sound: stand close, the queen is coming.

[*Hautboys.*

### THE ORDER OF THE CORONATION.

*A lively flourish of Trumpets.*

1. Then, two Judges.

2. Lord Chancellor, with purse and mace before him

3. Choristers singing.

[*Music.*

4. Mayor of London bearing the mace. Then, Garter in his coat of arms; and on his head, he wore a gilt copper crown.

5. Marquess Dorset, bearing a sceptre of gold; on his head a demi-coronal of gold. With him the Earl of Surrey, bearing the rod of silver with the dove; crowned with an earl's coronet. Collars of SS.

6. Duke of Suffolk, in his robe of estate, his coronet on his head, bearing a long white wand, as high-steward. With him, the Duke of Norfolk, with the rod of marshalship; a coronet on his head. Collars of SS.

7. A canopy borne by four of the Cinquo-ports; under it, the Queen in her robe; in her hair, richly adorned with pearl, crowned. On each side her, the Bishops of London and Winchester.

8. The old Duchess of Norfolk, in a coronal of gold, wrought with flowers, bearing the Queen's train.

9. Certain Ladies or Countesses, with plain circlets of gold without flowers.

2 Gent. A royal train, believe me. — These I know:  
Who 's that, that bears the sceptre?

1 Gent.

Marquess Dorset:

and that the earl of Surrey, with the rod.

2 Gent. A bold brave gentleman. That should be  
he duke of Suffolk.

1 Gent.

'T is the same; high-steward.

2 Gent. And that my lord of Norfolk?

1 Gent.

Yes.

2 *Gent.*

Heaven bless thee!

[*Looking on the Queen.*]

Thou hast the sweetest face I ever look'd on: —

Sir, as I have a soul, she is an angel:

Our king has all the Indies in his arms,

And more, and richer, when he strains that lady:

I cannot blame his conscience.

1 *Gent.*

They, that bear

The cloth of honour over her, are four barons

Of the cinque-ports.

2 *Gent.* Those men are happy; and so are all, are near her.

I take it, she that carries up the train

Is that old noble lady, duchess of Norfolk.

1 *Gent.* It is; and all the rest are countesses.

2 *Gent.* Their coronets say so. These are stars, indeed;  
And sometimes falling ones.

1 *Gent.*

No more of that.

[*Exit Procession, with a great flourish of Trumpets.*]

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

God save you, Sir! Where have you been broiling?

3 *Gent.* Among the crowd i' the abbey; where a finger  
Could not be wedg'd in more: I am stifled  
With the mere rankness of their joy.

2 *Gent.* You saw the ceremony?

3 *Gent.* That I did.

1 *Gent.* How was it?

3 *Gent.* Well worth the seeing.

2 *Gent.* Good Sir, speak it to us.

3 *Gent.* As well as I am able. The rich stream  
Of lords, and ladies, having brought the queen  
To a prepar'd place in the choir, fell off  
A distance from her; while her grace sat down  
To rest a while, some half an hour or so,  
In a rich chair of state, opposing freely  
The beauty of her person to the people.  
*Believe me, Sir, she is the goodliest woman*

lay by man: which when the people  
 full view of, such a noise arose  
 rouds make at sea in a stiff tempest,  
 and to as many tunes: hats, cloaks,  
 s, I think) flew up; and had their faces  
 e, this day they had been lost. Such joy  
 w before. Great-bellied women,  
 not half a week to go, like rams  
 l time of war, would shake the press,  
 e them reel before them. No man living  
 r, "This is my wife," there; all were woven  
 ely in one piece.

f. But, what follow'd?

f. At length her grace rose, and with modest paces  
 he altar; where she kneel'd, and saint like  
 air eyes to heaven, and pray'd devoutly.  
 e again, and bow'd her to the people:  
 the archbishop of Canterbury  
 ll the royal makings of a queen;  
 il, Edward Confessor's crown,  
 and bird of peace, and all such emblems  
 y on her: which perform'd, the choir,  
 he choicest music of the kingdom,  
 sung *Te Deum*. So she parted,  
 the same full state pac'd back again  
 place, where the feast is held.

f. Sir,  
 no more call it York-place, that's past;  
 e the cardinal fell, that title's lost:  
 the king's, and call'd — Whitehall.

f. I know it;  
 o lately alter'd, that the old name  
 out me.

f. What two reverend bishops  
 e that went on each side of the queen?

f. *Stokesly and Gardiner*; the one of Winchester,

Newly preferr'd from the king's secretary ;  
The other, London.

2 *Gent.* He of Winchester  
Is held no great good lover of the archbishop's ,  
The virtuous Cranmer.

3 *Gent.* All the land knows that :  
However , yet there 's no great breach ; when it co  
Cranmer will find a friend will not shrink from him

2 *Gent.* Who may that be , I pray you ?

3 *Gent.* Thor  
A man in much esteem with the king , and truly  
A worthy friend . — The king has made him  
Master o' the jewel-house ,  
And one , already , of the privy-council.

2 *Gent.* He will deserve more.

3 *Gent.* Yes , without  
Come , gentlemen , ye shall go my way , which  
Is to the court , and there ye shall be my guests :  
Something I can command . As I walk thither ,  
I 'll tell ye more.

*Both.* You may command us , Sir.

## SCENE II.

Kimbolton.

*Enter KATHARINE , Dowager , sick ; led between*  
*PATIENCE.*

*Grif.* How does your grace ?

*Kath.* O , Griffith ! sit  
My legs , like loaden branches , bow to the earth ,  
Willing to leave their burden . Reach a chair : —  
So , — now , methinks , I feel a little ease .  
Didst thou not tell me , Griffith , as thou led'st me ,  
That the great child of honour , cardinal Wolsey ,  
Was dead ?

*Grif.* Yes , Madam ; but , I think , your gra  
*Out of the pain you suffer'd , gave no ear to 't.*

*Kath.* Pr'ythee, good Griffith, tell me how he died :  
If well, he stepp'd before me, happily,  
For my example.

*Grif.* Well, the voice goes, Madam :  
For after the stout earl Northumberland  
Arrested him at York, and brought him forward,  
As a man sorely tainted, to his answer,  
He fell sick suddenly, and grew so ill,  
He could not sit his mule.

*Kath.* Alas, poor man !

*Grif.* At last, with easy roads, he came to Leicester ;  
Lodg'd in the abbey, where the reverend abbot,  
With all his convent, honourably receiv'd him :  
To whom he gave these words, — “ O father abbot,  
And old man, broken with the storms of state,  
Is come to lay his weary bones among ye ;  
Give him a little earth for charity ! ”  
So went to bed, where eagerly his sickness  
Pursu'd him still ; and three nights after this,  
About the hour of eight, which he himself  
Foretold should be his last, full of repentance,  
Continual meditations, tears, and sorrows,  
He gave his honours to the world again,  
His blessed part to heaven, and slept in peace.

*Kath.* So may he rest : his faults lie gently on him !  
Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak him,  
And yet with charity. — He was a man  
Of an unbounded stomach, ever ranking  
Himself with princes ; one, that by suggestion  
Tied all the kingdom : simony was fair play ;  
His own opinion was his law : i' the presence  
He would say untruths, and be ever double,  
Both in his words and meaning. He was never,  
But where he meant to ruin, pitiful :  
His promises were, as he then was, mighty ;  
But his performance, as he is now ; nothing.



Of his own body he was ill, and gave  
The clergy ill example.

*Grif.* Noble Madam,  
Men's evil manners live in brass; their virtues  
We write in water. May it please your highness  
To hear me speak his good now?

*Rath.* Yes, good Griffith;  
I were malicious else.

*Grif.* This cardinal,  
Though from an humble stock, undoubtedly  
Was fashion'd to much honour from his cradle.  
He was a scholar, and a ripe, and good one;  
Exceeding wise, fair spoken, and persuading:  
Lofty and sour to them that lov'd him not;  
But, to those men that sought him, sweet as summer:  
And though he were unsatisfied in getting,  
(Which was a sin) yet in bestowing, Madam,  
He was most princely. Ever witness for him  
Those twins of learning, that he rais'd in you,  
Ipswich, and Oxford! one of which fell with him,  
Unwilling to outlive the good that did it;  
The other, though unfinish'd, yet so famous,  
So excellent in art, and still so rising,  
That Christendom shall ever speak his virtue.  
His overthrow heap'd happiness upon him;  
For then, and not till then, he felt himself,  
And found the blessedness of being little:  
And, to add greater honours to his age  
Than man could give him, he died fearing God.

*Rath.* After my death I wish no other herald,  
No other speaker of my living actions,  
To keep mine honour from corruption,  
But such an honest chronicler as Griffith.  
Whom I most hated living, thou hast made me,  
With thy religious truth and modesty,  
Now in his ashes honour. Peace be with him! —  
*Patience, be near me still; and set me lower:*

have not long to trouble thee. — Good Griffith,  
 muse the musicians play me that sad note  
 nam'd my knell, whilst I sit meditating  
 on that celestial harmony I go to. *[Sad and solemn music.]*

*Grif.* She is asleep. Good wench, let's sit down quiet,  
 for fear we wake her: — softly, gentle Patience.

*The Vision.* Enter, solemnly tripping one after another, six  
 Personages, clad in white robes, wearing on their heads gar-  
 lands of bays, and golden vizards on their faces; branches of  
 bays, or palm, in their hands. They first congee unto her,  
 then dance; and, at certain changes, the first two hold a  
 spare garland over her head; at which, the other four make  
 reverend curtsies: then, the two that held the garland deliver  
 the same to the other next two, who observe the same order in  
 their changes, and holding the garland over her head. Which  
 done, they deliver the same garland to the last two, who like-  
 wise observe the same order: at which, (as it were by inspira-  
 tion) she makes in her sleep signs of rejoicing, and holdeth up  
 her hands to heaven. And so in their dancing they vanish,  
 carrying the garland with them. The music continues.

*Kath.* Spirits of peace, where are ye? Are ye all gone,  
 And leave me here in wretchedness behind ye?

*Grif.* Madam, we are here.

*Kath.* It is not you I call for.

Why ye none enter, since I slept?

*Grif.* None, Madam.

*Kath.* No! Saw you not, even now a blessed troop  
 invite me to a banquet; whose bright faces  
 cast thousand beams upon me, like the sun?  
 They promis'd me eternal happiness,  
 and brought me garlands, Griffith, which I feel  
 am not worthy yet to wear: I shall, assuredly.

*Grif.* I am most joyful, Madam, such good dreams  
 increase your fancy.

*Kath.* Bid the music leave,  
 they are harsh and heavy to me.

*[Music ceases.]*

*Pat.* Do you note,  
How much her grace is alter'd on the sudden?  
How long her face is drawn? How pale she looks,  
And of an earthy cold? Mark her eyes!

*Grif.* She is going, wench. Pray, pray.

*Pat.* Heaven comfort

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* An 't like your grace, —

*Kath.* You are a saucy fellow:  
Deserve we no more reverence?

*Grif.* You are to blame,  
Knowing she will not lose her wonted greatness,  
To use so rude behaviour: go to; kneel.

*Mess.* I humbly do entreat your highness' pardon;  
My haste made me unmannerly. There is staying  
A gentleman, sent from the king to see you.

*Kath.* Admit him entrance, Griffith: but this fellow  
Let me ne'er see again. [*Exeunt GRIFFITH and Messen*]

*Re-enter GRIFFITH, with CAPUCIUS.*

If my sight fail not,  
You should be lord ambassador from the emperor,  
My royal nephew; and your name Capucius.

*Cap.* Madam, the same, your servant.

*Kath.* O my lord!  
The times, and titles, now are alter'd strangely  
With me, since first you knew me. But, I pray you,  
What is your pleasure with me?

*Cap.* Noble lady,  
First, mine own service to your grace; the next,  
The king's request that I would visit you;  
Who grieves much for your weakness, and by me  
Sends you his princely commendations,  
And heartily entreats you take good comfort.

*Kath.* O! my good lord, that comfort comes too late:  
'T is like a pardon after execution.  
That gentle physic, given in time, had cur'd me;

now I am past all comforts here, but prayers.  
does his highness?

*ap.* Madam, in good health.  
*Kath.* So may he ever do; and ever flourish,  
n I shall dwell with worms, and my poor name  
sh'd the kingdom. — Patience, is that letter,  
is'd you write, yet sent away?

*Kat.* No, Madam.  
[*Giving it to KATHARINE.*]

*Kath.* Sir, I most humbly pray you to deliver  
to my lord the king.

*ap.* Most willing, Madam.  
*Kath.* In which I have commended to his goodness  
model of our chaste loves, his young daughter: —  
lews of heaven fall thick in blessings on her!  
eching him to give her virtuous breeding.  
s young, and of a noble modest nature,  
e, she will deserve well; and a little  
ve her for her mother's sake, that lov'd him,  
en knows how dearly. My next poor petition  
hat his noble grace would have some pity  
my wretched women, that so long,  
follow'd both my fortunes faithfully:  
hich there is not one, I dare avow,  
I now I should not lie) but will deserve,  
irtue, and true beauty of the soul,  
onesty, and decent carriage,  
ght good husband, let him be a noble;  
, sure, those men are happy that shall have them.  
last is, for my men: — they are the poorest,  
poverty could never draw them from me; —  
they may have their wages duly paid them,  
something over to remember me by:  
aven had pleas'd to have given me longer life,  
able means, we had not parted thus.  
se are the whole contents: — and, good my lord,  
hat you love the dearest in this world,

As you wish Christian peace to souls departed,  
Stand these poor people's friend, and urge the king  
To do me this last right.

*Cap.* By heaven, I will,  
Or let me lose the fashion of a man!

*Kath.* I thank you, honest lord. Remember me  
In all humility unto his highness:  
Say, his long trouble now is passing  
Out of this world: tell him, in death I bless'd him,  
For so I will. — Mine eyes grow dim. — Farewell,  
My lord. — Griffith, farewell. — Nay, Patience,  
You must not leave me yet: I must to bed;  
Call in more women. — When I am dead, good wench,  
Let me be us'd with honour: strew me over  
With maiden flowers, that all the world may know  
I was a chaste wife to my grave. Embalm me,  
Then lay me forth: although unqueen'd, yet like  
A queen, and daughter to a king, inter me.  
I can no more. — *[Exeunt, leading KATH.]*

## ACT V. SCENE I.

A Gallery in the Palace.

*Enter GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester, a Page with a  
before him; met by Sir THOMAS LOVELL.*

*Gar.* It's one o'clock, boy, is 't not?

*Boy.* It hath struck

*Gar.* These should be hours for necessities,  
Not for delights; times to repair our nature  
With comforting repose, and not for us  
To waste these times. — Good hour of night, Sir Thomas:  
Whither so late?

*Lov.* Came you from the king, my lord?

*Gar.* I did, Sir Thomas; and left him at primero  
With the duke of Suffolk.

I must to him too,  
go to bed. I'll take my leave.  
Not yet, Sir Thomas Lovell. What's the matter?  
You are in haste: an if there be  
fence belongs to 't, give your friend  
of your late business. Affairs that walk  
say, spirits do) at midnight have  
wilder nature, than the business  
despatch by day.

My lord, I love you,  
commend a secret to your ear  
surer than this work. The queen's in labour,  
in great extremity; and fear'd,  
the labour end.

The fruit she goes with  
easily; that it may find  
and live: but for the stock, Sir Thomas,  
labb'd up now.

Methinks, I could  
n; and yet my conscience says  
d creature, and, sweet lady, does  
better wishes.

But, Sir, Sir, —  
Sir Thomas: y' are a gentleman  
a way; I know you wise, religious;  
e tell you, it will ne'er be well,  
Sir Thomas Lovell, take 't of me,  
r, Cromwell, her two hands, and she,  
in graves.

Now, Sir, you speak of two  
mark'd i' the kingdom. As for Cromwell,  
of the jewel-house, he's made master  
and the king's secretary; farther, Sir,  
e gap and trade of more preferments,  
the time will load him. Th' archbishop  
hand, and tongue; and who dare speak  
against him?

*Gar.* Yes, yes, Sir Thomas,  
 There are that dare; and I myself have ventur'd  
 To speak my mind of him: and, indeed, this day,  
 Sir, (I may tell it you) I think, I have  
 Incens'd the lords o' the council, that he is  
 (For so I know he is, they know he is)  
 A most arch heretic, a pestilence  
 That does infect the land: with which they moved  
 Have broken with the king; who hath so far  
 Given ear to our complaint, (of his great grace  
 And princely care, foreseeing those fell mischiefs  
 Our reasons laid before him) hath commanded,  
 To-morrow morning to the council-board  
 He be convented. He's a rank weed, Sir Thomas,  
 And we must root him out. From your affairs  
 I hinder you too long: good night, Sir Thomas.

*Lov.* Many good nights, my lord. I rest your servant.

[*Exeunt GARDINER and Pag*

*As Lovell is going out, enter the King, and the Duke of  
 Suffolk.*

*R. Hen.* Charles, I will play no more to-night:  
 My mind's not on't; you are too hard for me.

*Suf.* Sir, I did never win of you before.

*R. Hen.* But little, Charles;  
 Nor shall not when my fancy's on my play. —  
 Now, Lovell, from the queen what is the news?

*Lov.* I could not personally deliver to her  
 What you commanded me, but by her woman  
 I sent your message; who return'd her thanks  
 In the greatest humbleness, and desir'd your highness  
 Most heartily to pray for her.

*R. Hen.* What say'st thou? ha!  
 To pray for her? what! is she crying out?

*Lov.* So said her woman; and that her sufferance made  
 Almost each pang a death.

*R. Hen.* Alas, good lady!

*Suf.* God safely quit her of her burden, and  
With gentle travail, to the gladding of  
Your highness with an heir!

*R. Hen.* 'Tis midnight, Charles:  
Pr'ythee, to bed; and in thy prayers remember  
Th' estate of my poor queen. Leave me alone,  
For I must think of that, which company  
Would not be friendly to.

*Suf.* I wish your highness  
A quiet night; and my good mistress will  
Remember in my prayers.

*R. Hen.* Charles, good night. —

[*Exit* **SUFFOLK.**]

*Enter* Sir ANTHONY DENNY.

Well, Sir, what follows?

*Den.* Sir, I have brought my lord the archbishop,  
As you commanded me.

*R. Hen.* Ha! Canterbury?

*Den.* Ay, my good lord.

*R. Hen.* 'Tis true: where is he, Denny?

*Den.* He attends your highness' pleasure.

*R. Hen.* Bring him to us.

[*Exit* **DENNY.**]

*Lov.* This is about that which the bishop spake:  
I am happily come hither.

[*Aside.*]

*Re-enter* **DENNY**, with **CRANMER**.

*R. Hen.* Avoid the gallery.

[*LOVELL seems to stay.*]

Ha! — I have said. — Be gone.

What! —

[*Exeunt* **LOVELL** and **DENNY.**]

*Cran.* I am fearful. — Wherefore frowns he thus?

'Tis his aspect of terror: all's not well.

*R. Hen.* How now, my lord! You do desire to know  
Wherefore I sent for you.

*Cran.* It is my duty

To attend your highness' pleasure.



*R. Hen.*

Pray you, arise,

My good and gracious lord of Canterbury.

Come, you and I must walk a turn together;

I have news to tell you. Come, come, give me your hand.

Ah, my good lord, I grieve at what I speak,

And am right sorry to repeat what follows.

I have, and most unwillingly, of late

Heard many grievous, I do say, my lord,

Grievous complaints of you; which being consider'd

Have mov'd us and our council, that you shall

This morning come before us: where I know,

You cannot with such freedom purge yourself,

But that, till farther trial in those charges

Which will require your answer, you must take

Your patience to you, and be well contented

To make your house our Tower: you a brother of us,

It fits we thus proceed, or else no witness

Would come against you.

*Cran.*

I humbly thank your highness,

And am right glad to catch this good occasion

Most thoroughly to be winnow'd, where my chaff

And corn shall fly asunder; for, I know,

There's none stands under more calumnious tongues,

Than I myself, poor man.

*R. Hen.*

Stand up, good Canterbury:

Thy truth, and thy integrity, is rooted

In us, thy friend. Give me thy hand, stand up:

Pr'ythee, let's walk. Now, by my holy dame,

What manner of man are you? My lord, I look'd

You would have given me your petition, that

I should have ta'en some pains to bring together

Yourself and your accusers; and to have heard you,

Without indurance, farther.

*Cran.*

Most dread liege,

The good I stand on, is my truth, and honesty:

If they shall fail, I, with mine enemies,

Will triumph o'er my person, which I weigh not,

ing of those virtues vacant. I fear nothing  
that can be said against me.

*R. Hen.* Know you not  
how your state stands i' the world, with the whole world?  
Our enemies are many, and not small; their practices  
must bear the same proportion: and not ever  
the justice and the truth o' the question carries  
the due o' the verdict with it. At what ease  
might corrupt minds procure knaves as corrupt  
to swear against you: such things have been done.  
You are potently oppos'd, and with a malice  
of as great size. Ween you of better luck,  
mean in perjur'd witness, than your Master,  
whose minister you are, whiles here he liv'd  
upon this naughty earth? Go to, go to:  
you take a precipice for no leap of danger,  
and woo your own destruction.

*Cran.* God, and your majesty,  
protect mine innocence, or I fall into  
the trap is laid for me!

*R. Hen.* Be of good cheer;  
they shall no more prevail, than we give way to.  
I'll keep comfort to you; and this morning, see  
you do appear before them. If they shall chance,  
on charging you with matters, to commit you,  
the best persuasions to the contrary  
shall not to use, and with what vehemency  
the occasion shall instruct you: if entreaties  
will render you no remedy, this ring  
I'll deliver them, and your appeal to us  
there make before them. — Look, the good man weeps:  
he's honest, on mine honour. God's blest mother!  
I swear, he is true-hearted; and a soul  
none better in my kingdom. — Get you gone,  
and do as I have bid you. — [*Exit CRANMER.*] He has strangled  
his language in his tears.

*Enter an old Lady.*

*Gent.* [*Within.*] Come back: what mean you?

*Lady.* I'll not come back; the tidings that I bring  
Will make my boldness manners. — Now, good angels  
Fly o'er thy royal head, and shade thy person  
Under their blessed wings!

*R. Hen.* Now, by thy looks  
I guess thy message. Is the queen deliver'd?  
Say, ay; and of a boy.

*Lady.* Ay, ay, my liege;  
And of a lovely boy: the God of heaven  
Both now and ever bless her! — 't is a girl,  
Promises boys hereafter. Sir, your queen  
Desires your visitation, and to be  
Acquainted with this stranger: 't is as like you,  
As cherry is to cherry.

*R. Hen.* Lovell, —

*Re-enter LOVELL.*

*Lov.* Sir.

*R. Hen.* Give her an hundred marks. I'll to the queen.

[*Exit King.*]

*Lady.* An hundred marks! By this light, I'll ha' more.  
An ordinary groom is for such payment:  
I will have more, or scold it out of him.  
Said I for this, the girl was like to him?  
I will have more, or else unsay 't; and now,  
While it is hot, I'll put it to the issue.

[*Exeunt*]

## SCENE II.

The Lobby before the Council-Chamber.

*Enter CRANMER; Servants, Door-Keeper, &c. attending.*

*Cran.* I hope, I am not too late; and yet the gentleman,  
That was sent to me from the council, pray'd me  
To make great haste. All fast? what means this? Hoa!  
Who waits there? — Sure, you know me?

*D. Keep.* Yes, my lord;  
But yet I cannot help you.

*Cran.* Why?

*D. Keep.* Your grace must wait, till you be call'd for.

*Enter Doctor BUTTS.*

*Cran.*

So.

*Butts.* This is a piece of malice. I am glad,  
I came this way so happily: the king  
Shall understand it presently.

[*Exit BUTTS.*

*Cran.* 'T is Butts, [Aside.  
The king's physician. As he past along,  
How earnestly he cast his eyes upon me.  
Pray heaven, he sound not my disgrace! For certain,  
This is of purpose laid by some that hate me,  
(God turn their hearts! I never sought their malice)  
To quench mine honour: they would shame to make me  
Wait else at door, a fellow counsellor  
'Mong boys, grooms, and lackeys. But their pleasures  
Must be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience.

*Enter the King and BUTTS, at a window above.*

*Butts.* I'll show your grace the strangest sight, —

*K. Hen.* What 's that, Butts?

*Butts.* I think, your highness saw this many a day.

*K. Hen.* Body o' me, where is it?

*Butts.* There, my lord:

The high promotion of his grace of Canterbury;  
Who holds his state at door, 'mongst pursuivants,  
Pages, and footboys.

*K. Hen.* Ha! 'T is he, indeed.  
Is this the honour they do one another?

'T is well, there 's one above 'em yet. I had thought,  
They had parted so much honesty among 'em,  
(At least good manners) as not thus to suffer  
A man of his place, and so near our favour,  
To dance attendance on their lordships' pleasures,  
And at the door too, like a post with packets.

By holy Mary, Butts, there's knavery:  
 Let 'em alone, and draw the curtain close;  
 We shall hear more anon. —

#### THE COUNCIL-CHAMBER.

*Enter the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of SUFFOLK, SURREY, Lord Chamberlain, GARDINER, and CROMWELL. The Chancellor places himself at the upper end of the left hand; a seat being left void above him, Archbishop of CANTERBURY. The rest seat themselves on each side. CROMWELL at the lower end, as secretary.*

*Chan.* Speak to the business, master secretary:  
 Why are we met in council?

*Crom.* Please your honours,  
 The chief cause concerns his grace of Canterbury.

*Gar.* Has he had knowledge of it?

*Crom.* Yes.

*Nor.* Who w

*D. Keep.* Without, my noble lords?

*Gar.* Yes.

*D. Keep.* My lord ar

And has done half an hour, to know your pleasures.

*Chan.* Let him come in.

*D. Keep.* Your grace may enter now

[CRANMER approaches the Countess]

*Chan.* My good lord archbishop, I am very sorry  
 To sit here at this present, and behold  
 That chair stand empty: but we all are men,  
 In our own natures frail, and capable  
 Of our flesh; few are angels: out of which frailty,  
 And want of wisdom, you, that best should teach us,  
 Have misdemean'd yourself, and not a little,  
 Toward the king first, then his laws, in filling  
 The whole realm, by your teaching, and your chaplains  
 (For so we are inform'd) with new opinions,  
 Divers, and dangerous; which are heresies,  
 And, not reform'd, may prove pernicious.

Which reformation must be sudden too,  
 ords; for those that tame wild horses  
 not in their hands to make them gentle,  
 their mouths with stubborn bits, and spur them,  
 bey the manage. If we suffer,  
 easiness and childish pity  
 n's honour, this contagious sickness,  
 ll physic: and what follows then?  
 ns, uproars, with a general taint  
 le state: as, of late days, our neighbours,  
 Germany, can dearly witness,  
 pitied in our memories.

My good lords, hitherto, in all the progress  
 of life and office, I have labour'd,  
 no little study, that my teaching,  
 wrong course of my authority,  
 one way, and safely; and the end  
 to do well: nor is there living  
 with a single heart, my lords,)  
 that more detests; more stirs against,  
 his private conscience and his place,  
 for a public peace, than I do.  
 In, the king may never find a heart  
 allegiance in it! Men, that make  
 crooked malice nourishment,  
 the best. I do beseech your lordships,  
 in case of justice, my accusers,  
 they will, may stand forth face to face,  
 to urge against me.

Nay, my lord,  
 not he: you are a counsellor,  
 at virtue no man dare accuse you.  
 My lord, because we have business of more moment,  
 be short with you. 'Tis his highness' pleasure,  
 consent, for better trial of you,  
 that you be committed to the Tower:  
 being but a private man again,

You shall know many dare accuse you boldly,  
More than, I fear, you are provided for.

*Cran.* Ah! my good lord of Winchester, I thank you;  
You are always my good friend: if your will pass,  
I shall both find your lordship judge and juror,  
You are so merciful. I see your end;  
'T is my undoing. Love, and meekness, lord,  
Become a churchman better than ambition:  
Win straying souls with modesty again,  
Cast none away. That I shall clear myself,  
Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience,  
I make as little doubt, as you do conscience,  
In doing daily wrongs. I could say more,  
But reverence to your calling makes me modest.

*Gar.* My lord, my lord, you are a sectary;  
That's the plain truth: your painted gloss discovers,  
To men that understand you, words and weakness.

*Crom.* My lord of Winchester, you are a little,  
By your good favour, too sharp: men so noble,  
However faulty, yet should find respect  
For what they have been: 't is a cruelty,  
To load a falling man.

*Gar.* Good master secretary,  
I cry your honour mercy: you may, worst  
Of all this table, say so.

*Crom.* Why, my lord?

*Gar.* Do not I know you for a favourer  
Of this new sect? ye are not sound.

*Crom.* Not sound?

*Gar.* Not sound, I say.

*Crom.* Would you were half so honest  
Men's prayers, then, would seek you, not their fears.

*Gar.* I shall remember this bold language.

*Crom.* Do.

Remember your bold life too.

*Chan.* This is too much;  
Forbear, for shame, my lords.

*Gar.* I have done.

*Crom.* And I.

*Chan.* Then thus for you, my lord. — It stands agreed,  
I take it, by all voices, that forthwith  
You be convey'd to the Tower a prisoner;  
There to remain, till the king's farther pleasure  
Be known unto us. Are you all agreed, lords?

*All.* We are.

*Cran.* Is there no other way of mercy,  
But I must needs to the Tower, my lords?

*Gar.* What other  
Would you expect? You are strangely troublesome.  
Let some o' the guard be ready there.

*Enter Guard.*

*Cran.* For me?  
Must I go like a traitor thither?

*Gar.* Receive him,  
And see him safe i' the Tower.

*Cran.* Stay, good my lords;  
I have a little yet to say. — Look there, my lords:  
By virtue of that ring I take my cause  
Out of the gripes of cruel men, and give it  
To a most noble judge, the king my master.

*Cham.* This is the king's ring.

*Sur.* 'T is no counterfeit.

*Suf.* 'T is the right ring, by heaven! I told ye all,  
When we first put this dangerous stone a rolling,  
'T would fall upon ourselves.

*Nor.* Do you think, my lords,  
The king will suffer but the little finger  
Of this man to be vex'd?

*Cham.* 'T is now too certain,  
How much more is his life in value with him.  
Would I were fairly out on 't.

*Crom.* My mind gave me,  
In seeking tales and informations,

*IV.*



Against this man, whose honesty the devil ·  
 And his disciples only envy at,  
 Ye blew the fire that burns ye. Now have at ye.

*Enter the King, frowning on them; he takes his seat.*

*Gar.* Dread sovereign, how much are we bound to heaven  
 In daily thanks, that gave us such a prince;  
 Not only good and wise, but most religious:  
 One that in all obedience makes the church  
 The chief aim of his honour; and, to strengthen  
 That holy duty, out of dear respect,  
 His royal self in judgment comes to hear  
 The cause betwixt her and this great offender.

*K. Hen.* You were ever good at sudden commendations,  
 Bishop of Winchester; but know, I come not  
 To hear such flattery now, and in my presence:  
 They are too thin and base to hide offences.  
 To me you cannot reach. You play the spaniel,  
 And think with wagging of your tongue to win me;  
 But, whatsoe'er thou tak'st me for, I 'm sure,  
 Thou hast a cruel nature, and a bloody. —  
 Good man, [*To CRANMER.*] sit down. Now, let me see th  
 proudest,

He that dares most, but wag his finger at thee:  
 By all that 's holy, he had better starve,  
 Than but once think his place becomes thee not.

*Sur.* May it please your grace, —

*K. Hen.* No, Sir, it does not please me.  
 I had thought, I had had men of some understanding  
 And wisdom of my council; but I find none.  
 Was it discretion, lords, to let this man,  
 This good man, (few of you deserve that title)  
 This honest man, wait like a lousy footboy  
 At chamber door? and one as great as you are?  
 Why, what a shame was this! Did my commission  
 Bid ye so far forget yourselves? I gave ye  
 Power, as he was a councillor to try him,

a groom. There's some of ye, I see,  
 out of malice than integrity,  
 I try him to the utmost, had ye mean;  
 ye shall never have while I live.

*an.* Thus far,  
 O dread sovereign, may it like your grace  
 my tongue excuse all. What was purpos'd  
 rning his imprisonment, was rather  
 re be faith in men) meant for his trial,  
 ur purgation to the world, than malice,  
 ire, in me.

*Hen.* Well, well, my lords, respect him:  
 him, and use him well; he's worthy of it.  
 say thus much for him: if a prince  
 e beholding to a subject, I  
 'or his love and service, so to him.  
 me no more ado, but all embrace him:  
 nds, for shame, my lords! — My lord of Canterbury,  
 a suit which you must not deny me;  
 , a fair young maid that yet wants baptism,  
 ust be godfather, and answer for her.

*an.* The greatest monarch now alive may glory  
 h an honour: how may I deserve it,  
 m a poor and humble subject to you?

*Hen.* Come, come, my lord, you'd spare your spoons.  
 all have two noble partners with you;  
 d duchess of Norfolk, and lady marquess Dorset:  
 ese please you?  
 nore, my lord of Winchester, I charge you,  
 ce, and love this man.

*r.* With a true heart,  
 rother-love, I do it.

*m.* And let heaven  
 ss, how dear I hold this confirmation.

*Hen.* Good man! those joyful tears show thy true heart.  
 mmon voice, I see, is verified  
 , which says thus, "Do my lord of Canterbury

A shrewd turn, and he is your friend for ever." —  
 Come, lords, we trifle time away; I long  
 To have this young one made a Christian.  
 As I have made ye one, lords, one remain;  
 So I grow stronger, you more honour gain.

[*Exit*]

## SCENE III.

The Palace Yard.

*Noise and Tumult within. Enter Porter and his Man.*

*Port.* You 'll leave your noise anon, ye rascals: do you t  
 the court for Paris-garden? ye rude slaves, leave your gaping.

[*Within.*] Good master porter, I belong to the larder.

*Port.* Belong to the gallows, and be hanged, you rogue!  
 this a place to roar in? — Fetch me a dozen crab-tree staves,  
 strong ones: these are but switches to them. — I 'll scratch y  
 heads: you must be seeing christenings? Do you look for ale  
 cakes here, you rude rascals?

*Man.* Pray, Sir, be patient: 't is as much impossible,  
 Unless we sweep 'em from the door with cannons,  
 To scatter 'em, as 't is to make 'em sleep  
 On May-day morning; which will never be.  
 We may as well push against Paul's, as stir 'em.

*Port.* How got they in, and be hang'd?

*Man.* Alas, I know not: how gets the tide in?  
 As much as one sound cudgel of four foot  
 (You see the poor remainder) could distribute,  
 I made no spare, Sir.

*Port.* You did nothing, Sir.

*Man.* I am not Samson, nor Sir Guy, nor Colbrand,  
 To mow 'em down before me; but if I spared any,  
 That had a head to hit, either young or old,  
 He or she, cuckold or cuckold-maker,  
 Let me ne'er hope to see a chine again;  
 And that I would not for a cow, God save her.

[*Within.*] Do your hear, master Porter?

*Port.* I shall be with you presently, good master puppy. —  
Keep the door close, sirrah.

*Man.* What would you have me do?

*Port.* What should you do, but knock 'em down by the  
lozens? Is this Moorfields to muster in? or have we some strange  
Indian with the great tool come to court, the women so besiege us?  
Bless me, what a fry of fornication is at door! On my Christian  
conscience, this one christening will beget a thousand: here will  
be father, godfather, and all together.

*Man.* The spoons will be the bigger, Sir. There is a fellow  
somewhat near the door, he should be a brazier by his face, for,  
on my conscience, twenty of the dog-days now reign in 's nose: all  
that stand about him are under the line, they need no other  
penance. That fire-drake did I hit three times on the head, and  
three times was his nose discharged against me: he stands there,  
like a mortar-piece, to blow us. There was a haberdasher's wife  
of small wit near him, that railed upon me till her pink'd porringer  
fell off her head, for kindling such a combustion in the state. I  
miss'd the meteor once, and hit that woman, who cried out,  
clubs! when I might see from far some forty truncheoners draw to  
her succour, which were the hope o' the Strand, where she was  
quartered. They fell on; I made good my place; at length they  
came to the broomstaff to me: I defied 'em still; when suddenly a  
file of boys behind 'em, loose shot, delivered such a shower of  
pebbles, that I was fain to draw mine honour in, and let 'em win  
the work. The devil was amongst 'em, I think, surely.

*Port.* These are the youths that thunder at a play-house, and  
fight for bitten apples; that no audience, but the Tribulation of  
Tower-hill, or the limbs of Limehouse, their dear brothers, are  
able to endure. I have some of 'em in *Limbo Patrum*, and there  
they are like to dance these three days, besides the running ban-  
quet of two beadles, that is to come.

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Cham.* Mercy o' me, what a multitude are here!  
They grow still too; from all parts they are coming,  
As if we kept a fair here! Where are these porters,  
*These lazy knaves?* — Ye have made a fine hand, fellows.

There 's a trim rabble let in. Are all these  
Your faithful friends o' the suburbs? We shall have  
Great store of room, no doubt, left for the ladies,  
When they pass back from the christening.

*Port.* An 't please your  
We are but men; and what so many may do,  
Not being torn a pieces, we have done:  
An army cannot rule 'em.

*Cham.* As I live,  
If the king blame me for 't, I 'll lay ye all  
By the heels, and suddenly; and on your heads  
Clap round fines for neglect. Y' are lazy knaves;  
And here ye lie baiting of bombards, when  
Ye should do service. Hark! the trumpets sound;  
They 're come already from the christening.  
Go, break among the press, and find a way out  
To let the troop pass fairly, or I 'll find  
A Marshalsea shall hold ye play these two months.

*Port.* Make way there for the princess.

*Man.* You great fellow,  
Stand close up, or I 'll make your head ache.

*Port.* You i' the camblet, get up o' the rail;  
I 'll peck you o'er the pales else.

[1]

## SCENE IV.

The Palace at Greenwich.

*Enter Trumpets, sounding; then two Aldermen, Lord Garter, CRANMER, Duke of NORFOLK, with his M. staff, Duke of SUFFOLK, two Noblemen bearing greasing bowls for the christening gifts: then, four Noblemen bearing a canopy, under which the Duchess of NORFOLK mother, bearing the child richly habited in a mantle, borne by a Lady: then follows the Marchioness of C. SET, the other godmother, and Ladies. The Troop pass about the stage, and Garter speaks.*

*Gart.* Heaven,

your endless goodness, send prosperous life,  
and ever happy, to the high and mighty  
of England, Elizabeth!

*Flourish. Enter King, and Train.*

And to your royal grace, and the good queen,

*[Kneeling.]*

our partners, and myself, thus pray: —  
Fort, joy, in this most gracious lady,  
ever laid up to make parents happy,  
richly fall upon ye!

*en.* Thank you, good lord archbishop;  
her name?

Elizabeth.

*en.* Stand up, lord. —

*[The King kisses the Child.]*

His kiss take my blessing: God protect thee!  
His hand I give thy life.

Amen.

*en.* My noble gossips, ye have been too prodigal.  
Ye heartily: so shall this lady,  
she has so much English.

Let me speak, Sir,  
even now bids me; and the words I utter  
think flattery, for they'll find them truth.  
Alas infant, — heaven still move about her! —  
in her cradle, yet now promises  
his land a thousand thousand blessings,  
time shall bring to ripeness. She shall be  
now living can behold that goodness)  
as to all princes living with her,  
what shall succeed: Sheba was never  
jealous of wisdom, and fair virtue,  
his pure soul shall be: all princely graces,  
held up such a mighty piece as this is,  
the virtues that attend the good,  
shall be doubled on her: truth shall nurse her;

Holy and heavenly thoughts still counsel her :  
 She shall be lov'd, and fear'd : her own shall bless her  
 Her foes shake like a field of beaten corn ,  
 And hang their heads with sorrow : good grows with her.  
 In her days , every man shall eat in safety  
 Under his own vine what he plants ; and sing  
 The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours.  
 God shall be truly known ; and those about her  
 From her shall read the perfect ways of honour ,  
 And by those claim their greatness , not by blood.  
 Nor shall this peace sleep with her : but as when  
 The bird of wonder dies , the maiden phoenix ,  
 Her ashes new create another heir ,  
 As great in admiration as herself ;  
 So shall she leave her blessedness to one ,  
 (When heaven shall call her from this cloud of darkness)  
 Who , from the sacred ashes of her honour ,  
 Shall star-like rise , as great in fame as she was ,  
 And so stand fix'd . Peace , plenty , love , truth , terror ,  
 That were the servants to this chosen infant ,  
 Shall then be his , and like a vine grow to him :  
 Wherever the bright sun of heaven shall shine ,  
 His honour and the greatness of his name  
 Shall be , and make new nations : he shall flourish ,  
 And , like a mountain cedar , reach his branches  
 To all the plains about him . Our children's children  
 Shall see this , and bless heaven .

*K. Hen.*

Thou speakest wonders.

*Cran.* She shall be , to the happiness of England ,  
 An aged princess ; many days shall see her ,  
 And yet no day without a deed to crown it .  
 Would I had known no more ! but she must die :  
 She must ; the saints must have her : yet a virgin ,  
 A most unspotted lily shall she pass  
 To the ground , and all the world shall mourn her .

*K. Hen.* O , lord archbishop !

*Thou hast made me now a man : never , before*

This happy child, did I get any thing.  
This oracle of comfort has so pleased me,  
That when I am in heaven I shall desire  
To see what this child does, and praise my Maker. —  
I thank ye all. — To you, my good lord mayor,  
And you, good brethren, I am much beholding:  
I have received much honour by your presence,  
And ye shall find me thankful. — Lead the way, lords: —  
Ye must all see the queen, and she must thank ye;  
She will be sick else. This day, no man think  
He has business at his house, for all shall stay:  
This little one shall make it holiday.

[*Exeunt.*]



## E P I L O G U E.

'T is ten to one, this play can never please  
All that are here. Some come to take their ease,  
And sleep an act or two; but those, we fear,  
We have frighted with our trumpets: so, 't is clear,  
They 'll say, 't is naught: others, to hear the city  
Abus'd extremely, and to cry, — "that 's witty,"  
Which we have not done neither: that, I fear,  
All the expected good we 're like to hear  
For this play, at this time, is only in  
The merciful construction of good women;  
For such a one we show'd 'em. If they smile,  
And say, 't will do, I know, within a while  
All the best men are ours; for 't is ill hap,  
If they hold, when their ladies bid 'em clap.

---

# TRILUS AND CRESSIDA.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

|                                            |                                                                 |                            |
|--------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| King of Troy.                              | ACHILLES,                                                       |                            |
| R,                                         | AJAX,                                                           |                            |
| IS,                                        | ULYSSES,                                                        | } Grecian Com-<br>manders. |
| } his Sons.                                | NESTOR,                                                         |                            |
|                                            | DIOMEDES,                                                       |                            |
|                                            | PATROCLUS,                                                      |                            |
| OBUS,                                      | } THERSITES, a deformed and scur-<br>rilous Grecian.            |                            |
| US,                                        |                                                                 |                            |
| OR,                                        | } Trojan Commanders.                                            |                            |
| AS, a Trojan Priest, taking                | ALEXANDER, Servant to Cressida.                                 |                            |
| ith the Greeks.                            | Servant to Troilus; Servant to Pa-<br>ris; Servant to Diomedes. |                            |
| RUS, Uncle to Cressida.                    |                                                                 |                            |
| RELON, a Bastard Son of                    | HELEN, Wife to Menelaus.                                        |                            |
| MNON, the Grecian Ge-                      | ANDROMACHE, Wife to Hector.                                     |                            |
|                                            | CASSANDRA, Daughter to Priam;<br>a Prophetess.                  |                            |
| AUS, his Brother.                          | CRESSIDA, Daughter to Calchas.                                  |                            |
| Trojan and Greek Soldiers, and Attendants. |                                                                 |                            |

SCENE, Troy, and the Grecian Camp before it.

## P R O L O G U E.

r, there lies the scene. From isles of Greece  
 inces orgulous, their high blood chaf'd,  
 o the port of Athens sent their ships,  
 t with the ministers and instruments  
 d war: sixty and nine, that wore  
 rownets regal, from th' Athenian bay  
 th toward Phrygia; and their vow is made,  
 sack Troy, within whose strong immures

The ravish'd Helen, Menelaus' queen,  
With wanton Paris sleeps; and that's the quarrel.  
To Tenedos they come,  
And the deep-drawing barks do there disgorge  
Their warlike fraughtage: now on Dardan plains  
The fresh and yet unbruised Greeks do pitch  
Their brave pavilions: Priam's six-gated city,  
Dardan, and Tymbria, Ilias, Chetas, Trojan,  
And Antenorides, with massy staples  
And corresponsive and fulfilling bolts,  
Sperr up the sons of Troy.  
Now expectation, tickling skittish spirits  
On one and other side, Trojan and Greek,  
Sets all on hazard. — And hither am I come  
A prologue arm'd, — but not in confidence  
Of author's pen, or actor's voice, but suited  
In like conditions as our argument, —  
To tell you, fair beholders, that our play  
Leaps o'er the vaunt and firstlings of those broils,  
Beginning in the middle; starting thence away  
To what may be digested in a play.  
Like, or find fault; do as your pleasures are;  
Now good, or bad, 't is but the chance of war.

## ACT I. SCENE I.

Troy. Before PRIAM'S Palace.

*Enter TROILUS armed, and PANDARUS.*

*Tro.* Call here my varlet; I'll unarm again:  
Why should I war without the walls of Troy,  
That find such cruel battle here within?  
Each Trojan, that is master of his heart,  
Let him to field; Troilus, alas! hath none.

*Pan.* Will this gear ne'er be mended?

*Tro.* The Greeks are strong, and skilful to their stren;  
*Fierce to their skill, and to their fierceness valiant;*

It I am weaker than a woman's tear,  
 mer than sleep, fonder than ignorance;  
 ss valiant than the virgin in the night,  
 id skill-less as unpractis'd infancy.

*Pan.* Well, I have told you enough of this: for my part, I'll  
 t meddle nor make no farther. He, that will have a cake out of  
 : wheat, must tarry the grinding.

*Tro.* Have I not tarried?

*Pan.* Ay, the grinding; but you must tarry the bolting.

*Tro.* Have I not tarried?

*Pan.* Ay, the bolting; but you must tarry the leavening.

*Tro.* Still have I tarried.

*Pan.* Ay, to the leavening: but here's yet in the word here-  
 er, the kneading, the making of the cake, the heating the oven,  
 d the baking: nay, you must stay the cooling too, or you may  
 nce burn your lips.

*Tro.* Patience herself, what goddess e'er she be,  
 th lesser blench at sufferance than I do.

Priam's royal table do I sit;

i when fair Cressid comes into my thoughts, —

traitor! — when she comes! — When is she thence?

*Pan.* Well, she looked yesternight fairer than ever I saw her  
 , or any woman else.

*Tro.* I was about to tell thee, — when my heart,

edged with a sigh, would rive in twain,

Hector or my father should perceive me,

(as when the sun doth light a storm)

i this sigh in wrinkle of a smile;

row, that is couch'd in seeming gladness,

that mirth fate turns to sudden sadness.

1. An her hair were not somewhat darker than Helen's,  
 o to) there were no more comparison between the women,—

: my part, she is my kinswoman: I would not, as they  
 praise her, — but I would somebody had heard her talk  
 y, as I did: I will not dispraise your sister Cassandra's

—  
*O Pandarus! I tell thee, Pandarus, —*

When I do tell thee, there my hopes lie drown'd,  
 Reply not in how many fathoms deep  
 They lie indrench'd. I tell thee, I am mad  
 In Cressid's love: thou answer'st, she is fair;  
 Pour'st in the open ulcer of my heart  
 Her eyes, her hair, her cheek, her gait, her voice;  
 Handlest in thy discourse, O! that her hand,  
 In whose comparison all whites are ink,  
 Writing their own reproach: to whose soft seizure  
 The cygnet's down is harsh, and spirit of sense  
 Hard as the palm of ploughman! This thou tell'st me,  
 As true thou tell'st me, when I say — I love her;  
 But, saying thus, instead of oil and balm,  
 Thou lay'st in every gash that love hath given me  
 The knife that made it.

*Pan.* I speak no more than truth.

*Tro.* Thou dost not speak so much.

*Pan.* 'Faith, I 'll not meddle in 't. Let her be as she is: if she be fair, 't is the better for her; an she be not, she has the 'mends in her own hands.

*Tro.* Good Pandarus. How now, Pandarus!

*Pan.* I have had my labour for my travail; ill-thought on of her, and ill-thought on of you: gone between and between, but small thanks for my labour.

*Tro.* What! art thou angry, Pandarus? what with me?

*Pan.* Because she 's kin to me, therefore, she 's not so fair as Helen: an she were not kin to me, she would be as fair on Friday, as Helen is on Sunday. But what care I? I care not, an she were a black-a-moor; 't is all one to me.

*Tro.* Say I, she is not fair?

*Pan.* I do not care whether you do or no. She 's a fool to stay behind her father: let her to the Greeks; and so I 'll tell her the next time I see her. For my part, I 'll meddle nor make no more ' the matter.

*Tro.* Pandarus, —

*Pan.* Not I.

*Tro.* Sweet Pandarus, —

*Pan.* Pray you, speak no more to me: I will leave all as I found it, and there an end.

[*Exit PANDARUS. An Alarum.*]

*Tro.* Peace, you ungracious clamours! peace, rude sounds! Fools on both sides! Helen must needs be fair, When with your blood you daily paint her thus. I cannot fight upon this argument; It is too starv'd a subject for my sword, But Pandarus — O gods, how do you plague me! I cannot come to Cressid, but by Pandar; And he's as tetchy to be woo'd to woo, As she is stubborn-chaste against all suit. Tell me, Apollo, for thy Daphne's love, What Cressid is, what Pandar, and what we? Her bed is India; there she lies, a pearl: Between our Ilium, and where she resides, Let it be call'd the wild and wandering flood; Ourself the merchant, and this sailing Pandar, Our doubtful hope, our convoy, and our bark.

*Alarum. Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* How now, prince Troilus? wherefore not afield?

*Tro.* Because not there: this woman's answer sorts, For womanish it is to be from thence.

*What news, Æneas, from the field to-day?*

*Æne.* That Paris is returned home, and hurt.

*Tro.* By whom, Æneas?

*Æne.* Troilus, by Menelaus.

*Tro.* Let Paris bleed: 't is but a scar to scorn;

Paris is gor'd with Menelaus' horn.

[*Alarum.*]

*Æne.* Hark, what good sport is out of town to-day!

*Tro.* Better at home, if "would I might," were "may." — But to the sport abroad: — are you bound thither?

*Æne.* In all swift haste.

*Tro.* Ceme; go we, then, together.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

The Same. A Street.

*Enter CRESSIDA and ALEXANDER.**Cres.* Who were those went by?*Alex.* Queen Hecuba, and Helen.*Cres.* And whither go they?

*Alex.* Up to the eastern tower,  
 Whose height commands as subject all the vale,  
 To see the battle. Hector, whose patience  
 Is as a virtue fix'd, to-day was mov'd:  
 He chid Andromache, and struck his armourer;  
 And, like as there were husbandry in war,  
 Before the sun rose, he was harness'd light,  
 And to the field goes he; where every flower  
 Did, as a prophet, weep what it foresaw  
 In Hector's wrath.

*Cres.* What was his cause of anger?

*Alex.* The noise goes, this: there is among the Greeks  
 A lord of Trojan blood, nephew to Hector;  
 They call him, Ajax.

*Cres.* Good; and what of him?

*Alex.* They say he is a very man *per se*,  
 And stands alone.

*Cres.* So do all men; unless they are drunk, sick, or have  
 no legs.

*Alex.* This man, lady, hath robbed many beasts of their particular additions: he is as valiant as the lion, churlish as the bear, slow as the elephant; a man into whom nature hath so crowded humours, that his valour is crushed into folly, his folly sauced with discretion: there is no man hath a virtue that he hath not a glimpse of, nor any man an attaint but he carries some stain of it. He is melancholy without cause, and merry against the hair: he hath the joints of every thing; but every thing so out of joint, that he is a gouty Briareus, many hands and no use; or purblind Argus, all eyes and no sight.

1. But how should this man, that makes me smile, make angry?

2. They say, he yesterday coped Hector in the battle, and him down; the disdain and shame whereof hath ever since Hector fasting and waking.

*Enter PANDARUS.*

1. Who comes here?

2. Madam, your uncle, Pandarus.

1. Hector's a gallant man.

2. As may be in the world, lady.

1. What's that? what's that?

2. Good morrow, uncle Pandarus.

1. Good morrow, cousin Cressid. What do you talk of?—morrow, Alexander. — How do you, cousin? When were Ilium?

2. This morning, uncle.

1. What were you talking of, when I came? Was Hector and gone, ere ye came to Ilium? Helen was not up, was

2. Hector was gone; but Helen was not up.

1. E'en so: Hector was stirring early.

2. That were we talking of, and of his anger.

1. Was he angry?

2. So he says, here.

1. True, he was so; I know the cause too: he'll lay about day, I can tell them that: and there's Troilus will not be behind him; let them take heed of Troilus, I can tell them

2. What, is he angry too?

1. Who, Troilus? Troilus is the better man of the two.

2. O, Jupiter! there's no comparison.

1. What, not between Troilus and Hector? Do you know you see him?

2. Ay; if I ever saw him before, and knew him.

1. Well, I say, Troilus is Troilus.

*Then you say as I say; for, I am sure, he is not Hector.*



*Pan.* No, nor Hector is not Troilus, in some degrees.

*Cres.* 'T is just to each of them; he is himself.

*Pan.* Himself? Alas, poor Troilus! I would, he were

*Cres.* So he is.

*Pan.* — Condition, I had gone bare-foot to India.

*Cres.* He is not Hector.

*Pan.* Himself? no, he's not himself. — Would 'a were self! Well, the gods are above; time must friend, or end. Troilus, well. — I would, my heart were in her body! — Hector is not a better man than Troilus.

*Cres.* Excuse me.

*Pan.* He is elder.

*Cres.* Pardon me, pardon me.

*Pan.* Th' other's not come to 't; you shall tell me at tale, when th' other's come to 't. Hector shall not have h this year.

*Cres.* He shall not need it, if he have his own.

*Pan.* Nor his qualities.

*Cres.* No matter.

*Pan.* Nor his beauty.

*Cres.* 'T would not become him; his own's better.

*Pan.* You have no judgment, niece. Helen herself sw other day, that Troilus, for a brown favour, (for so 't is, I confess) — not brown neither —

*Cres.* No, but brown.

*Pan.* 'Faith, to say truth, brown and not brown.

*Cres.* To say the truth, true and not true.

*Pan.* She prais'd his complexion above Paris.

*Cres.* Why, Paris hath colour enough.

*Pan.* So he has.

*Cres.* Then, Troilus should have too much: if she p him above, his complexion is higher than his: he having c enough, and the other higher, is too flaming a praise for a complexion. I had as lief Helen's golden tongue had comm Troilus for a copper nose.

*Pan.* I swear to you, I think Helen loves him bet Paris.

15. Then she 's a merry Greek, indeed.  
 2. Nay, I am sure she does. She came to him th' other  
 to the compassed window; — and, you know, he has not  
 ree or four hairs on his chin.  
 15. Indeed, a tapster's arithmetick may soon bring his par-  
 therein to a total.  
 2. Why, he is very young; and yet will he, within three  
 , lift as much as his brother Hector.  
 15. Is he so young a man, and so old a lifter?  
 2. But, to prove to you that Helen loves him: — she came,  
 ts me her white hand to his cloven chin, —  
 15. Juno have mercy! — How came it cloven?  
 2. Why, you know, 't is dimpled. I think his smiling  
 as him better than any man in all Phrygia.  
 15. O! he smiles valiantly.  
 2. Does he not?  
 15. O! yes, an 't were a cloud in autumn.  
 2. Why, go to then. — But to prove to you that Helen  
 'roilus, —  
 15. Troilus will stand to the proof, if you 'll prove it so.  
 2. Troilus? why, he esteems her no more than I esteem  
 le egg.  
 15. If you love an addle egg as well as you love an idle head,  
 uld eat chickens i' the shell.  
 2. I cannot choose but laugh, to think how she tickled his  
 — indeed, she has a marvellous white hand, I must needs  
 15.  
 15. Without the rack.  
 2. And she takes upon her to spy a white hair on his chin.  
 15. Alas, poor chin! many a wart is richer.  
 2. But, there was such laughing: queen Hecuba laughed,  
 r eyes ran o'er.  
 15. With mill-stones.  
 2. And Cassandra laughed.  
 15. But there was more temperate fire under the pot of her  
 lid her eyes run o'er too?  
 2. And Hector laughed.

*Cres.* At what was all this laughing?

*Pan.* Marry, at the white hair that Helen spied on Troilus' chin.

*Cres.* An 't had been a green hair I should have laughed too.

*Pan.* They laughed not so much at the hair, as at his pretty answer.

*Cres.* What was his answer?

*Pan.* Quoth she, "Here 's but two and fifty hairs on your chin, and one of them is white."

*Cres.* This is her question.

*Pan.* That 's true; make no question of that. "Two and fifty hairs," quoth he, "and one white: that white hair is my father, and all the rest are his sons." "Jupiter!" quoth she, "which of these hairs is Paris, my husband?" "The forked one," quoth he; "pluck 't out, and give it him." But there was such laughing, and Helen so blushed, and Paris so chafed, and all the rest so laughed, that it passed.

*Cres.* So let it now, for it has been a great while going by.

*Pan.* Well, cousin, I told you a thing yesterday; think on't.

*Cres.* So I do.

*Pan.* I'll be sworn, 't is true: he will weep you, an 't were a man born in April.

*Cres.* And I'll spring up in his tears, an 't were a nettle against May. [*A retreat sounded.*]

*Pan.* Hark! they are coming from the field. Shall we stand up here, and see them, as they pass toward Ilium? good niece, do; sweet niece Cressida.

*Cres.* At your pleasure.

*Pan.* Here, here; here 's an excellent place: here we may see most bravely. I'll tell you them all by their names, as they pass by, but mark Troilus above the rest.

*Cres.* Speak not so loud.

*ÆNEAS passes over the Stage.*

*Pan.* That 's Æneas. Is not that a brave man? he 's one of the flowers of Troy, I can tell you: but mark Troilus; you shall see anon.

*Cres.* Who 's that?

*ANTENOR passes over.*

*Pan.* That 's Antenor: he has a shrewd wit, I can tell you; and he 's a man good enough: he 's one o' the soundest judgment i' Troy, whosoever, and a proper man of person. — When comes Troilus? — I 'll show you Troilus anon: if he see me, you shall see him nod at me.

*Cres.* Will he give you the nod?

*Pan.* You shall see.

*Cres.* If he do, the rich shall have more.

*HECTOR passes over.*

*Pan.* That 's Hector, that, that, look you, that; there 's a fellow! — Go thy way, Hector. — There 's a brave man, niece. — O brave Hector! — Look how he looks; there 's a countenance. 's 't not a brave man?

*Cres.* O! a brave man.

*Pan.* Is 'a not? It does a man's heart good — Look you what hacks are on his helmet! look you yonder, do you see? look you here. There 's no jesting: there 's laying on, take 't off who will, as they say: there be hacks!

*Cres.* Be those with swords?

*PARIS passes over.*

*Pan.* Swords? any thing, he cares not; an the devil come to him, it 's all one: by god's lid, it does one's heart good. — Yonder comes Paris; yonder comes Paris: look ye yonder, niece: is 't not a gallant man too, is 't not? — Why, this is brave now. — Who said he came hurt home to-day? he 's not hurt: why, this will do Helen's heart good now. Ha! would I could see Troilus now. — You shall see Troilus anon.

*Cres.* Who 's that?

*HELENUS passes over.*

*Pan.* That 's Helenus. — I marvel, where Troilus is. That 's Helenus. — I think he went not forth to-day. — That 's Helenus.

*Cres.* Can Helenus fight, uncle?

*Pan.* Helenus? no; — yes, he 'll fight indifferent well. —

marvel, where Troilus is. — Hark! do you not hear the people Troilus? — Helenus is a priest.

*Cres.* What sneaking fellow comes yonder?

*TROILUS passes over.*

*Pan.* Where? yonder? that's Deiphobus. — 'T is there 's a man, niece! — Hem! — Brave Troilus, the priest chivalry!

*Cres.* Peace! for shame; peace!

*Pan.* Mark him; note him. — O brave Troilus? — look upon him, niece: look you how his sword is bloodied, his helm more hack'd than Hector's; and how he looks, and goes! — O admirable youth! he ne'er saw three and twenty way, Troilus, go thy way: had I a sister were a grace daughter a goddess, he should take his choice. O admirable Paris? — Paris is dirt to him; and, I warrant, Helen, to whom would give an eye to boot.

*Soldiers pass over the Stage.*

*Cres.* Here come more.

*Pan.* Asses, fools, dolts, chaff and bran, chaff and porridge after meat. I could live and die i' the eyes of Troilus. Ne'er look, ne'er look: the eagles are gone; crows and crows and daws. I had rather be such a man as Troilus, Agamemnon and all Greece.

*Cres.* There is among the Greeks Achilles, a better man than Troilus.

*Pan.* Achilles? a drayman, a porter, a very camel.

*Cres.* Well, well.

*Pan.* Well, well? — Why, have you any discretion in your eyes? Do you know what a man is? Is not birth, his good shape, discourse, manhood, learning, gentleness, youth, liberality, and such like, the spice and salt that set off a man?

*Cres.* Ay, a minced man: and then to be baked with no sin in the pye, — for then the man's date's out.

*Pan.* You are such a woman! one knows not at what to lie.

. Upon my back, to defend my belly; upon my wit, to my wiles; upon my secrecy, to defend mine honesty; my o defend my beauty; and you, to defend all these: and at wards I lie, at a thousand watches.

. Say one of your watches.

. Nay, I'll watch you for that; and that's one of the of them too: if I cannot ward what I would not have hit, I sh you for telling how I took the blow, unless it swell past and then it's past watching.

. You are such another!

*Enter TROILUS' Boy.*

. Sir, my lord would instantly speak with you.

. Where?

. At your own house; there he unarms him.

. Good boy, tell him I come. *[Exit Boy.]*

he be hurt. - Fare ye well, good niece.

. Adieu, uncle.

. I'll be with you, niece, by and by.

. To bring, uncle, —

. Ay, a token from Troilus.

. By the same token, you are a bawd. —

*[Exit PANDARUS.]*

vows, gifts, tears, and love's full sacrifice,

s in another's enterprize;

re in Troilus thousand fold I see,

the glass of Pandar's praise may be.'

I I off. Women are angels, wooing:

won are done, joy's soul lies in the doing:

e belov'd knows nought, that knows not this, —

ze the thing ungain'd more than it is:

e was never yet, that ever knew

t so sweet as when desire did sue.

re, this maxim out of love I teach, —

ment is command; ungain'd, beseech:

though my heart's content firm love doth bear,

of that shall from mine eyes appear.

*[Exit.]*

## SCENE III.

The Grecian Camp. Before AGAMEMNON's Tent.

*Sennet. Enter AGAMEMNON, NESTOR, ULYSSES, MENELAI  
and Others.*

*Agam. Princes,*

What grief hath set the jaundice on your cheeks?  
The ample proposition, that hope makes  
In all designs begun on earth below,  
Fails in the promis'd largeness: checks and disasters  
Grow in the veins of actions highest rear'd;  
As knots, by the conflux of meeting sap,  
Infect the sound pine, and divert his grain  
Tortive and errant from his course of growth.  
Nor, princes, is it matter new to us,  
That we come short of our suppose so far,  
That after seven years' siege yet Troy walls stand;  
Sith every action that hath gone before,  
Whereof we have record, trial did draw  
Bias and thwart, not answering the aim,  
And that unbodied figure of the thought  
That gav 't surmised shape. Why then, you princes,  
Do you with cheeks abash'd behold our works,  
And call them shames, which are, indeed, nought else  
But the protractive trials of great Jove,  
To find persistive constancy in men?  
The fineness of which metal is not found  
In fortune's love; for then, the bold and coward,  
The wise and fool, the artist and unread,  
The hard and soft, seem all affin'd and kin:  
But, in the wind and tempest of her frown,  
Distinction, with a broad and powerful fan,  
Puffing at all, winnows the light away;  
And what hath mass, or matter, by itself  
Lies rich in virtue, and unmingled.

*Nest. With due observance of thy godlike seat,  
Great Agamemnon, Nestor shall apply*

words. In the reproof of chance  
 is proof of men: the sea being smooth,  
 shallow hauble boats dare sail  
 atient breast, making their way  
 of nobler bulk?

ruffian Boreas once enrage  
 Thetis, and, anon, behold,  
 -ribb'd bark through liquid mountains cut,  
 between the two moist elements,  
 as' horse: where 's then the saucy boat,  
 its untimber'd sides but even now  
 greatness? either to harbour fled,  
 to boast for Neptune. Even so  
 fortune's show, and valour's worth, divide  
 of fortune: for, in her ray and brightness,  
 with more annoyance by the brize,  
 the tiger; but when the splitting wind  
 blebs the knees of knotted oaks,  
 ed under shade, why then, the thing of courage,  
 with rage, with rage doth sympathize,  
 in accent tun'd in self-same key,  
 chiding fortune.

Agamemnon,  
 commander, nerve and bone of Greece,  
 or numbers, soul and only spirit,  
 the tempers and the minds of all  
 shut up, hear what Ulysses speaks.  
 : applause and approbation  
 , — most mighty for thy place and sway, —

[To AGAMEMNON.

most reverend for thy stretch'd-out life, —

[To NESTOR.

with your speeches, which were such,  
 Agamemnon and the hand of Greece  
 set up high in brass; and such again,  
 like Nestor, hatch'd in silver,  
 by a bond of air (*strong as the axletree*)



On which heaven rides) knit all the Greekish ears  
To his experienc'd tongue, — yet let it please both, —  
Thou great, — and wise, — to hear Ulysses speak.

*Agam.* Speak, prince of Ithaca; and be 't of less expe  
That matter needless, of importless burden,  
Divide thy lips, than we are confident,  
When rank Thersites opes his mastiff jaws,  
We shall hear music, wit, and oracle.

*Ulyss.* Troy, yet upon his basis, had been down,  
And the great Hector's sword had lack'd a master,  
But for these instances.

The speccialty of rule hath been neglected:  
And look, how many Grecian tents do stand  
Hollow upon this plain, so many hollow factions.  
When that the general is not like the hive,  
To whom the foragers shall all repair,  
What honey is expected? Degree being vizarded,  
Th' unworthiest shows as fairly in the mask.  
The heavens themselves, the planets, and this centre,  
Observe degree, priority, and place,  
Insisture, course, proportion, season, form,  
Office, and custom, in all line of order:  
And therefore is the glorious planet, Sol,  
In noble eminence enthron'd and spher'd  
Amidst the other: whose med'cinable eye  
Corrects the ill aspects of planets evil,  
And posts, like the commandment of a king,  
Sans check, to good and bad. But when the planets,  
In evil mixture, to disorder wander,  
What plagues, and what portents! what mutiny!  
What raging of the sea, shaking of earth,  
Commotion in the winds, frights, changes, horrors,  
Divert and crack, rend and deracinate  
The unity and married calm of states  
Quite from their fixture! O! when degree is shak'd,  
Which is the ladder to all high designs,

The enterprize is sick. How could communities,  
 Degrees in schools, and brotherhoods in cities,  
 Peaceful commerce from dividable shores,  
 The primogenitive and due of birth,  
 Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,  
 But by degree, stand in authentic place?  
 Take but degree away, untune that string,  
 And, hark, what discord follows! each thing meets  
 In mere oppugnancy: the bounded waters  
 Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores,  
 And make a sop of all this solid globe:  
 Strength should be lord of imbecility,  
 And the rude son should strike his father dead:  
 Force should be right; or, rather, right and wrong,  
 (Between whose endless jar justice resides)  
 Should lose their names, and so should justice too.  
 Then every thing includes itself in power,  
 Power into will, will into appetite;  
 And appetite, an universal wolf,  
 So doubly seconded with will and power,  
 Must make perforce an universal prey,  
 And last eat up himself. Great Agamemnon,  
 This chaos, when degree is suffocate,  
 Follows the choking:  
 And this neglection of degree it is,  
 That by a pace goes backward, with a purpose  
 It hath to climb. The general's disdain'd  
 By him one step below; he, by the next;  
 The next, by him beneath: so, every step,  
 Exempl'd by the first pace that is sick  
 Of his superior, grows to an envious fever  
 Of pale and bloodless emulation:  
 And 't is this fever that keeps Troy on foot,  
 Not her own sinews. To end a tale of length,  
 Troy in our weakness stands, not in her strength.

*Nest.* Most wisely hath Ulysses here discover'd  
*The fever whereof all our power is sick.*

*Agam.* The nature of the sickness found, Ulysses,  
What is the remedy?

*Ulyss.* The great Achilles, whom opinion crowns  
The sinew and the forehead of our host,  
Having his ear full of his airy fame,  
Grows dainty of his worth, and in his tent  
Lies mocking our designs. With him, Patroclus,  
Upon a lazy bed the livelong day  
Breaks scurril jests;  
And with ridiculous and awkward action  
(Which, slanderer, he imitation calls,)  
He pageants us: sometime, great Agamemnon,  
Thy topless deputation he puts on;  
And, like a strutting player, — whose conceit  
Lies in his hamstring, and doth think it rich  
To hear the wooden dialogue and sound  
'Twixt his stretch'd footing and the scaffoldage, —  
Such to-be-pitied and o'er-wrested seeming  
He acts thy greatness in: and when he speaks,  
'T is like a chime a mending; with terms unsquar'd,  
Which, from the tongue of roaring Typhon dropp'd,  
Would seem hyperboles. At this fusty stuff,  
The large Achilles, on his press'd bed lolling,  
From his deep chest laughs out a loud applause;  
Cries — "Excellent! — 't is Agamemnon right. —  
Now play me Nestor; — hem, and stroke thy beard  
As he, being 'drest to some oration."  
That 's done; — as near as the extremest ends  
Of parallels — as like as Vulcan and his wife:  
Yet good Achilles still cries, "Excellent!  
'T is Nestor right! Now play him me, Patroclus,  
Arming to answer in a night alarm."  
And then, forsooth, the faint defects of age  
Must be the scene of mirth; to cough, and spit,  
And with a palsy, fumbling on his gorget,  
Shake in and out the rivet: — and at this sport,  
Sir Valour dies; cries, "O! — enough, Patroclus; —

ribs of steel! I shall split all  
 of my spleen." And in this fashion,  
 ties, gifts, natures, shapes,  
 I generals of grace exact,  
 ts, plots, orders, preventions,  
 to the field, or speech for truce,  
 loss, what is, or is not, serves  
 these two to make paradoxes.  
 And in the imitation of these twain,  
 Ulysses says, opinion crowns  
 perial voice) many are infect.  
 n self-will'd; and bears his head  
 in, in full as proud a place  
 hilles: keeps his tent like him;  
 ous feasts; rails on our state of war,  
 racle; and sets Thersites,  
 se gall coins slanders like a mint,  
 in comparisons with dirt:  
 and discredit our exposure,  
 ever rounded in with danger.  
 They tax our policy, and call it cowardice;  
 m as no member of the war;  
 science, and esteem no act  
 and: the still and mental parts, —  
 trive how many hands shall strike,  
 is calls them on, and know, by measure  
 ervant toil, the enemies' weight, —  
 hath not a finger's dignity.  
 is bed-work, mappery, closet-war:  
 ram, that batters down the wall,  
 at swing and rudeness of his poise,  
 before his hand that made the engine,  
 at with the fineness of their souls  
 uide his execution.  
 Let this be granted, and Achilles' horse  
 y Thetis' sons.

[A Tucket.

What trumpet? look, Menelaus.

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Men.* From Troy.

*Agam.* What would you 'fore our tent?

*Æne.* Is this

Great Agamemnon's tent, I pray you?

*Agam.* Even this.

*Æne.* May one, that is a herald and a prince,  
Do a fair message to his kingly ears?

*Agam.* With surety stronger than Achilles' arm,  
'Fore all the Greekish heads, which with one voice  
Call Agamemnon head and general.

*Æne.* Fair leave, and large security. How may  
A stranger to those most imperial looks  
Know them from eyes of other mortals?

*Agam.* How?

*Æne.* Ay; I ask that I might waken reverence,  
And bid the cheek be ready with a blush,  
Modest as morning when she coldly eyes  
The youthful Phœbus.

Which is that god in office, guiding men?  
Which is the high and mighty Agamemnon?

*Agam.* This Trojan scorns us, or the men of Troy  
Are ceremonious courtiers.

*Æne.* Courtiers as free, as debonair, unarm'd,  
As bending angels: that's their fame in peace;  
But when they would seem soldiers, they have galls,  
Good arms, strong joints, true swords; and, Jove's accord,  
Nothing so full of heart. But peace, Æneas!

Peace, Trojan! lay thy finger on thy lips.  
The worthiness of praise distains his worth,  
If that the prais'd himself bring the praise forth;

But what the repining enemy commends,  
That breath fame blows; that praise, sole pure, transcends.

*Agam.* Sir, you of Troy, call you yourself Æneas?

*Æne.* Ay, Greek, that is my name.

*Agam.* What's your affair, I pray you?

*Æne.* Sir, pardon: 't is for Agamemnon's ears.

*Agam.* He hears nought privately that comes from Troy.

*Ene.* Nor I from Troy came not to whisper him:

I bring a trumpet to awake his ear;  
To set his sense on the attentive bent,  
And then to speak.

*Agam.* Speak frankly as the wind.

It is not Agamemnon's sleeping hour:  
That thou shalt know, Trojan, he is awake,  
He tells thee so himself.

*Ene.* Trumpet, blow loud,

Send thy brass voice through all these lazy tents;  
And every Greek of mettle, let him know,  
What Troy means fairly shall be spoke aloud. [*Trumpet sounds.*  
We have, great Agamemnon, here in Troy,  
A prince call'd Hector, Priam is his father,  
Who in this dull and long-continued truce  
Is rusty grown: he bade me take a trumpet,  
And to this purpose speak. — Kings, princes, lords,  
If there be one among the fair'st of Greece,  
That holds his honour higher than his ease;  
That seeks his praise more than he fears his peril;  
That knows his valour, and knows not his fear;  
That loves his mistress more than in confession  
With truant vows to her own lips he loves,  
And dare avow her beauty and her worth,  
On other arms than hers, — to him this challenge.  
Hector, in view of Trojans and of Greeks,  
Shall make it good, or do his best to do it.  
He hath a lady, wiser, fairer, truer,  
Than ever Greek did couple in his arms;  
And will to-morrow with his trumpet call,  
Mid-way between your tents and walls of Troy,  
To rouse a Grecian that is true in love:  
If any come, Hector shall honour him;  
If none, he'll say in Troy, when he retires,  
The Grecian dames are sun-burn'd, and not worth  
The splinter of a lance. Even so much.

*Agam.* This shall be told our lovers, lord Æneas;  
If none of them have soul in such a kind,  
We left them all at home: but we are soldiers;  
And may that soldier a mere recreant prove,  
That means not, hath not, or is not in love!  
If then one is, or hath, or means to be,  
That one meets Hector; if none else, I am he.

*Nest.* Tell him of Nestor, one that was a man  
When Hector's grandsire suck'd: he is old now;  
But if there be not in our Grecian host  
One noble man that hath one spark of fire,  
To answer for his love, tell him from me,  
I'll hide my silver beard in a gold beaver,  
And in my vantbrace put this wither'd brawn;  
And, meeting him, will tell him, that my lady  
Was fairer than his grandam, and as chaste  
As may be in the world. His youth in flood,  
I'll prove this truth with my three drops of blood.

*Æne.* Now heavens forbid such scarcity of youth!

*Ulyss.* Amen.

*Agam.* Fair lord Æneas, let me touch your hand;  
To our pavilion shall I lead you, Sir.  
Achilles shall have word of this intent;  
So shall each lord of Greece, from tent to tent;  
Yourself shall feast with us before you go,  
And find the welcome of a noble foe.

[*Exeunt all but ULYSSES and NEST*

*Ulyss.* Nestor, —

*Nest.* What says Ulysses?

*Ulyss.* I have a young conception in my brain;  
Be you my time to bring it to some shape.

*Nest.* What is 't?

*Ulyss.* This 't is.

Blunt wedges rive hard knots: the seeded pride,  
That hath to this maturity blown up  
In rank Achilles, must or now be crop'd,

shedding, breed a nursery of like evil,  
overbulk us all.

*Nest.* Well, and how?

*Ulyss.* This challenge that the gallant Hector sends,  
never it is spread in general name,  
ates in purpose only to Achilles.

*Nest.* The purpose is perspicuous even as substance,  
those grossness little characters sum up:  
if in the publication make no strain,  
that Achilles, were his brain as barren  
banks of Libya, (though, Apollo knows,  
so dry enough) will, with great speed of judgment,  
, with celerity, find Hector's purpose  
resting on him.

*Ulyss.* And wake him to the answer, think you?

*Nest.* Why, 't is most meet: whom may you else oppose,  
that can from Hector bring his honour off,  
not Achilles? Though 't be a sportful combat,  
in the trial much opinion dwells;  
where the Trojans taste our dear'st repute  
with their fin'st palate: and trust to me, Ulysses,  
no imputation shall be oddly pois'd  
on this wild action; for the success,  
though particular, shall give a scantling  
good or bad unto the general;  
and in such indexes (although small pricks  
their subsequent volumes) there is seen  
the baby figure of the giant mass  
things to come at large. It is suppos'd,  
, that meets Hector, issues from our choice:  
that choice, being mutual act of all our souls,  
makes merit her election, and doth boil,  
't were from forth us all, a man distill'd  
out of our virtues; who miscarrying,  
that heart receives from hence the conquering part,  
steal a strong opinion to themselves?  
which entertain'd, limbs are his instruments,  
V.



In no less working, than are swords and bows  
Directive by the limbs.

*Ulyss.* Give pardon to my speech : —  
Therefore 't is meet Achilles meet not Hector.  
Let us, like merchants, show our foulest wares,  
And think, perchance, they 'll sell; if not,  
The lustre of the better shall exceed,  
By showing the worse first. Do not consent,  
That ever Hector and Achilles meet;  
For both our honour and our shame, in this,  
Are dogg'd with two strange followers.

*Nest.* I see them not with my old eyes: what are they?

*Ulyss.* What glory our Achilles shares from Hector,  
Were he not proud, we all should share with him:  
But he already is too insolent;  
And we were better parch in Afric sun,  
Than in the pride and salt scorn of his eyes,  
Should he 'scape Hector fair. If he were foil'd,  
Why, then we did our main opinion crush  
In taint of our best man. No; make a lottery,  
And by device let blockish Ajax draw  
The sort to fight with Hector: among ourselves,  
Give him allowance for the better man,  
For that will physic the great Myrmidon,  
Who broils in loud applause; and make him fall  
His crest, that prouder than blue Iris bends.  
If the dull, brainless Ajax come safe off,  
We 'll dress him up in voices: if he fail,  
Yet go we under our opinion still,  
That we have better men. But, hit or miss,  
Our project's life this shape of sense assumes, —  
Ajax employ'd plucks down Achilles' plumes.

*Nest.* Now, Ulysses, I begin to relish thy advice;  
And I will give a taste of it forthwith  
To Agamemnon: go we to him straight.  
Two curs shall tame each other: pride alone  
Must tarre the mastiffs on, as 't were their bone.

ACT II. SCENE I.

### Another Part of the Grecian Camp.

**Enter AJAX and THERSITES.**

c. Thersites, —

Agamemnon — how if he had boils? full, all over,  
y?

c. Thersites, —

And those boils did run? — Say so, — did not the ge-  
n then? were not that a botchy core?

∴ Dog,—

Then would come some matter from him: I see none

∴ Thou bitch-wolf 's son , canst thou not hear? Feel

**[Strikes him.]**

**. The plague of Greece upon thee, thou mongrel beef-  
rd!**

1. Speak then, thou vinewd'st leaven, speak: I will beat  
handsomeness.

. I shall sooner rail thee into wit and holiness: but, I  
by horse will sooner con an oration, than thou learn a  
ithout book. Thou canst strike, canst thou? a red mur-  
y jade's tricks!

**Toads-stool, learn me the proclamation.**

**. Dost thou think I have no sense, thou strik'st me thus?**

**The proclamation, —**

**Thou art proclaimed a fool, I think.**

**. Do not, porcupine, do not: my fingers itch.**

I would, thou didst itch from head to foot, and I had thing of thee; I would make thee the loathsomest scab in

When thou art forth in the incursions, thou strik'st as  
nother.

. I say, the proclamation, —

Thou grumblest and rail'st every hour on Achilles;  
art as full of envy at his greatness, as Cerberus is at Pro-  
beauty, *ay, that thou barkest at him.*

*Ajax.* Mistress Thersites!

*Ther.* Thou shouldest strike him.

*Ajax.* Cobloaf!

*Ther.* He would pun thee into shivers with his fist, as a sail breaks a biscuit.

*Ajax.* You whoreson cur! [Beating him]

*Ther.* Do, do.

*Ajax.* Thou stool for a witch!

*Ther.* Ay, do, do; thou sodden-witted lord! thou hast more brain than I have in mine elbows; an assinego may tut thee: thou scurvy valiant ass! thou art here but to thrash Trojan and thou art bought and sold among those of any wit, like a Barbarian slave. If thou use to beat me, I will begin at thy heel, and tell what thou art by inches, thou thing of no bowels, thou!

*Ajax.* You dog!

*Ther.* You scurvy lord!

*Ajax.* You cur! [Beating him]

*Ther.* Mars his idiot! do, rudeness; do, camel; do, do

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*

*Achil.* Why, how now, Ajax? wherefore do you this?  
How now, Thersites? what's the matter, man?

*Ther.* You see him there, do you?

*Achil.* Ay; what's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, look upon him.

*Achil.* So I do: what's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, but regard him well.

*Achil.* Well, why I do so.

*Ther.* But yet you look not well upon him; for, whosoever you take him to be, he is Ajax.

*Achil.* I know that, fool.

*Ther.* Ay, but that fool knows not himself.

*Ajax.* Therefore I beat thee.

*Ther.* Lo, lo, lo, lo, what modicums of wit he utters! His evasions have ears thus long. I have hobbled his brain, more than he has beat my bones: I will buy nine sparrows for a penny, and his *pia mater* is not worth the ninth part of a sparrow. This

Achilles, Ajax, who wears his wit in his belly, and his guts in his head, I'll tell you what I say of him.

*Achil.* What?

*Ther.* I say, this Ajax —

*Achil.* Nay, good Ajax. [AJAX offers to strike him.]

*Ther.* Has not so much wit —

*Achil.* Nay, I must hold you.

*Ther.* As will stop the eye of Helen's needle, for whom he comes to fight.

*Achil.* Peace, fool!

*Ther.* I would have peace and quietness, but the fool will not: he there; that he, look you there.

*Ajax.* O, thou damned cur! I shall —

*Achil.* Will you set your wit to a fool's?

*Ther.* No, I warrant you; for a fool's will shame it.

*Patr.* Good words, Thersites.

*Achil.* What's the quarrel?

*Ajax.* I bade the vile owl go learn me the tenour of the proclamation, and he rails upon me.

*Ther.* I serve thee not.

*Ajax.* Well, go to, go to.

*Ther.* I serve here voluntary.

*Achil.* Your last service was sufferance, 't was not voluntary; no man is beaten voluntary: Ajax was here the voluntary, and you as under an impress.

*Ther.* Even so? — a great deal of your wit, too, lies in your sinews, or else there be liars. Hector shall have a great catch, if he knock out either of your brains: he were as good crack a fusty nut with no kernel.

*Achil.* What, with me too, Thersites?

*Ther.* There 's Ulysses, and old Nestor, — whose wit was mouldy ere your grandsires had nails on their toes, — yoke you like draught oxen, and make you plough up the war.

*Achil.* What? what?

*Ther.* Yes, good sooth: to, Achilles, to Ajax, to —

*Ajax.* I shall cut out your tongue.

*Ther.* 'T is no matter; I shall speak as much as thou, a wards.

*Patr.* No more words, Thersites; peace!

*Ther.* I will hold my peace when Achilles' brach bids shall I?

*Achil.* There's for you, Patroclus.

*Ther.* I will see you hanged, like clotpoles, ere I come more to your tents: I will keep where there is wit stirring, leave the faction of fools. [E

*Patr.* A good riddance.

*Achil.* Marry, this, Sir, is proclaimed through all host: —

That Hector, by the fifth hour of the sun,  
Will, with a trumpet, 'twixt our tents and Troy,  
To-morrow morning call some knight to arms,  
That hath a stomach; and such a one, that dare  
Maintain — I know not what: 't is trash. Farewell.

*Ajax.* Farewell. Who shall answer him?

*Achil.* I know not: it is put to lottery; otherwise,  
He knew his man.

*Ajax.* O! meaning you. — I will go learn more of it.

[Exit

## SCENE II.

Troy. A Room in PRIAM'S Palace.

*Enter PRIAM, HECTOR, TROILUS, PARIS, and HELENU*

*Pri.* After so many hours, lives, speeches spent,  
Thus once again says Nestor from the Greeks: —

“Deliver Helen, and all damage else —

As honour, loss of time, travail, expence,

Wounds, friends, and what else dear that is consum'd

In hot digestion of this cormorant war, —

Shall be struck off:” — Hector, what say you to 't?

*Hect.* Though no man lesser fears the Greeks than I,  
As far as toucheth my particular,  
Yet, dread Priam,

There is no lady of more softer bowels,  
 More spongy to suck in the sense of fear,  
 More ready to cry out — "Who knows what follows?"  
 Than Hector is. The wound of peace is surety,  
 Surety secure; but modest doubt is call'd  
 The beacon of the wise, the tent that searches  
 To the bottom of the worst. Let Helen go:  
 Since the first sword was drawn about this question,  
 Every tithe soul, 'mongst many thousand dismes,  
 Hath been as dear as Helen; I mean, of ours:  
 If we have lost so many tenths of ours,  
 To guard a thing not ours, nor worth to us,  
 Had it our name, the value of one ten,  
 What merit 's in that reason, which denies  
 The yielding of her up?

*Tro.* Fie, fie! my brother  
 Weigh you the worth and honour of a king,  
 So great as our dread father, in a scale  
 Of common ounces? will you with counters sum  
 The past-proportion of his infinite?  
 And buckle in a waist most fathomless,  
 With spans and inches so diminutive  
 As fears and reasons? fie, for godly shame!

*Hel.* No marvel, though you bite so sharp at reasons,  
 You are so empty of them. Should not our father  
 Bear the great sway of his affairs with reasons,  
 Because your speech hath none, that tells him so?

*Tro.* You are for dreams and slumbers, brother priest:  
 You fur your gloves with reason. Here are your reasons:  
 You know, an enemy intends you harm,  
 You know, a sword employ'd is perilous,  
 And reason flies the object of all harm.  
 Who marvels, then, when Helenus beholds  
 A Grecian and his sword, if he do set  
 The very wings of reason to his heels,  
 And fly like chidden Mercury from Jove,  
 Or like a star dis-orb'd? — Nay, if we talk of reason,

Let 's shut our gates, and sleep : manhood and honour  
Should have hare hearts, would they but fat their thoughts  
With this cramm'd reason : reason and respect  
Make livers pale, and lustihood deject.

*Hect.* Brother, she is not worth what she doth cost  
The holding.

*Tro.* What is aught, but as 't is valued ?

*Hect.* But value dwells not in particular will ;  
It holds his estimate and dignity ,  
As well wherein 't is precious of itself ,  
As in the prizer. 'T is mad idolatry ,  
To make the service greater than the god ;  
And the will dotes , that is inclinable  
To what infection self affects ,  
Without some image of th' affected merit.

*Tro.* I take to-day a wife, and my election  
Is led on in the conduct of my will ;  
My will enkindled by mine eyes and ears ,  
Two traded pilots 'twixt the dangerous shores  
Of will and judgment. How may I avoid ,  
Although my will distaste what it elected ,  
The wife I chose ? there can be no evasion  
To blench from this , and to stand firm by honour.  
We turn not back the silks upon the merchant ,  
When we have soil'd them ; nor the remainder viands  
We do not throw in unrespective sieve ,  
Because we now are full. It was thought meet ,  
Paris should do some vengeance on the Greeks :  
Your breath of full consent bellied his sails ;  
The seas and winds (old wranglers) took a truce ,  
And did him service : he touch'd the ports desir'd ;  
And for an old aunt , whom the Greeks held captive ,  
He brought a Grecian queen , whose youth and freshness  
Wrinkles Apollo's , and makes pale the morning.  
Why keep we her ? the Grecians keep our aunt.  
Is she worth keeping ? why , she is a pearl ,  
Whose price hath launch'd above a thousand ships ,

and turn'd crown'd kings to merchants.  
 'you 'll avouch 't was wisdom Paris went,  
 'you must need, for you all cry'd — "Go, go;"  
 'you 'll confess, he brought home noble prize,  
 'you must needs, for you all clapp'd your hands,  
 and cry'd — "Inestimable!" why do you now  
 be issue of your proper wisdoms rate,  
 and do a deed that fortune never did,  
 to ggar the estimation which you priz'd  
 cher than sea and land? O, theft most base,  
 that we have stolen what we do fear to keep!  
 it, thieves, unworthy of a thing so stolen,  
 that in their country did them that disgrace,  
 'e fear to warrant in our native place!

*Cas.* [*Within.*] Cry, Trojans, cry!

*Pri.* What noise? what shriek is this?

*Tro.* 'T is our mad sister: I do know her voice.

*Cas.* [*Within.*] Cry, Trojans!

*Hect.* It is Cassandra.

*Enter CASSANDRA, raving.*

*Cas.* Cry, Trojans, cry! lend me ten thousand eyes,  
 and I will fill them with prophetic tears.

*Hect.* Peace, sister, peace!

*Cas.* Virgins and boys, mid-age and wrinkled eld,  
 oft infancy, that nothing canst but cry,  
 add to my clamours! let us pay betimes  
 a moiety of that mass of moan to come.

Cry, Trojans, cry! practise your eyes with tears:

Troy must not be, nor goodly Ilion stand;

our fire-brand brother, Paris, burns us all.

Cry, Trojans, cry! a Helen, and a woe!

Cry, cry! Troy burns, or else let Helen go.

[*Exit.*]

*Hect.* Now, youthful Troilus, do not these high strains  
 of divination in our sister work  
 some touches of remorse? or is your blood  
 so madly hot, that no discourse of reason,



Nor fear of bad success in a bad cause,  
Can qualify the same?

*Tro.* Why, brother Hector,  
We may not think the justness of each act  
Such and no other than event doth form it;  
Nor once deject the courage of our minds,  
Because Cassandra's mad: her brain-sick raptures  
Cannot distaste the goodness of a quarrel,  
Which hath our several honours all engag'd  
To make it gracious. For my private part,  
I am no more touch'd than all Priam's sons;  
And Jove forbid, there should be done amongst us  
Such things as might offend the weakest spleen  
To fight for, and maintain.

*Par.* Else might the world convince of levity,  
As well my undertakings, as your counsels;  
But, I attest the gods, your full consent  
Gave wings to my propension, and cut off  
All fears attending on so dire a project:  
For what, alas! can these my single arms?  
What propugnation is in one man's valour,  
To stand the push and enmity of those  
This quarrel would excite? Yet, I protest,  
Were I alone to pass the difficulties,  
And had as ample power as I have will,  
Paris should ne'er retract what he hath done,  
Nor faint in the pursuit.

*Pri.* Paris, you speak  
Like one besotted on your sweet delights:  
You have the honey still, but these the gall.  
So to be valiant is no praise at all.

*Par.* Sir, I propose not merely to myself  
The pleasures such a beauty brings with it,  
But I would have the soil of her fair rape  
Wip'd off in honourable keeping her.  
What treason were it to the ransack'd queen,  
*Disgrace* to your great worths, and shame to me,

Now to deliver her possession up,  
On terms of base compulsion? Can it be,  
That so degenerate a strain as this,  
Should once set footing in your generous bosoms?  
There's not the meanest spirit on our party,  
Without a heart to dare, or sword to draw,  
When Helen is defended; nor none so noble,  
Whose life were ill bestow'd, or death unfam'd,  
Where Helen is the subject: then, I say,  
Well may we fight for her, whom, we know well,  
The world's large spaces cannot parallel.

*Hect.* Paris, and Troilus, you have both said well;  
And on the cause and question now in hand  
Have glaz'd, — but superficially; not much  
Unlike young men, whom Aristotle thought  
Unfit to hear moral philosophy.  
The reasons you allege do more conduce  
To the hot passion of distemper'd blood,  
Than to make up a free determination  
Twixt right and wrong; for pleasure, and revenge,  
Have ears more deaf than adders to the voice  
Of any true decision. Nature craves,  
All dues be render'd to their owners: now,  
What nearer debt in all humanity  
Than wife is to the husband? if this law  
Of nature be corrupted through affection,  
And that great minds, of partial indulgence  
To their benumbed wills, resist the same,  
There is a law in each well-order'd nation,  
To curb those raging appetites that are  
Most disobedient and refractory.  
If Helen, then, be wife to Sparta's king,  
As it is known she is, these moral laws  
Of nature, and of nation, speak aloud  
To have her back return'd: thus to persist  
In doing wrong extenuates not wrong,  
*But makes it much more heavy.* Hector's opinion

Is this, in way of truth: yet, ne'ertheless,  
 My spritely brethren, I propend to you  
 In resolution to keep Helen still;  
 For 't is a cause that hath no mean dependance  
 Upon our joint and several dignities.

*Tro.* Why, there you touch'd the life of our design:  
 Were it not glory that we more affected,  
 Than the performance of our heaving spleens,  
 I would not wish a drop of Trojan blood  
 Spent more in her defence. But, worthy Hector,  
 She is a theme of honour and renown;  
 A spur to valiant and magnanimous deeds;  
 Whose present courage may beat down our foes,  
 And fame, in time to come, canonize us:  
 For, I presume, brave Hector would not lose  
 So rich advantage of a promis'd glory,  
 As smiles upon the forehead of this action,  
 For the wide world's revenue.

*Hect.* I am yours,  
 You valiant offspring of great Priamus. —  
 I have a roisting challenge sent amongst  
 The dull and factious nobles of the Greeks,  
 Will strike amazement to their drowsy spirits.  
 I was advertis'd, their great general slept,  
 Whilst emulation in the army crept:  
 This, I presume, will wake him.

[E

## SCENE III.

The Grecian Camp. Before ACHILLES' Tent.

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Ther.* How now, Thersites! what! lost in the labyrinth  
 fury? Shall the elephant Ajax carry it thus? he beats me  
 rail at him: O worthy satisfaction! would, it were oth  
*that I could beat him, whilst he railed at me.* 'Sfoot, I'  
*to conjure and raise devils, but I'll see some issue of my*  
*execrations.* Then, there's Achilles, — a rare enginee

ken till these two undermine it, the walls will stand till of themselves. O, thou great thunder-darter of Olympus! at thou art Jove the king of gods; and, Mercury, lose all entine craft of thy Caduceus, if ye take not that little, ss-than-little wit from them that they have; which short-norance itself knows is so abundant scarce, it will not in ention deliver a fly from a spider, without drawing their ons and cutting the web. After this, the vengeance on e camp! or, rather the Neapolitan bone-ache; for that, s, is the curse dependant on those that war for a placket. did my prayers, and devil, envy, say Amen. What, ho! Achilles!

*Enter PATROCLUS.*

. Who 's there? Thersites? Good Thersites, come in

. If I could have remembered a gilt counterfeit, thou t not have slipped out of my contemplation; but it is no thyself upon thyself! The common curse of mankind, ignorance, be thine in great revenue! heaven bless thee tor, and discipline come not near thee! Let thy blood irection till thy death! then, if she, that lays thee out, u art a fair corse, I 'll be sworn and sworn upon 't, she ounded any but lazars. Amen. Where 's Achilles?

. What! art thou devout? wast thou in prayer?

. Ay; the heavens hear me!

*Enter ACHILLES.*

l. Who 's there?

. Thersites, my lord.

l. Where, where? — Art thou come? Why, my my digestion, why hast thou not served thyself in to my many meals? Come; what 's Agamemnon?

. Thy commander, Achilles. Then, tell me, Patroclus, Achilles?

. Thy lord, Thersites. Then, tell me, I pray thee, thyself?

*Ther.* Thy knower, Patroclus. Then tell me, Patroclus, what art thou?

*Patr.* Thou must tell, that knowest.

*Achil.* O! tell, tell.

*Ther.* I'll decline the whole question. Agamemnon commands Achilles; Achilles is my lord; I am Patroclus' knower; and Patroclus is a fool.

*Patr.* You rascal!

*Ther.* Peace, fool! I have not done.

*Achil.* He is a privileged man. — Proceed, Thersites.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool; Achilles is a fool; Thersites is a fool; and, as aforesaid, Patroclus is a fool.

*Achill.* Derive this: come.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool to offer to command Achilles; Achilles is a fool to be commanded of Agamemnon; Thersites is a fool to serve such a fool; and Patroclus is a fool positive.

*Patr.* Why am I a fool?

*Ther.* Make that demand of the prover. — It suffices me, thou art. Look you, who comes here?

*Enter AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, DIOMEDES, and AJAX.*

*Achil.* Patroclus, I'll speak with nobody. — Come in with me, Thersites. [Exit.]

*Ther.* Here is such patchery, such juggling, and such knavery! all the argument is a cuckold, and a whore; a good quarrel, to draw emulous factions, and bleed to death upon. Now, the dry serpigo on the subject, and war and lechery confound all! [Exit.]

*Agam.* Where is Achilles?

*Patr.* Within his tent; but ill-dispos'd, my lord.

*Agam.* Let it be known to him that we are here.

We sent our messengers; and we lay by  
Our appertainments visiting of him:

Let him be told so, lest, perchance, he think

We dare not move the question of our place,

Or know not what we are.

*Patr.*

I shall say to him. [Exit.]

*Ulyss.* We saw him at the opening of his tent:  
He is not sick.

*Ajax.* Yes, lion-sick, sick of proud heart: you may call it melancholy, if you will favour the man; but, by my head, 't is pride: but why? why? let him show us a cause. — A word, my lord.  
[*Taking AGAMEMNON aside.*]

*Nest.* What moves Ajax thus to bay at him?

*Ulyss.* Achilles hath inveigled his fool from him.

*Nest.* Who? Thersites?

*Ulyss.* He.

*Nest.* Then will Ajax lack matter, if he have lost his argument.

*Ulyss.* No, you see, he is his argument, that has his argument, Achilles.

*Nest.* All the better; their fraction is more our wish, than their faction: but it was a strong composure, a fool could disunite.

*Ulyss.* The amity that wisdom knits not, folly may easily untie. Here come Patroclus.

*Nest.* No Achilles with him.

*Re-enter PATROCLUS.*

*Ulyss.* The elephant hath joints, but none for courtesy: his legs are legs for necessity, not for flexure.

*Patr.* Achilles bids me say, he is much sorry,  
If any thing more than your sport and pleasure  
Did move your greatness, and this noble state,  
To call upon him: he hopes, it is no other,  
But, for your health and your digestion sake,  
An after-dinner's breath.

*Agam.* Hear you, Patroclus.  
We are too well acquainted with these answers;  
But his evasion, wing'd thus swift with scorn,  
Cannot outfly our apprehensions.  
Much attribute he hath, and much the reason  
Why we ascribe it to him; yet all his virtues,  
Not virtuously on his own part beheld,  
Do in our eyes begin to lose their gloss;

Yea, like fair fruit in an unwholesome dish,  
 Are like to rot untasted. Go and tell him,  
 We come to speak with him; and you shall not sin,  
 If you do say, we think him over-proud,  
 And under-honest; in self-assumption greater,  
 Than in the note of judgment; and worthier than himself  
 Here tend the savage strangeness he puts on,  
 Disguise the holy strength of their command,  
 And underwrite in an observing kind  
 His humorous predominance; yea, watch  
 His pettish lunes, his ebbs, his flows, as if  
 The passage and whole carriage of this action  
 Rode on his tide. Go, tell him this: and add,  
 That, if he overhold his price so much,  
 We 'll none of him; but let him, like an engine  
 Not portable, lie under this report —  
 Bring action hither, this cannot go to war.  
 A stirring dwarf we do allowance give  
 Before a sleeping giant: — tell him so.

*Patr.* I shall; and bring his answer presently.

*Agam.* In second voice we 'll not be satisfied,  
 We come to speak with him. — Ulysses, enter you.

[*Exit U*

*Ajax.* What is he more than another?

*Agam.* No more than what he thinks he is.

*Ajax.* Is he so much? Do you not think, he thinks  
 a better man than I am?

*Agam.* No question.

*Ajax.* Will you subscribe his thought, and say he is?

*Agam.* No, noble Ajax; you are as strong, as val-  
 wise, no less noble, much more gentle, and altogeth-  
 tractable.

*Ajax.* Why should a man be proud? How doth prid  
 I know not what pride is.

*Agam.* Your mind is the clearer, Ajax, and your  
*fairer.* He that is proud, eats up himself: pride is his

trumpet, his own chronicle; and whatever praises itself  
e deed, devours the deed in the praise.

I do hate a proud man, as I hate the engendering of

Yet he loves himself: is 't not strange? [Aside.

*Re-enter ULYSSES.*

Achilles will not to the field to-morrow.

What's his excuse?

He doth rely on none;  
es on the stream of his dispose  
observance or respect of any,  
eculiar and in self-admission.

Why will he not, upon our fair request,  
is person, and share the air with us?

Things small as nothing, for request's sake only,  
s important. Possess'd he is with greatness;  
lks not to himself, but with a pride  
rrels at self-breath: imagin'd worth  
his blood such swoln and hot discourse,  
mixt his mental and his active parts,  
l'd Achilles in commotion rages,  
ers down himself: what should I say?  
plaguy proud, that the death tokens of it  
No recovery."

Let Ajax go to him. —

l, go you and greet him in his tent:  
, he holds you well; and will be led,  
equest, a little from himself.

O Agamemnon! let it not be so.  
nsecrate the steps that Ajax makes  
ey go from Achilles: shall the proud lord,  
les his arrogance with his own seam,  
r suffers matter of the world  
thoughts, — save such as doth revolve  
inate himself, — shall he be worshipp'd  
hold an idol more than he?



No, this thrice worthy and right valiant lord  
Must not so stale his palm, nobly acquir'd;  
Nor, by my will, assubjugate his merit,  
As amply titled as Achilles is, by going to Achilles:  
That were to enlard his fat-already pride;  
And add more coals to Cancer, when he burns  
Will entertaining great Hyperion.

This lord go to him! Jupiter forbid;  
And say in thunder — "Achilles, go to him."

*Nest.* O! this is well; he rubs the vein of him. [*Aside.*]

*Dio.* And how his silence drinks up this applause! [*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* If I go to him, with my armed fist  
I'll pash him o'er the face.

*Agam.* O, no! you shall not go.

*Ajax.* An 'a be proud with me, I'll pheeze his pride.

Let me go to him.

*Ulyss.* Not for the worth that hangs upon our quarrel.

*Ajax.* A paltry, insolent fellow!

*Nest.* How he describes  
Himself? [*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* Can he not be sociable?

*Ulyss.* The raven  
Chides blackness. [*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* I'll let his humours blood.

*Agam.* He will be the physician, that should be the patient.  
[*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* An all men were o' my mind, —

*Ulyss.* Wit would be out of fashion.  
[*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* 'A should not bear it so,  
A should eat swords first: shall pride carry it?

*Nest.* An 't would, you 'd carry half. [*Aside.*]

*Ulyss.* 'A would have ten shares.  
[*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* I will knead him; I will make him supple.

*Nest.* He's not yet thorough warm: force him with praises.  
*Pour in, pour in; his ambition is dry.* [*Aside.*]

*Ulyss.* My lord, you feed too much on this dislike.

[To AGAMEMNON.]

*Nest.* Our noble general, do not do so.

*Dio.* You must prepare to fight without Achilles.

*Ulyss.* Why, 't is this naming of him does him harm.

Here is a man — but 't is before his face ;

I will be silent.

*Nest.* Wherefore should you so ?

He is not emulous, as Achilles is.

*Ulyss.* Know the whole world, he is as valiant.

*Ajax.* A whoreson dog, that shall palter thus with us !

Would, he were a Trojan !

*Nest.* What a vice

Were it in Ajax now —

*Ulyss.* If he were proud ?

*Dio.* Or covetous of praise ?

*Ulyss.* Ay, or surly borne ?

*Dio.* Or strange, or self-affected ?

*Ulyss.* Thank the heavens, lord, thou art of sweet com-  
posure ;

Praise him that got thee, her that gave thee suck :

Fam'd be thy tutor, and thy parts of nature

Thrice-fam'd, beyond all erudition ;

But he that disciplin'd thine arms to fight,

Let Mars divide eternity in twain,

And give him half: and for thy vigour,

Bull-bearing Milo his addition yield

To sinewy Ajax. I will not praise thy wisdom,

Which, like a bourn, a pale, a shore, confines

Thy spacious and dilated parts: here 's Nestor,

Instructed by the antiquary times,

He must, he is, he cannot but be wise ;

But pardon, father Nestor, were your days

As green as Ajax, and your brain so temper'd,

You should not have the eminence of him,

But be as Ajax.

*Ajax.* Shall I call you father ?

*Nest.* Ay, my good son.

*Dio.* Be rul'd by him, lord Ajax.

*Ulyss.* There is no tarrying here: the hart Achilles  
Keeps thicket. Please it our great general  
To call together all his state of war:  
Fresh kings are come to Troy; to-morrow,  
We must with all our main of power stand fast:  
And here 's a lord, — come knights from east to west,  
And cull their flower, Ajax shall cope the best.

*Agam.* Go we to council. Let Achilles sleep:  
Light boats sail swift, though greater hulks draw deep.

[*Exe*

### ACT III. SCENE I.

Troy. A Room in PRIAM'S Palace.

*Enter PANDARUS and a Servant.*

*Pan.* Friend! you; pray you, a word. Do not you fol  
the young lord Paris?

*Serv.* Ay, Sir, when he goes before me.

*Pan.* You depend upon him, I mean?

*Serv.* Sir, I do depend upon the lord.

*Pan.* You depend upon a noble gentleman: I must n  
praise him.

*Serv.* The lord be praised!

*Pan.* You know me, do you not?

*Serv.* Faith, Sir, superficially.

*Pan.* Friend, know me better. I am the lord Pandarus.

*Serv.* I hope, I shall know your honour better.

*Pan.* I do desire it.

*Serv.* You are in the state of grace. [Music wi

*Pan.* Grace! not so, friend; honour and lordship are  
titles. — What music is this?

*Serv.* I do but partly know, Sir: it is music in parts.

*Pan.* Know you the musicians?

*Serv.* Wholly, Sir.

*Pan.* Who play they to?

*Serv.* To the hearers, Sir.

*Pan.* At whose pleasure, friend?

*Serv.* At mine, Sir; and theirs that love music.

*Pan.* Command, I mean, friend.

*Serv.* Who shall I command, Sir?

*Pan.* Friend, we understand not one another: I am too shortly, and thou art too cunning. At whose request do these men play?

*Serv.* That's to 't, indeed, Sir. Marry, Sir, at the request of Paris, my lord, who is there in person; with him the mortal Venus, the heart-blood of beauty, love's invisible soul —

*Pan.* Who, my cousin Cressida?

*Serv.* No, Sir, Helen: could you not find out that by her attributes?

*Pan.* It should seem, fellow, that thou hast not seen the lady Cressida. I come to speak with Paris from the prince Troilus: will make a complimentary assault upon him, for my business sakes.

*Serv.* Sudden business: there's a stewed phrase, indeed.

*Enter PARIS and HELEN, attended.*

*Pan.* Fair be to you, my lord, and to all this fair company! Sir desires, in all fair measure, fairly guide them; especially to you, fair queen: fair thoughts be your fair pillow!

*Helen.* Dear lord, you are full of fair words.

*Pan.* You speak your fair pleasure, sweet queen. — Fair morn, here is good broken music.

*Par.* You have broke it, cousin; and, by my life, you shall make it whole again: you shall piece it out with a piece of your performance. — Nell, he is full of harmony.

*Pan.* Truly, lady, no.

*Helen.* O, Sir! —

*Pan.* Rude, in sooth; in good sooth, very rude.

*Par.* Well said, my lord. Well, you say so in fits.

*Pan.* I have business to my lord, dear queen. — My lord, will you vouchsafe me a word?

*Helen.* Nay, this shall not hedge us out: we 'll hear you sing, certainly.

*Pan.* Well, sweet queen, you are pleasant with me. But, marry, thus, my lord. — My dear lord, and most esteemed friend, your brother Troilus —

*Helen.* My lord Pandarus; honey-sweet lord, —

*Pan.* Go to, sweet queen, go to: — commends himself most affectionately to you.

*Helen.* You shall not bob us out of our melody: if you do, our melancholy upon your head.

*Pan.* Sweet queen, sweet queen; that 's a sweet queen, — i' faith —

*Helen.* And to make a sweet lady sad is a sour offence.

*Pan.* Nay, that shall not serve your turn; that shall it not, in truth, la! Nay, I care not for such words: no, no. — And, my lord, he desires you, that if the king call for him at supper, you will make his excuse.

*Helen.* My lord Pandarus, —

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen, — my very very sweet queen?

*Par.* What exploit's in hand? where sups he to-night?

*Helen.* Nay, but my lord, —

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen? — My cousin will fall out with you. You must not know where he sups.

*Par.* I 'll lay my life, with my disposer Cressida.

*Pan.* No, no; no such matter, you are wide. Come, your disposer is sick.

*Par.* Well, I 'll make excuse.

*Pan.* Ay, good my lord. Why should you say Cressida? no, your poor disposer 's sick.

*Par.* I spy.

*Pan.* You spy! what do you spy? — Come, give me an instrument. — Now, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Why, this is kindly done.

*Pan.* My niece is horribly in love with a thing you have, sweet queen.

*Helen.* She shall have it, my lord, if it be not my lord Paris

*Pan.* He! no, she 'll none of him; they two are twain.

*Helen.* Falling in, after falling out, may make them three.

*Pan.* Come, come, I 'll hear no more of this. I 'll sing you a song now.

*Helen.* Ay, ay, pr'ythee now. By my troth, sweet lord, thou hast a fine forehead.

*Pan.* Ay, you may, you may.

*Helen.* Let thy song be love: this love will undo us all. O, Cupid, Cupid, Cupid!

*Pan.* Love! ay, that it shall, i' faith.

*Par.* Ay, good now, love, love, nothing but love.

*Pan.* In good troth, it begins so:

*Love, love, nothing but love, still more!*

*For, oh! love's bow*

*Shoots buck and doe:*

*The shaft confounds,*

*Not that it wounds*

*But tickles still the sore.*

*These lovers cry — Oh! oh! they die!*

*Yet that which seems the wound to kill,*

*Doth turn oh! oh! to ha! ha! he!*

*So dying love lives still:*

*Oh! oh! a while, but ha! ha! ha!*

*Oh! oh! groans out for ha! ha! ha! — hey ho!*

*Helen.* In love, i' faith, to the very tip of the nose.

*Par.* He eats nothing but doves, love; and that breeds hot blood, and hot blood begets hot thoughts, and hot thoughts beget hot deeds, and hot deeds is love.

*Pan.* Is this the generation of love? hot blood, hot thoughts, and hot deeds? — Why, they are vipers: is love a generation of vipers? Sweet Lord, who 's a-field to-day?

*Par.* Hector, Deiphobus, Helenus, Antenor, and all the gallantry of Troy: I would fain have armed to-day, but my Nell would not have it so. How chance my brother Troilus went not?

*Helen.* He hangs the lip at something: — you know all, lord Pandarus.

*Pan.* Not I, honey-sweet queen. — I long to hear how they sped to-day. — You 'll remember your brother's excuse?

*Par.* To a hair.

*Pan.* Farewell, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Commend me to your niece.

*Pan.* I will, sweet queen.

[*Exit.*

[*A Retreat sounded.*

*Par.* They're come from field: let us to Priam's hall,  
To greet the warriors. Sweet Helen, I must woo you  
To help unarm our Hector: his stubborn buckles,  
With these your white enchanting fingers touch'd,  
Shall more obey than to the edge of steel,  
Or force of Greekish sinews: you shall do more  
Than all the island kings, disarm great Hector.

*Helen.* 'T will make us proud to be his servant, Paris:  
Yea, what he shall receive of us in duty,  
Gives us more palm in beauty than we have:  
Yea, overshines ourself.

*Par.* Sweet, above thought I love thee.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.

The Same. PANDARUS' Orchard.

*Enter PANDARUS and a Servant, meeting.*

*Pan.* How now! where's thy master? at my cousin Cressida's?

*Serv.* No, Sir; he stays for you to conduct him thither.

*Enter TROILUS.*

*Pan.* O! here he comes. — How now, how now!

*Tro.* Sirrah, walk off.

[*Exit Servant.*

*Pan.* Have you seen my cousin?

*Tro.* No, Pandarus: I stalk about her door,  
Like a strange soul upon the Stygian banks  
Staying for waftage. O! be thou my Charon,  
And give me swift transportance to those fields,  
Where I may wallow in the lily beds

Propos'd for the deserver. O, gentle Pandarus!  
From Cupid's shoulder pluck his painted wings,  
And fly with me to Cressid.

*Pan.* Walk here i' the orchard. I'll bring her straight,  
[*Exit PANDARUS.*]

*Tro.* I am giddy: expectation whirls me round.  
Th' imaginary relish is so sweet  
That it enchants my sense; what will it be,  
When that the watery palate tastes indeed  
Love's thrice-repured nectar? death, I fear me;  
Swooning destruction; or some joy too fine,  
Too subtle-potent, tun'd too sharp in sweetness,  
For the capacity of my ruder powers.  
I fear it much; and I do fear besides,  
That I shall lose distinction in my joys;  
As doth a battle, when they charge on heaps  
The enemy flying.

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* She 's making her ready; she 'll come straight: you must be witty now. She does so blush, and fetches her wind so short, as if she were frayed with a sprite: I'll fetch her. It is the prettiest villain: she fetches her breath so short as a new-ta'en sparrow.  
[*Exit PANDARUS.*]

*Tro.* Even such a passion doth embrace my bosom:  
My heart beats thicker than a feverous pulse,  
And all my powers do their bestowing lose,  
Like vassalage at unawares encountering  
The eye of majesty.

*Enter PANDARUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Pan.* Come, come, what need you blush? shame 's a baby. — Here she is now: swear the oaths now to her, that you have sworn to me. — What! are you gone again? you must be watched ere you be made tame, must you? Come your ways, come your ways; an you draw backward, we 'll put you i' the fills. — Why do you not speak to her? — Come, draw this curtain, and let 's see *your picture*. Alas the day, how loath you are to offend day-



light! an 't were dark, you 'd close sooner. So, so; rub on, and kiss the mistress. How now! a kiss in fee-farm? build there, carpenter; the air is sweet. Nay, you shall fight your hearts out, ere I part you. The falcon as the tercel, for all the ducks i' the river: go to, go to.

*Tro.* You have bereft me of all words, lady.

*Pan.* Words pay no debts, give her deeds; but she 'll bereave you of the deeds too, if she call your activity in question. What! billing again? Here 's — "In witness whereof the parties interchangeably" — Come in, come in: I 'll go get a fire.

[*Exit PANDARUS.*]

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Tro.* O Cressida! how often have I wished me thus?

*Cres.* Wished, my lord? — The gods grant! — O my lord!

*Tro.* What should they grant? what makes this pretty abrupt? What too curious dreg espies my sweet lady in the fountain of our love?

*Cres.* More dregs than water, if my fears have eyes.

*Tro.* Fears make devils of cherubins; they never see truly.

*Cres.* Blind fear, that seeing reason leads, finds safer footing than blind reason, stumbling without fear: to fear the worst, cures the worse.

*Tro.* O! let my lady apprehend no fear: in all Cupid's pageant there is presented no monster.

*Cres.* Nor nothing monstrous neither?

*Tro.* Nothing, but our undertakings; when we vow to wade seas, live in fire, eat rocks, tame tigers; thinking it harder for our mistress to devise imposition enough, than for us to undergo any difficulty imposed. This is the monstrosity in love, lady, — that the will is infinite, and the execution confined; that the desire is boundless, and the act a slave to limit.

*Cres.* They say, all lovers swear more performance than they are able, and yet reserve an ability that they never perform; vowing more than the perfection of ten, and discharging less than the tenth part of one. They that have the voice of lions, and the valour of hares, are they not monsters?

*Tro.* Are there such? such are not we. Praise us as we are tasted; allow us as we prove: our head shall go bare, till merit crown it. No perfection in reversion shall have a praise in present: we will not name desert, before his birth; and, being born, his addition shall be humble. Few words to fair faith: Troilus shall be such to Cressid, as what envy can say worst, shall be a mock for his truth; and what truth can speak truest, not truer than Troilus.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* What! blushing still? have you not done talking yet?

*Cres.* Well, uncle, what folly I commit, I dedicate to you.

*Pan.* I thank you for that: if my lord get a boy of you, you'll give him me. Be true to my lord; if he flinch, chide me for it.

*Tro.* You know now your hostages; your uncle's word, and my firm faith.

*Pan.* Nay, I'll give my word for her too. Our kindred, though they be long ere they are wooed, they are constant, being won: they are burs, I can tell you; they'll stick where they are thrown.

*Cres.* Boldness comes to me now, and brings me heart. — Prince Troilus, I have lov'd you night and day  
For many weary months.

*Tro.* Why was my Cressid, then, so hard to win?

*Cres.* Hard to seem won; but I was won, my lord,  
With the first glance that ever — Pardon me, —

If I confess much, you will play the tyrant.

I love you now; but not, till now, so much

But I might master it. — In faith, I lie:

My thoughts were like unbridled children, grown

Too headstrong for their mother: see, we fools!

Why have I blabb'd? who shall be true to us,

When we are so unsecret to ourselves? —

But, though I lov'd you well, I woo'd you not;

And yet, good faith, I wish'd myself a man,

Or that we women had men's privilege

*Not speaking first.* Sweet, bid me hold my tongue;

For, in this rapture, I shall surely speak  
The thing I shall repent. See, see! your silence,  
Cunning in dumbness, from my weakness draws  
My very soul of counsel. Stop my mouth.

*Tro.* And shall, albeit sweet music issues thence.

*Pan.* Pretty, i'faith.

*Cres.* My lord, I do beseech you, pardon me;  
'T was not my purpose, thus to beg a kiss.  
I am asham'd: — O heavens! what have I done? —  
For this time will I take my leave, my lord.

*Tro.* Your leave, sweet Cressid?

*Pan.* Leave! an you take leave till to-morrow morning, —

*Cres.* Pray you, content you.

*Tro.* What offends you, lady?

*Cres.* Sir, mine own company.

*Tro.* You cannot shun

Yourself.

*Cres.* Let me go and try.

I have a kind of self resides with you;  
But an unkind self, that itself will leave,  
To be another's fool. I would be gone. —  
Where is my wit? I know not what I speak.

*Tro.* Well know they what they speak, that speak so wisely.

*Cres.* Perchance, my lord, I show more craft than love,  
And fell so roundly to a large confession,  
To angle for your thoughts; but you are wise,  
Or else you love not, for to be wise, and love,  
Exceeds man's might; that dwells with gods above.

*Tro.* O! that I thought it could be in a woman,  
(As, if it can, I will presume in you)  
To feed for aye her lamp and flames of love;  
To keep her constancy in plight and youth,  
Outliving beauty's outward, with a mind  
That doth renew swifter than blood decays:  
Or, that persuasion could but thus convince me,  
That my integrity and truth to you  
Might be affronted with the match and weight

Of such a winnow'd purity in love;  
 How were I then uplifted! but, alas!  
 I am as true as truth's simplicity,  
 And simpler than the infancy of truth.

*Cres.* In that I'll war with you.

*Tro.*

O, virtuous fight!

When right with right wars who shall be most right.  
 True swains in love shall, in the world to come,  
 Approve their truths by Troilus: when their rhymes,  
 Full of protest, of oath, and big compare,  
 Want similes, truth tir'd with iteration, —  
 As true as steel, as plantage to the moon,  
 As sun to-day, as turtle to her mate,  
 As iron to adamant, as earth to the centre,  
 Yet, after all comparisons of truth,  
 As truth's authentic author to be cited,  
 As true as Troilus shall crown up the verse,  
 And sanctify the numbers.

*Cres.*

Prophet may you be!

If I be false, or swerve a hair from truth,  
 When time is old and hath forgot itself,  
 When waterdrops have worn the stones of Troy,  
 And blind oblivion swallow'd cities up,  
 And mighty states characterless are grated  
 To dusty nothing; yet let memory,  
 From false to false, among false maids in love,  
 Upbraid my falsehood! when they have said — as false  
 As air, as water, wind, or sandy earth,  
 As fox to lamb, as wolf to heifer's calf,  
 Pard to the hind, or stepdame to her son;  
 Yea, let them say, to stick the heart of falsehood,  
 As false as Cressid.

*Pan.* Go to, a bargain made; seal it, seal it: I'll be the witness. — Here I hold your hand; here, my cousin's. If ever you prove false one to another, since I have taken such pains to bring you together, let all pitiful goers-between be called to the world's end after my name, call them all — Pandars: let all con-

stant men be Troiluses, all false women Cressids, and all be  
between Pandars! say, amen.

*Tro.* Amen.

*Cres.* Amen.

*Pan.* Amen. Whereupon I will show you a chamber;  
bed, because it shall not speak of your pretty encounters, p  
to death: away!

And Cupid grant all tongued-tied maidens here,

Bed, chamber, Pandar to provide this gear! [E]

### SCENE III.

The Grecian Camp.

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, DIOMEDES, NESTOR,  
MENELAUS, and CALCHAS.

*Cal.* Now, princes, for the service I have done you,  
Th' advantage of the time prompts me, aloud  
To call for recompense. Appear it to your mind,  
That, through the sight I bear in things, to Jove  
I have abandon'd Troy, left my possession,  
Incurr'd a traitor's name; expos'd myself,  
From certain and possess'd conveniences,  
To doubtful fortunes; sequestering from me all  
That time, acquaintance, custom, and condition,  
Made tame and most familiar to my nature;  
And here, to do you service, am become  
As new into the world, strange, unacquainted:  
I do beseech you, as in way of taste,  
To give me now a little benefit,  
Out of those many register'd in promise,  
Which, you say, live to come in my behalf.

*Agam.* What would'st thou of us, Trojan? make dema

*Cal.* You have a Trojan prisoner, call'd Antenor,

Yesterday took: Troy holds him very dear.

Often have you, (often have you thanks therefore)

Desir'd my Cressid in right great exchange,

Whom Troy hath still denied; but this Antenor,

I know, is such a wrest in their affairs,  
 That their negotiations all must slack,  
 Wanting his manage; and they will almost  
 Give us a prince of blood, a son of Priam,  
 In change of him: let him be sent, great princes,  
 And he shall buy my daughter; and her presence  
 Shall quite strike off all service I have done,  
 In most accepted pain.

*Agam.* Let Diomedes bear him,  
 And bring us Cressid hither: Calchas shall have  
 What he requests of us. — Good Diomed,  
 Furnish you fairly for this interchange:  
 Withal, bring word, if Hector will to-morrow  
 Be answer'd in his challenge. Ajax is ready.

*Dio.* This shall I undertake; and 't is a burden  
 Which I am proud to bear. [*Exeunt DIOMEDES and CALCHAS.*]

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS, before their Tent.*

*Ulyss.* Achilles stands i' the entrance of his tent:  
 Please it our general to pass strangely by him,  
 As if he were forgot; and, princes all,  
 Lay negligent and loose regard upon him.  
 I will come last: 't is like, he 'll question me,  
 Why such unplausible eyes are bent, why turn'd on him?  
 If so, I have derision medicinable,  
 To use between your strangeness and his pride,  
 Which his own will shall have desire to drink.  
 It may do good: pride hath no other glass  
 To show itself, but pride; for supple knees  
 Feed arrogance, and are the proud man's fees.

*Agam.* We 'll execute your purpose, and put on  
 A form of strangeness as we pass along: —  
 So do each lord; and either greet him not,  
 Or else disdainfully, which shall shake him more  
 Than if not look'd on. I will lead the way.

*Achil.* What! comes the general to speak with me?  
 You know my mind: I 'll fight no more 'gainst Troy.

*Agam.* What says Achilles? would he aught with us?

*Nest.* Would you, my lord, aught with the general?

*Achil.* No.

*Nest.* Nothing, my lord.

*Agam.* The better. [*Exeunt AGAMEMNON and NESTOR.*]

*Achil.* Good day, good day.

*Men.* How do you? how do you? [*Exit MENELAUS.*]

*Achil.* What! does the cuckold scorn me?

*Ajax.* How now, Patroclus!

*Achil.* Good morrow, Ajax.

*Ajax.* Ha?

*Achil.* Good morrow.

*Ajax.* Ay, and good next day too. [*Exit AJAX.*]

*Achil.* What mean these fellows? Know they not Achilles?

*Patr.* They pass by strangely: they were us'd to bend,

To send their smiles before them to Achilles;

To come as humbly, as they us'd to creep

To holy altars.

*Achil.* What! am I poor of late?

'T is certain, greatness, once fallen out with fortune,

Must fall out with men too: what the declin'd is,

He shall as soon read in the eyes of others,

As feel in his own fall; for men, like butterflies,

Show not their mealy wings but to the summer,

And not a man, for being simply man,

Hath any honour; but honour for those honours

That are without him, as place, riches, and favour,

Prizes of accident as oft as merit:

Which, when they fall, as being slippery standers,

The love that lean'd on them, as slippery too,

Doth one pluck down another, and together

Die in the fall. But 't is not so with me:

Fortune and I are friends: I do enjoy

At ample point all that I did possess,

Save these men's looks; who do, methinks, find out

Something not worth in me such rich beholding

As they have often given. Here is Ulysses:

[ 'll interrupt his reading. —

How now, Ulysses!

*Ulyss.* Now, great Thetis' son!

*Achil.* What are you reading?

*Ulyss.* A strange fellow here

Writes me, that man — how dearly ever parted,  
How much in having, or without or in,  
Cannot make boast to have that which he hath,  
Nor feels not what he owes, but by reflection;  
As when his virtues shining upon others  
Heat them, and they retort that heat again  
To the first giver.

*Achil.* This is not strange, Ulysses.

The beauty that is borne here, in the face,  
The bearer knows not, but commends itself  
To others' eyes: nor doth the eye itself  
That most pure spirit of sense, behold itself,  
Not going from itself; but eye to eye oppos'd  
Salutes each other with each other's form:  
For speculation turns not to itself  
Till it hath travell'd, and is married there  
Where it may see itself. This is not strange at all.

*Ulyss.* I do not strain at the position,  
It is familiar, but at the author's drift;  
Who in his circumstance expressly proves,  
That no man is the lord of any thing,  
Though in and of him there be much consisting,  
Till he communicate his parts to others:  
Nor doth he of himself know them for aught  
Till he behold them form'd in the applause  
Where they are extended; which, like an arch, reverberates  
The voice again; or like a gate of steel  
Fronting the sun, receives and renders back  
His figure and his heat. I was much rapt in this;  
And apprehended here immediately  
The unknown Ajax.  
Heavens, what a man is there! a very horse;

IV.



That has he knows not what. Nature! what things there are,  
Most abject in regard, and dear in use:  
What things, again, most dear in the esteem,  
And poor in worth. Now, shall we see to-morrow,  
An act that very chance doth throw upon him,  
Ajax renowned. O heavens! what some men do,  
While some men leave to do.  
How some men creep in skittish fortune's hall,  
Whiles others play the idiots in her eyes!  
How one man eats into another's pride,  
While pride is fasting in his wantonness!  
To see these Grecian lords! — why, even already  
They clap the lubber Ajax on the shoulder,  
As if his foot were on brave Hector's breast,  
And great Troy shrieking.

*Achil.* I do believe it; for they pass'd by me,  
As misers do by beggars, neither gave to me,  
Good word, nor look. What! are my deeds forgot?

*Ulyss.* Time hath, my lord, a wallet at his back,  
Wherein he puts alms for oblivion;  
A great-sized monster of ingratitude:  
Those scraps are good deeds past; which are devour'd  
As fast as they are made, forgot as soon  
As done. Perseverance, dear my lord,  
Keeps honour bright: to have done, is to hang  
Quite out of fashion, like a rusty mail  
In monumental mockery. Take the instant way;  
For honour travels in a strait so narrow,  
Where one but goes abreast: keep, then, the path,  
For emulation hath a thousand sons,  
That one by one pursue: if you give way,  
Or edge aside from the direct forthright;  
Like to an enter'd tide, they all rush by,  
And leave you hindmost;  
Or, like a gallant horse fallen in first rank,  
Lie there for pavement to the abject rear,  
O'er-run and trampled on. Then, what they do in present,

though less than yours in past, must o'er-top yours;  
 or time is like a fashionable host,  
 that slightly shakes his parting guest by the hand,  
 and with his arms out-stretch'd, as he would fly,  
 irasps-in the comer: welcome ever smiles,  
 and farewell goes out sighing. Let not virtue seek  
 remuneration for the thing it was; for beauty, wit,  
 high birth, vigour of bone, desert in service,  
 Love, friendship, charity are subjects all  
 to envious and calumniating time.

One touch of nature makes the whole world kin, —  
 That all, with one consent, praise new-born gawds,  
 Though they are made and moulded of things past,  
 And give to dust, that is a little gilt,  
 More laud than gilt o'er-dusted.  
 The present eye praises the present object:  
 Then, marvel not, thou great and complete man,  
 That all the Greeks begin to worship Ajax;  
 Since things in motion sooner catch the eye,  
 Than what not stirs. The cry went once on thee,  
 And still it might, and yet it may again,  
 If thou would'st not entomb thyself alive,  
 And case thy reputation in thy tent;  
 Whose glorious deeds, but in these fields of late,  
 Made emulous missions 'mongst the gods themselves,  
 And drove great Mars to faction.

*Achil.*

Of this my privacy

I have strong reasons.

*Ulyss.*

But 'gainst your privacy

The reasons are more potent and heroical.

It is known, Achilles, that you are in love

With one of Priam's daughters.

*Achil.*

Ha! known?

*Ulyss.* Is that a wonder?

The providence that 's in a watchful state

Knows almost every grain of Plutus' gold,

Finds bottom in th' uncomprehensive deeps,

Keeps place with thought, and almost, like the gods,  
Does thoughts unveil in their dumb cradles.  
There is a mystery (with whom relation  
Durst never meddle) in the soul of state,  
Which hath an operation more divine,  
Than breath, or pen, can give expressure to.  
All the commerce that you have had with Troy,  
As perfectly is ours, as yours, my lord;  
And better would it fit Achilles much  
To throw down Hector, than Polyxena:  
But it must grieve young Pyrrhus, now at home,  
When fame shall in our islands sound her trump,  
And all the Greekish girls shall tripping sing, —  
“Great Hector’s sister did Achilles win,  
But our great Ajax bravely beat down him.”  
Farewell, my lord: I as your lover speak;  
The fool slides o’er the ice that you should break.

[*Ex.*]

*Patr.* To this effect, Achilles, have I mov’d you.  
A woman impudent and mannish grown  
Is not more loath’d, than an effeminate man  
In time of action. I stand condemn’d for this:  
They think, my little stomach to the war,  
And your great love to me, restrains you thus.  
Sweet, rouse yourself; and the weak wanton Cupid  
Shall from your neck unloose his amorous fold,  
And, like a dew-drop from the lion’s mane,  
Be shook to air.

*Achil.* Shall Ajax fight with Hector?

*Patr.* Ay; and, perhaps, receive much honour by him.

*Achil.* I see, my reputation is at stake;  
My fame is shrewdly gor’d.

*Patr.* O! then beware:  
Those wounds heal ill that men do give themselves.  
Omission to do what is necessary  
Seals a commission to a blank of danger;  
And danger, like an ague, subtly taints,  
Even then, when we sit idly in the sun.

*Achil.* Go call Thersites hither, sweet Patroclus.  
 I send the fool to Ajax, and desire him  
 invite the Trojan lords, after the combat,  
 see us here unarm'd. I have a woman's longing,  
 an appetite that I am sick withal,  
 to see great Hector in his weeds of peace;  
 to talk with him, and to behold his visage,  
 even to my full of view. A labour sav'd!

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Ther.* A wonder!

*Achil.* What?

*Ther.* Ajax goes up and down the field asking for himself.

*Achil.* How so?

*Ther.* He must fight singly to-morrow with Hector; and is so prophetically proud of an heroic cudgelling, that he raves in seeing nothing.

*Achil.* How can that be?

*Ther.* Why, he stalks up and down like a peacock; a stride, and a stand: ruminates, like an hostess, that hath no arithmetic to her brain to set down her reckoning: bites his lip with a politic regard, as who should say — there were wit in this head, and would out: and so there is; but it lies as coldly in him as fire in flint, which will not show without knocking. The man's undone forever; for if Hector break not his neck in the combat, he'll break himself in vain-glory. He knows not me: I said, "Good-morrow, Ajax;" and he replies, "Thanks, Agamemnon." What think you of this man, that takes me for the general? He's grown every land-fish, languageless, a monster. A plague of opinion! no man may wear it on both sides, like a leather jerkin.

*Achil.* Thou must be my ambassador to him, Thersites.

*Ther.* Who, I? why, he'll answer nobody; he professes not answering: speaking is for beggars; he wears his tongue in his nose. I will put on his presence: let Patroclus make his demands to me, you shall see the pageant of Ajax.

*Achil.* To him, Patroclus: tell him, — I humbly desire the valiant Ajax to invite the most valorous Hector to come unarmed to

my tent; and to procure safe conduct for his person of the magnanimous, and most illustrious, six-or-seven-times-honoured, Captain-general of the Grecian army, Agamemnon. Do this.

*Patr.* Jove bless great Ajax.

*Ther.* Humph!

*Patr.* I come from the worthy Achilles, —

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* Who most humbly desires you to invite Hector to tent. —

*Ther.* Humph!

*Patr.* And to procure safe conduct from Agamemnon.

*Ther.* Agamemnon?

*Patr.* Ay, my lord.

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* What say you to 't?

*Ther.* God be wi' you, with all my heart.

*Patr.* Your answer, Sir.

*Ther.* If to-morrow be a fair day, by eleven o'clock it will one way or other: howsoever, he shall pay for me ere he has

*Patr.* Your answer, Sir.

*Ther.* Fare you well, with all my heart.

*Achil.* Why, but he is not in this tune, is he?

*Ther.* No, but he's out o' tune thus. What music will I him when Hector has knocked out his brains, I know not; I am sure, none, unless the fiddler Apollo get his sinews to catlings on.

*Achil.* Come, thou shalt bear a letter to him straight.

*Ther.* Let me bear another to his horse, for that's the capable creature.

*Achil.* My mind is troubled, like a fountain stirr'd; And I myself see not the bottom of it.

[*Exeunt* ACHILLES and PATROC]

*Ther.* Would the fountain of your mind were clear again, I might water an ass at it. I had rather be a tick in a sheep, such a valiant ignorance.

## ACT IV. SCENE I.

Troy. A Street.

*Enter, at one side, ÆNEAS, and Servant, with a Torch; at the other, PARIS, DEIPHOBUS, ANTENOR, DIOMEDES, and Others, with Torches.*

*Par.* See, ho! who is that there?

*Dei.* It is the lord Æneas.

*Æne.* Is the prince there in person? —

Had I so good occasion to lie long,  
As you, prince Paris, nothing but heavenly business  
Should rob my bed-mate of my company.

*Dio.* That's my mind too. — Good morrow, lord Æneas.

*Par.* A valiant Greek, Æneas, take his hand,  
Witness the process of your speech, wherein  
You told how Diomed, a whole week by days,  
Did haunt you in the field.

*Æne.* Health to you, valiant Sir,  
During all question of the gentle truce;  
But when I meet you arm'd, as black defiance,  
As heart can think, or courage execute.

*Dio.* The one and other Diomed embraces.  
Our bloods are now in calm, and so long health;  
But when contention and occasion meet,  
By Jove, I'll play the hunter for thy life,  
With all my force, pursuit, and policy.

*Æne.* And thou shalt hunt a lion, that will fly  
With his face backward. — In humane gentleness,  
Welcome to Troy: now, by Anchises' life,  
Welcome, indeed. By Venus' hand I swear,  
No man alive can love, in such a sort,  
The thing he means to kill, more excellently.

*Dio.* We sympathize. — Jove, let Æneas live,  
If to my sword his fate be not the glory,  
A thousand complete courses of the sun!  
But, in mine emulous honour, let him die,  
With every joint a wound, and that to-morrow!

*Æne.* We know each other well.

*Dio.* We do; and long to know each other worse.

*Par.* This is the most despiteful gentle greeting,  
The noblest hateful love, that e'er I heard of. —  
What business, lord, so early?

*Æne.* I was sent for to the king; but why, I know not.

*Par.* His purpose meets you. 'T was to bring this Gre  
To Calchas' house; and there to render him,  
For the enfreed Antenor, the fair Cressid.  
Let's have your company; or, if you please,  
Haste there before us. I constantly do think,  
(Or, rather, call my thought a certain knowledge)  
My brother Troilus lodges there to-night:  
Rouse him, and give him note of our approach,  
With the whole quality wherefore: I fear,  
We shall be much unwelcome.

*Æne.* That I assure you:  
Troilus had rather Troy were borne to Greece,  
Than Cressid borne from Troy.

*Par.* There is no help;  
The bitter disposition of the time  
Will have it so. On, lord; we'll follow you.

*Æne.* Good morrow, all.

*Par.* And tell me, noble Diomed; 'faith, tell me true  
Even in the soul of sound good-fellowship, —  
Who, in your thoughts, merits fair Helen best,  
Myself, or Menelaus?

*Dio.* Both alike:  
He merits well to have her, that doth seek her  
Not making any scruple of her soilure,  
With such a hell of pain, and world of charge;  
And you as well to keep her, that defend her  
Not palating the taste of her dishonour,  
With such a costly loss of wealth and friends:  
He, like a puling cuckold, would drink up  
The lees and dregs of a flat tamed piece;  
You, like a lecher, out of whorish loins

Are pleas'd to breed out your inheritors:  
 Both merits pois'd, each weighs nor less nor more;  
 But he as he, the heavier for a whore.

*Par.* You are too bitter to your countrywoman.

*Dio.* She's bitter to her country. Hear me, Paris: —  
 For every false drop in her bawdy veins

A Grecian's life hath sunk; for every scruple  
 Of her contaminated carrion weight,  
 A Trojan hath been slain. Since she could speak,  
 She hath not given so many good words breath,  
 As for her Greeks and Trojans suffer'd death.

*Par.* Fair Diomed, you do as chapmen do,  
 Dispraise the thing that you desire to buy;  
 But we in silence hold this virtue well, —  
 We'll not commend what we intend to sell.  
 Here lies our way.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

The Same. A Court before the House of PANDARUS.

*Enter TROILUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Tro.* Dear, trouble not yourself: the morn is cold.

*Cres.* Then, sweet my lord, I'll call mine uncle down;  
 He shall unbolt the gates.

*Tro.* Trouble him not;  
 To bed, to bed: sleep kill those pretty eyes,  
 And give as soft attachment to thy senses,  
 As infants' empty of all thought!

*Cres.* Good morrow, then.

*Tro.* Pr'ythee now, to bed.

*Cres.* Are you aweary of me?

*Tro.* O Cressida! but that the busy day,  
 Wak'd by the lark, hath rous'd the ribald crows,  
 And dreaming night will hide our joys no longer,  
 I would not from thee.

*Cres.* Night hath been too brief.

*Tro.* Beshrew the witch! with venomous wights she stays,



As tediously as hell; but flies the grasps of love,  
 With wings more momentary-swift than thought.  
 You will catch cold, and curse me.

*Cres.*

Pr'ythee, tarry. —

You men will never tarry.

O foolish Cressid! — I might have still held off,  
 And, then, you would have tarried. Hark! there's one up.

*Pan.* [*Within.*] What! are all the doors open here?

*Tro.* It is your uncle.

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Cres.* A pestilence on him! now will he be mocking:  
 I shall have such a life. —

*Pan.* How now, how now! how go maidenheads? —  
 Here, you maid; where's my cousin Cressid?

*Cres.* Go hang yourself, you naughty mocking uncle!  
 You bring me to do, — and then you flout me too.

*Pan.* To do what? to do what? — let her say what: —  
 have I brought you to do?

*Cres.* Come, come; beshrew your heart! you'll ne'er beg  
 Nor suffer others.

*Pan.* Ha, ha! Alas, poor wretch! a poor capocchio  
 hast not slept to-night? would he not, a naughty man, I  
 sleep? a bugbear take him! [*Knock*]

*Cres.* Did not I tell you? — 'would he were knock'd  
 head! —

Who's that at door? good uncle, go and see. —

My lord, come you again into my chamber:

You smile, and mock me, as if I meant naughtily.

*Tro.* Ha, ha!

*Cres.* Come, you are deceiv'd; I think of no such thing.  
 [*Knock*]

How earnestly they knock. — Pray you, come in:

I would not for half Troy have you seen here.

[*Exeunt TROILUS and CRESSIDA.*]

*Pan.* [*Going to the door.*] Who's there? what's the  
 will you beat down the door? How now! what's the mat

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

- e. Good morrow, lord, good morrow.  
 . Who's there, my lord Æneas! By my troth,  
 you not: what news with you so early?  
 e. Is not prince Troilus here?  
 . Here! what should he do here?  
 e. Come, he is here, my lord; do not deny him: it doth  
 him much to speak with me.  
 . Is he here, say you? 't is more than I know, I'll be  
 — for my own part, I came in late. What should he do  
 e. Who! — nay, then: — come, come, you'll do him  
 ere y' are 'ware. You'll be so true to him, to be false to  
 Do not you know of him, but yet go fetch him hither: go.

*Enter TROILUS.*

- . How now! what's the matter?  
 e. My lord, I scarce have leisure to salute you,  
 Matter is so rash. There is at hand  
 our brother, and Deiphobus,  
 ecian Diomed, and our Antenor  
 'd to us; and for him, forthwith,  
 first sacrifice, within this hour,  
 st give up to Diomedes' hand  
 ly Cressida.  
 . Is it so concluded?  
 e. By Priam, and the general state of Troy:  
 re at hand, and ready to effect it.  
 . How my achievements mock me!  
 o meet them: — and, my lord Æneas,  
 t by chance; you did not find me here.  
 e. Good, good, my lord; the secrets of nature  
 ot more gift in taciturnity.

*[Exeunt TROILUS and ÆNEAS.]*

- n. Is 't possible? no sooner got, but lost? The devil take  
 or! the young prince will go mad. A plague upon Antenor!  
 d, they had broke's neck!

*Enter CRESSIDA.*

*Cres.* How now! What is the matter? Who was here?

*Pan.* Ah! ah!

*Cres.* Why sigh you so profoundly? where's my lord? gone!  
Tell me, sweet uncle, what's the matter?

*Pan.* Would I were as deep under the earth as I am above!

*Cres.* O the gods! — what's the matter?

*Pan.* Pr'ythee, get thee in. Would thou hadst ne'er been  
born! I knew, thou wouldst be his death. — O poor gentleman! —  
A plague upon Antenor!

*Cres.* Good uncle, I beseech you, on my knees I beseech  
you, what's the matter?

*Pan.* Thou must be gone, wench; thou must be gone: thou  
art changed for Antenor. Thou must to thy father, and be gone  
from Troilus: 't will be his death; 't will be his bane; he cannot  
bear it.

*Cres.* O, you immortal gods! — I will not go.

*Pan.* Thou must.

*Cres.* I will not, uncle: I have forgot my father;  
I know no touch of consanguinity;  
No kin, no love, no blood, no soul so near me,  
As the sweet Troilus. — O you gods divine!  
Make Cressid's name the very crown of falsehood,  
If ever she leave Troilus! Time, force, and death,  
Do to this body what extremes you can,  
But the strong base and building of my love  
Is as the very centre of the earth,  
Drawing all things to it. — I'll go in, and weep. —

*Pan.* Do, do.

*Cres.* Tear my bright hair, and scratch my praised cheeks;  
Crack my clear voice with sobs, and break my heart  
With sounding Troilus. I will not go from Troy.

*[Exeunt.]*

**SCENE III.**

**The Same. Before PANDARUS' House.**

*Enter* PARIS, TROILUS, ÆNEAS, DEIPHOBUS, ANTENOR, and  
DIOMEDES.

*Par.* It is great morning, and the hour prefix'd  
Of her delivery to this valiant Greek  
Comes fast upon. — Good my brother Troilus,  
Tell you the lady what she is to do,  
And haste her to the purpose.

**Tro.** Walk into her house;  
I'll bring her to the Grecian presently;  
And to his hand when I deliver her,  
Think it an altar, and thy brother Troilus  
A priest, there offering to it his own heart.

[*Exit.*

*Par.* I know what 't is to love;  
And would, as I shall pity, I could help! —  
Please you, walk in, my lords.

**[Exeunt.]**

**SCENE IV.**

**The Same. A Room in PANDARUS' House.**

*Enter* PANDARUS *and* CRESSIDA.

**Pan.** Be moderate, be moderate.

*Cres.* Why tell you me of moderation?  
The grief is fine, full, perfect, that I taste,  
And violenteth in a sense as strong  
As that which causeth it: how can I moderate it?  
If I could temporize with my affection,  
Or brew it to a weak and colder palate,  
The like allayment could I give my grief:  
My love admits no qualifying dross,  
No more my grief, in such a precious loss.

**Enter TROLLUS.**

**Pan.** Here, here, here he comes. — A sweet duck!

*Cres.* O Troilus! Troilus!                      Embracing him.

*Pan.* What a pair of spectacles is here! Let me embrace too  
*O heart*, — as the goodly saying is, —

— *O heart, heavy heart*,

*Why sigh'st thou without breaking?*

where he answers again,

*Because thou canst not ease thy smart,*

*By friendship nor by speaking.*

There was never a truer rhyme. Let us cast away nothing, for we may live to have need of such a verse: we see it, we see it. — How now, lambs!

*Tro.* Cressid, I love thee in so strain'd a purity,  
 That the bless'd gods — as angry with my fancy,  
 More bright in zeal than the devotion which  
 Cold lips blow to their deities, — take thee from me.

*Cres.* Have the gods envy?

*Pan.* Ay, ay, ay, ay: 't is too plain a case.

*Cres.* And is it true, that I must go from Troy?

*Tro.* A hateful truth.

*Cres.* What! and from Troilus too?

*Tro.* From Troy, and Troilus.

*Cres.* Is it possible?

*Tro.* And suddenly; where injury of chance  
 Puts back leave-taking, justles roughly by  
 All time of pause, rudely beguiles our lips  
 Of all rejoindure, forcibly prevents  
 Our lock'd embrasures, strangles our dear vows  
 Even in the birth of our own labouring breath.  
 We two, that with so many thousand sighs  
 Did buy each other, must poorly sell ourselves  
 With the rude brevity and discharge of one.  
 Injurious time, now, with a robber's haste,  
 Crams his rich thievery up, he knows not how:  
 As many farewells as be stars in heaven,  
 With distinct breath and consign'd kisses to them,  
 He fumbles up into a loose adieu;  
 And scants us with a single famish'd kiss,  
*Distasting with the salt of broken tears.*

3. [*Within.*] My lord! is the lady ready?

Hark! you are call'd: some say, the Genius so  
 "Come!" to him that instantly must die.  
 n have patience; she shall come anon.

Where are my tears? rain, to lay this wind or my heart  
 blown up by the root! [*Exit PANDARUS.*]

I must then to the Grecians?

No remedy.

A woeful Cressid 'mongst the merry Greeks!  
 hall we see again?

Hear me, my love. Be thou but true of heart —

I true? how now! what wicked deem is this?

Nay, we must use expostulation kindly,  
 parting from us:

not, "be thou true," as fearing thee;

ll throw my glove to death himself,

re's no maculation in thy heart;

be thou true," say I, to fashion in

ent protestation. Be thou true,

ill see thee.

O! you shall be expos'd, my lord, to dangers  
 ite as imminent: but I'll be true.

And I'll grow friend with danger. Wear this sleeve.

And you this glove. When shall I see you?

I will corrupt the Grecian sentinels,  
 the nightly visitation.

be true.

O heavens! — be true, again?

Hear why I speak it, love.

gian youths are full of quality;

ving well compos'd with gift of nature,

and swelling o'er with arts and exercise:

velties may move, and parts with person,

kind of godly jealousy

, I beseech you, call a virtuous sin)

ne afraid.

O heavens! you love me not.

*Tro.* Die I a villain, then!  
 In this I do not call your faith in question,  
 So mainly as my merit: I cannot sing,  
 Nor heel the high lavolt, nor sweeten talk,  
 Nor play at subtle games; fair virtues all,  
 To which the Grecians are most prompt and pregnant:  
 But I can tell, that in each grace of these  
 There lurks a still and dumb-discoursive devil,  
 That tempts most cunningly. But be not tempted.

*Cres.* Do you think, I will?

*Tro.* No;

But something may be done, that we will not:  
 And sometimes we are devils to ourselves,  
 When we will tempt the frailty of our powers,  
 Presuming on their changeful potency.

*Æne.* [*Within.*] Nay, good my lord, —

*Tro.* Come, kiss; and let us part.

*Par.* [*Within.*] Brother Troilus!

*Tro.* Good brother, come you hither;  
 And bring Æneas, and the Grecian, with you.

*Cres.* My lord, will you be true?

*Tro.* Who, I? alas, it is my vice, my fault:  
 Whiles others fish with craft for great opinion,  
 I with great truth catch mere simplicity;  
 Whilst some with cunning gild their copper crowns,  
 With truth and plainness I do wear mine bare.  
 Fear not my truth: the moral of my wit  
 Is plain, and true, — there's all the reach of it.

*Enter ÆNEAS, PARIS, ANTENOR, DEIPHOBUS, and  
 DIOMEDES.*

Welcome, Sir Diomed. Here is the lady,  
 Which for Antenor we deliver you:  
 At the port, lord, I'll give her to thy hand,  
 And by the way possess the what she is.  
*Entreat her fair; and, by my soul, fair Greek,  
 If e'er thou stand at mercy of my sword,*

ne Cressid, and thy life shall be as safe,  
Priam is in Ilion.

*Dio.* Fair lady Cressid,  
please you, save the thanks this prince expects :  
lustre in your eye, heaven in your cheek,  
pays your fair usage; and to Diomed  
I shall be mistress, and command him wholly.

*Tro.* Grecian, thou dost not use me courteously,  
shame the seal of my petition to thee,  
praising her. I tell thee, lord of Greece,  
this is as far high-soaring o'er thy praises,  
thou unworthy to be call'd her servant.  
Charge thee, use her well, even for my charge;  
by the dreadful Pluto, if thou dost not,  
though the great bulk Achilles be thy guard,  
cut thy throat.

*Dio.* O! be not mov'd, prince Troilus.  
I may be privileg'd by my place, and message,  
I may be a speaker free: when I am hence,  
I'll answer to my lust; and know you, lord,  
nothing do on charge. To her own worth  
I shall be priz'd; but that you say — be 't so,  
I'll speak it in my spirit and honour, — no.

*Tro.* Come, to the port. — I'll tell thee, Diomed,  
this brave shall oft make thee to hide thy head. —  
I'll give me your hand; and, as we walk,  
our own selves bend we our needful talk.

[*Exeunt TROILUS, CRESSIDA, and DIOMED.*  
[*Trumpet sounded.*

*Par.* Hark! Hector's trumpet.

*Eno.* How have we spent this morning!  
The prince must think me tardy and remiss,  
that I swore to ride before him to the field.

*Par.* 'T is Troilus' fault. Come, come, to field with him.

*Dei.* Let us make ready straight.

*Eno.* Yea, with a bridegroom's fresh alacrity,  
I'll address to tend on Hector's heels.



The glory of our Troy doth this day lie  
On his fair worth, and single chivalry.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE V.

The Grecian Camp. Lists set out.

*Enter AJAX, armed; AGAMEMNON, ACHILLES, PATROCLUS,  
MENELAUS, ULYSSES, NESTOR, and others.*

*Agam.* Here art thou in appointment fresh and fair,  
Anticipating time. With starting courage  
Give with thy trumpet a loud note to Troy,  
Thou dreadful Ajax; that the appalled air  
May pierce the head of the great combatant,  
And hale him hither.

*Ajax.* Thou, trumpet, there's my purse.  
Now crack thy lungs; and split thy brazen pipe:  
Blow, villain, till thy sphered bias cheek  
Out-swell the colic of puff'd Aquilon.  
Come, stretch thy chest, and let thy eyes spout blood;  
Thou blow'st for Hector. [*Trumpet sounds.*]

*Ulyss.* No trumpet answers.

*Achil.* 'Tis but early days.

*Agam.* Is not yond' Diomed with Calchas' daughter?

*Ulyss.* 'Tis he, I ken the manner of his gait;  
He rises on the toe: that spirit of his  
In aspiration lifts him from the earth.

*Enter DIOMED, with CRESSIDA.*

*Agam.* Is this the lady Cressid?

*Dio.* Even she.

*Agam.* Most dearly welcome to the Greeks, sweet lady.

*Nest.* Our general doth salute you with a kiss.

*Ulyss.* Yet is the kindness but particular;  
'T were better she were kiss'd in general.

*Nest.* And very courtly counsel: I'll begin. —  
*So much for Nestor.*

*Achil.* I'll take that winter from your lips, fair lady :  
 illes bids you welcome.

*Men.* I had good argument for kissing once.

*Patr.* But that's no argument for kissing now :  
 thus popp'd Paris in his hardiment,  
 parted thus you and your argument.

*Ulyss.* O! deadly gall, and theme of all our scorns,  
 which we lose our heads, to gild his horns.

*Patr.* The first was Menelaus' kiss; — this, mine :  
 roclus kisses you.

*Men.* O! this is trim.

*Patr.* Paris, and I, kiss evermore for him.

*Men.* I'll have my kiss, Sir. — Lady, by your leave.

*Cres.* In kissing do you render or receive?

*Patr.* Both take and give.

*Cres.* I'll make my match to live.  
 kiss you take is better than you give;  
 refore no kiss.

*Men.* I'll give you boot; I'll give you three for one.

*Cres.* You're an odd man: give even, or give none.

*Men.* An odd man, lady? every man is odd.

*Cres.* No, Paris is not; for, you know, 't is true,  
 at you are odd, and he is even with you.

*Men.* You fillip me o' the head.

*Cres.* No, I'll be sworn.

*Ulyss.* It were no match, your nail against his horn. —  
 I, sweet lady, beg a kiss of you?

*Cres.* You may.

*Ulyss.* I do desire it.

*Cres.* Why, beg then.

*Ulyss.* Why then, for Venus' sake, give me a kiss,  
 en Helen is a maid again, and his.

*Cres.* I am your debtor; claim it when 't is due.

*Ulyss.* Never's my day, and then a kiss of you.

*Dio.* Lady, a word: — I'll bring you to your father.

[DIOMED leads out CRESSIDA.]

*Nest.* A woman of quick sense.

*Ulyss.*

Fie, fie upon her!

There 's language in her eye, her cheek, her lip,  
Nay, her foot speaks; her wanton spirits look out  
At every joint and motive of her body.

O! these encounterers, so glib of tongue,  
That give a coasting welcome ere it comes,  
And wide unclasp the tables of their thoughts  
To every tickling reader, set them down  
For sluttish spoils of opportunity,  
And daughters of the game.

*[Trumpet within.]**All.* The Trojans' trumpet.*Agam.*

Yonder comes the troop.

*Enter HECTOR, armed; ÆNEAS, TROILUS, and other Trojans,  
with Attendants.*

*Æne.* Hail, all you state of Greece! what shall be done  
To him that victory commands? Or do you purpose,  
A victor shall be known? will you, the knights  
Shall to the edge of all extremity  
Pursue each other; or shall be divided  
By any voice or order of the field?  
Hector bade ask.

*Agam.* Which way would Hector have it?*Æne.* He cares not: he 'll obey conditions.

*Achil.* 'T is done like Hector; but securely done,  
A little proudly, and great deal misprizing  
The knight oppos'd.

*Æne.* If not Achilles, Sir,  
What is your name?

*Achil.* If not Achilles, nothing.

*Æne.* Therefore Achilles; but, whate'er, know this: —  
In the extremity of great and little,  
Valour and pride excel themselves in Hector;  
The one almost as infinite as all,  
The other blank as nothing. Weigh him well,  
And that which looks like pride is courtesy.  
*This Ajax is half made of Hector's blood:*

e whereof half Hector stays at home;  
 heart, half hand, half Hector comes to seek  
 blended knight, half Trojan, and half Greek.  
*Phil.* A maiden battle, then? — O! I perceive you.

*Re-enter DIOMED.*

*ram.* Here is Sir Diomed. — Go, gentle knight,  
 by our Ajax: as you and lord Æneas  
 nt upon the order of their fight,  
 it; either to the uttermost,  
 e a breath: the combatants being kin,  
 tints their strife before their strokes begin.

*[AJAX and HECTOR enter the lists.]*

*yss.* They are oppos'd already.

*ram.* What Trojan is that same that looks so heavy?

*yss.* The youngest son of Priam, a true knight;

t mature, yet matchless; firm of word,  
 ing in deeds, and deedless in his tongue;

on provok'd, nor being provok'd soon calm'd:

art and hand both open, and both free;

at he has, he gives, what thinks, he shows;

ves he not till judgment guide his bounty,

gnifies an impair thought with breath.

as Hector, but more dangerous;

ector, in his blaze of wrath, subscribes

der objects; but he, in heat of action,

e vindicative than jealous love.

all him Troilus; and on him erect

nd hope, as fairly built as Hector.

ays Æneas; one that knows the youth,

o his inches, and with private soul

great Ilion thus translate him to me.

*[Alarum. HECTOR and AJAX fight.]*

*ram.* They are in action.

*st.* Now, Ajax, hold thine own!

*o.*

Hector, thou sleep'st:

thee!

*Agam.* His blows are well dispos'd : — there, Ajax!

*Dio.* You must no more. [*Trumpets cease.*]

*Ene.* Princes, enough, so please you.

*Ajax.* I am not warm yet: let us fight again.

*Dio.* As Hector pleases.

*Hect.* Why then, will I no more. —

Thou art, great lord, my father's sister's son,  
A cousin-german to great Priam's seed;  
The obligation of our blood forbids  
A gory emulation 'twixt us twain.  
Were thy commixtion Greek and Trojan so,  
That thou could'st say — "This hand is Grecian all,  
And this is Trojan; the sinews of this leg  
All Greek, and this all Troy; my mother's blood  
Runs on the dexter cheek, and this sinister  
Bounds in my father's;" by Jove multipotent,  
Thou should'st not bear from me a Greekish member  
Wherein my sword had not impressure made  
Of our rank feud. But the just gods gainsay,  
That any drop thou borrow'dst from thy mother,  
My sacred aunt, should by my mortal sword  
Be drain'd! Let me embrace thee, Ajax. —  
By him that thunders, thou hast lusty arms.  
Hector would have them fall upon him thus:  
Cousin, all honour to thee!

*Ajax.* I thank thee, Hector:

Thou art too gentle, and too free a man.  
I came to kill thee, cousin, and bear hence  
A great addition earned in thy death.

*Hect.* Not Neoptolemus so mirable  
On whose bright crest Fame with her loud'st *Oyez*  
Cries, "This is he!" could promise to himself  
A thought of added honour torn from Hector.

*Ene.* There is expectance here from both the sides,  
What farther you will do.

*Hect.* We'll answer it;

*The issue is embracement. — Ajax, farewell.*

*Ajax.* If I might in entreaties find success,  
As seld I have the chance, I would desire  
My famous cousin to our Grecian tents.

*Dio.* 'T is Agamemnon's wish; and great Achilles  
Doth long to see unarm'd the valiant Hector.

*Hect.* Æneas, call my brother Troilus to me:  
And signify this loving interview  
To the expecters of our Trojan part:  
Desire them home. — Give me thy hand, my cousin;  
I will go eat with thee, and see your knights.

*Ajax.* Great Agamemnon comes to meet us here.

*Hect.* The worthiest of them tell me, name by name;  
But for Achilles, mine own searching eyes  
Shall find him by his large and portly size.

*Agam.* Worthy of arms! as welcome as to one  
That would be rid of such an enemy.  
But that's no welcome: understand more clear,  
What's past, and what's to come, is strew'd with husks  
And formless ruin of oblivion;  
But in this extant moment, faith and troth,  
Strain'd purely from all hollow bias-drawing,  
Bids thee, with most divine integrity,  
From heart of very heart, great Hector, welcome.

*Hect.* I thank thee, most imperious Agamemnon.

*Agam.* My well-fam'd lord of Troy, no less to you.

[To TROILUS.]

*Men.* Let me confirm my princely brother's greeting:  
You brace of warlike brothers, welcome hither.

*Hect.* Whom must we answer?

*Æne.* The noble Menelaus.

*Hect.* O! you, my lord? by Mars his gauntlet, thanks.  
Mock not, that I affect th' untraded oath:  
Your *quondam* wife swears still by Venus' glove;  
She's well, but bade me not commend her to you.

*Men.* Name her not now, Sir; she's a deadly theme.

*Hect.* O! pardon; I offend.

*Nest.* I have, thou gallant Trojan, seen thee oft,

Labouring for destiny, make cruel way  
Through ranks of Greekish youth: and I have seen thee,  
As hot as Perseus, spur thy Phrygian steed,  
Despising many forfeits and subduements,  
When thou hast hung thy advanced sword i' th' air,  
Not letting it decline on the declin'd;  
That I have said unto my standers-by,  
"Lo! Jupiter is yonder, dealing life."  
And I have seen thee pause, and take thy breath,  
When that a ring of Greeks have hemm'd thee in,  
Like an Olympian wrestling: this have I seen;  
But this thy countenance, still lock'd in steel,  
I never saw till now. I knew thy grandsire,  
And once fought with him: he was a soldier good;  
But, by great Mars the captain of us all,  
Never like thee. Let an old man embrace thee;  
And, worthy warrior, welcome to our tents.

*Æne.* 'Tis the old Nestor.

*Hect.* Let me embrace thee, good old chronicle,  
That hast so long walk'd hand in hand with time.  
Most reverend Nestor, I am glad to clasp thee.

*Nest.* I would, my arms could match thee in contention,  
As they contend with thee in courtesy.

*Hect.* I would they could.

*Nest.* Ha! By this white beard, I 'd fight with thee to-morrow.

Well, welcome, welcome! I have seen the time —

*Ulyss.* I wonder now how yonder city stands,  
When we have here her base and pillar by us.

*Hect.* I know your favour, lord Ulysses, well.  
Ah, Sir! there's many a Greek and Trojan dead,  
Since first I saw yourself and Diomed  
In Ilion, on your Greekish embassy.

*Ulyss.* Sir, I foretold you then what would ensue:  
My prophecy is but half his journey yet;  
For yonder walls, that pertly front your town,

wers, whose wanton tops do buss the clouds,  
is their own feet.

. I must not believe you.  
ey stand yet; and modestly I think,  
of every Phrygian stone will cost  
f Grecian blood: the end crowns all;  
old common arbitrator, time,  
day end it.

. So to him we leave it.  
tle, and most valiant Hector, welcome.  
general, I beseech you next  
with me, and see me at my tent.

L. I shall forestall thee, lord Ulysses, thou. —  
ector, I have fed mine eyes on thee:  
ith exact view perus'd thee, Hector,  
ted joint by joint.

. Is this Achilles?  
L. I am Achilles.

. Stand fair, I pray thee: let me look on thee.  
L. Behold thy fill.

. Nay, I have done already.  
L. Thou art too brief: I will the second time,  
ld buy thee, view thee limb by limb.

. O! like a book of sport thou 'lt read me o'er;  
e's more in me than thou understand'st.  
st thou so oppress me with thine eye?

L. Tell me, you heavens, in which part of his body  
estroy him, whether there, there, or there?  
ay give the local wound a name,  
e distinct the very breach, whereout  
great spirit flew. Answer me, heavens!

. It would discredit the bless'd gods, proud man,  
r such a question. Stand again:  
thou to catch my life so pleasantly,  
nominate in nice conjecture,  
ou wilt hit me dead?

. I tell thee, yea.



*Hect.* Wert thou an oracle to tell me so,  
 I'd not believe thee. Henceforth guard thee well,  
 For I'll not kill thee there, nor there, nor there;  
 But, by the forge that stithied Mars his helm,  
 I'll kill thee every where, yea, o'er and o'er. —  
 You, wisest Grecians, pardon me this brag:  
 His insolence draws folly from my lips;  
 But I'll endeavour deeds to match these words,  
 Or may I never —

*Ajax.* Do not chafe thee, cousin: —  
 And you, Achilles, let these threats alone,  
 Till accident, or purpose, bring you to't:  
 You may have every day enough of Hector,  
 If you have stomach. The general state, I fear,  
 Can scarce entreat you to be old with him.

*Hect.* I pray you, let us see you in the field;  
 We have had pelting wars, since you refus'd  
 The Grecians' cause.

*Achil.* Dost thou entreat me, Hector?  
 To-morrow, do I meet thee, fell as death;  
 To-night, all friends.

*Hect.* Thy hand upon that match.

*Agam.* First, all you peers of Greece, go to my tent;  
 There in the full convive we: afterwards,  
 As Hector's leisure and your bounties shall  
 Concur together, severally entreat him. —  
 Beat loud the tabourines, let the trumpets blow,  
 That this great soldier may his welcome know.

[*Exeunt all but TROILUS and ULYSSES*]

*Tro.* My lord Ulysses, tell me, I beseech you,  
 In what place of the field doth Calchas keep?

*Ulyss.* At Menelaus' tent, most princely Troilus:  
 There Diomed doth feast with him to-night;  
 Who neither looks upon the heaven, nor earth,  
 But gives all gaze and bent of amorous view  
 On the fair Cressid.

*Tro.* Shall I, sweet lord, be bound to you so much,

After we part from Agamemnon's tent,  
To bring me thither?

*Ulyss.* You shall command me, Sir.  
As gentle tell me, of what honour was  
This Cressida in Troy? Had she no lover there  
That wails her absence?

*Tro.* O, Sir! to such as boasting show their scars,  
A mock is due. Will you walk on, my lord?  
She was belov'd, she lov'd; she is, and doth:  
But still sweet love is food for fortune's tooth.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V. SCENE I.

The Grecian Camp. Before ACHILLES' Tent.

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*

*Achil.* I'll heat his blood with Greekish wine to-night,  
Which with my scimitar I'll cool to-morrow. —  
*Patroclus,* let us feast him to the height.

*Patr.* Here comes Thersites.

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Achil.* How now, thou cur of envy!  
Thou crusty batch of nature, what's the news?

*Ther.* Why, thou picture of what thou seemest, and idol of  
idiot-worshippers, here's a letter for thee.

*Achil.* From whence, fragment?

*Ther.* Why, thou full dish of fool, from Troy.

*Patr.* Who keeps the tent now?

*Ther.* The surgeon's box, or the patient's wound.

*Patr.* Well said, adversity! and what need these tricks?

*Ther.* Pr'ythee be silent, boy; I profit not by thy talk: thou  
art thought to be Achilles' male varlet.

*Patr.* Male varlet, you rogue! what's that?

*Ther.* Why, his masculine whore. Now the rotten diseases  
of the south, the guts-griping, ruptures, catarrhs, loads o'  
gravel i' the back, lethargies, cold palsies, raw eyes, dirt-

rotten livers, wheezing lungs, bladders full of imposthume, sciaticas, lime-kilns i' the palm, incurable bone-ache, and the rivelled fee-simple of the tetter, take and take again such preposterous discoveries!

*Patr.* Why, thou damnable box of envy, thou, what meanest thou to curse thus?

*Ther.* Do I curse thee?

*Patr.* Why no, you ruinous butt; you whoreson indistinguishable cur, no.

*Ther.* No? why art thou then exasperate, thou idle immaterial skein of sleeve silk, thou green sarcenet flap for a sore eye, thou tassel of a prodigal's purse, thou? Ah! how the poor world is pestered with such water-flies, diminutives of nature!

*Patr.* Out, gall!

*Ther.* Finch egg!

*Achil.* My sweet Patroclus, I am thwarted quite  
From my great purpose in to-morrow's battle.

Here is a letter from queen Hecuba;

A token from her daughter, my fair love;

Both taxing me, and 'gaging me to keep

An oath that I have sworn. I will not break it:

Fall Greeks, fail fame, honour, or go, or stay,

My major vow lies here; this I'll obey. —

Come, come, Thersites, help to trim my tent;

This night in banqueting must all be spent. —

Away, Patroclus.

[*Exeunt* ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.]

*Ther.* With too much blood, and too little brain, these two may run mad; but if with too much brain, and too little blood, they do, I'll be a curer of madmen. Here 's Agamemnon, — an honest fellow enough, and one that loves quails; but he has not so much brain as ear-wax: and the goodly transformation of Jupiter there, his brother, the bull, — the primitive statue, and oblique memorial of cuckolds; a thrifty shoeing-horn in a chain, hanging at his brother's leg, — to what form, but that he is, should wit larded with malice, and malice forced with wit, turn him to? To an ass, were nothing: he is both ass and ox: to an ox were nothing; he is both ox and ass. To be a dog, a mule, a cat, a fitcher,

toad, a lizard, an owl, a puttock, or a herring without a roe, I would not care; but to be Menelaus, — I would conspire against destiny. Ask me not what I would be, if I were not Thersites, for I care not to be the louse of a lazar, so I were not Menelaus. — Hey-day! spirits and fires!

*Enter* HECTOR, TRILUS, AJAX, AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, MENELAUS, and DIOMEDES, *with Lights.*

*Agam.* We go wrong; we go wrong.

*Ajax.*

No, yonder 't is;

There, where we see the lights.

*Hect.*

I trouble you.

*Ajax.* No, not a whit.

*Ulyss.*

Here comes himself to guide you.

*Enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Welcome, brave Hector: welcome, princes all.

*Agam.* So now, fair prince of Troy, I bid good night.  
 Ajax commands the guard to tend on you.

*Hect.* Thanks, and good night, to the Greeks' general.

*Men.* Good night, my lord.

*Hect.* Good night, sweet lord Menelaus.

*Ther.* Sweet draught: sweet, quoth 'a! sweet sink, sweet  
 :wer.

*Achil.* Good night, and welcome, both at once to those  
 hat go, or tarry.

*Agam.* Good night. [*Exeunt* AGAMEMNON and MENELAUS.

*Achil.* Old Nestor tarries; and you too, Diomed,  
 eep Hector company an hour or two.

*Dio.* I cannot, lord; I have important business,  
 he tide whereof is now. — Good night, great Hector.

*Hect.* Give me your hand.

*Ulyss.*

Follow his torch, he goes

Calchas' tent: I'll keep you company. [*Aside to* TRILUS.

*Tro.* Sweet Sir, you honour me.

*Hect.*

And so good night.

[*Exit* DIOMED; ULYSSES and TRILUS following.

*Achil.* Come, come; enter my tent.

[*Exeunt* ACHILLES, HECTOR, AJAX, and NESTOR.]

*Ther.* That same Diomed's a false-hearted rogue, a most unjust knave: I will no more trust him when he leers, than I will a serpent when he hisses. He will spend his mouth, and promise, like Brabler the hound; but when he performs, astronomers foretel it: it is prodigious, there will come some change: the sun borrows of the moon, when Diomed keeps his word. I will rather leave to see Hector, than not to dog him: they say, he keeps a Trojan drab, and uses the traitor Calchas' tent. I'll after — Nothing but lechery! all incontinent varlets! [*Exit* —

## SCENE II.

The Same. Before CALCHAS' Tent.

*Enter* DIOMEDES.

*Dio.* What are you up here, ho? speak.

*Cal.* [*Within.*] Who calls?

*Dio.* Diomed. — Calches, I think. — Where 's your daughter —?

*Cal.* [*Within.*] She comes to you.

*Enter* TROILUS and ULYSSES, at a distance; after them

THESBITES.

*Ulyss.* Stand where the torch may not discover us.

*Enter* CRESSIDA.

*Tro.* Cressid comes forth to him.

*Dio.* How now, my charge!

*Cres.* Now, my sweet guardian. — Hark! a word with you —  
[*Whispers.*]

*Tro.* Yea, so familiar!

*Ulyss.* She will sing any man at first sight.

*Ther.* And any man may sing her, if he can take her cliff; she 's noted.

*Dio.* Will you remember?

*Cres.* Remember? yes.

*Dio.* Nay, but do then; and let your mind be coupled with your words.

*Tro.* What should she remember?

*Ulyss.* List.

*Cres.* Sweet honey Greek, tempt me no more to folly.

*Ther.* Roguery!

*Dio.* Nay, then, —

*Cres.* I'll tell you what —

*Dio.* Pho! pho! come tell, a pin: you are forsworn. —

*Cres.* In faith, I cannot. What would you have me do?

*Ther.* A juggling trick, — to be secretly open.

*Dio.* What did you swear you would bestow on me?

*Cres.* I pr'ythee, do not hold me to mine oath;

Bid me do any thing but that, sweet Greek.

*Dio.* Good night.

*Tro.* Hold, patience!

*Ulyss.* How now, Trojan?

*Cres.* Diomed, —

*Dio.* No, no; good night: I'll be your fool no more.

*Tro.* Thy better must.

*Cres.* Hark! one word in your ear.

*Tro.* O, plague and madness!

*Ulyss.* You are mov'd, prince: let us depart, I pray you,  
Lest your displeasure should enlarge itself  
To wrathful terms. This place is dangerous;  
The time right deadly: I beseech you, go.

*Tro.* Behold, I pray you!

*Ulyss.* Nay, good my lord, go off:  
You flow to great distraction; come, my lord.

*Tro.* I pr'ythee, stay.

*Ulyss.* You have not patience; come.

*Tro.* I pray you, stay. By hell, and all hell's torments,  
I will not speak a word.

*Dio.* And so, good night.

*Cres.* Nay, but you part in anger.

*Tro.* Doth that grieve thee?

O, wither'd truth!

*Ulyss.* Why, how now, lord!

- Tro.* By Jove,  
I will be patient.
- Cres.* Guardian! — why, Greek!
- Dio.* Pho, pho! adieu; you palter.
- Cres.* In faith, I do not: come hither once again.
- Ulyss.* You shake, my lord, at something: will you go?  
You will break out.
- Tro.* She strokes his cheek!
- Ulyss.* Come, come.
- Tro.* Nay, stay: by Jove, I will not speak a word.  
There is between my will and all offences  
A guard of patience: — stay a little while.
- Ther.* How the devil luxury, with his fat rump and potatoe  
finger, tickles these together! Fry, lechery, fry!
- Dio.* But will you then?
- Cres.* In faith, I will, la: never trust me else.
- Dio.* Give me some token for the surety of it.
- Cres.* I'll fetch you one. [Exit.]
- Ulyss.* You have sworn patience.
- Tro.* Fear me not, sweet lord;  
I will not be myself, nor have cognition  
Of what I feel: I am all patience.

*Re-enter CRESSIDA.*

- Ther.* Now the pledge! now, now, now!
- Cres.* Here, Diomed, keep this sleeve.
- Tro.* O beauty! where is thy faith?
- Ulyss.* My lord, —
- Tro.* I will be patient; outwardly I will.
- Cres.* You look upon that sleeve; behold it well. —  
He loved me — O false wench! — Give 't me again.
- Dio.* Whose was 't?
- Cres.* It is no matter, now I have 't again:  
I will not meet with you to-morrow night.  
I pr'ythee, Diomed, visit me no more.
- Ther.* Now she sharpens. — Well said, whetstone.
- Dio.* I shall have it.

*Cres.* What, this?

*Dio.* Ay, that.

*Cres.* O, all you gods! — O pretty, pretty pledge!  
Thy master now lies thinking in his bed  
Of thee, and me; and sighs, and takes my glove,  
And gives memorial dainty kisses to it,  
As I kiss thee. — Nay, do not snatch it from me;  
He that takes that doth take my heart withal.

*Dio.* I had your heart before; this follows it.

*Tro.* I did swear patience.

*Cres.* You shall not have it, Diomed; 'faith you shall not:  
[ 'I'll give you something else.

*Dio.* I will have this. Whose was it?

*Cres.* 'T is no matter.

*Dio.* Come, tell me whose it was.

*Cres.* 'T was one's that loved me better than you will.  
But, now you have it, take it.

*Dio.* Whose was it?

*Cres.* By all Diana's waiting-women yond',  
And by herself, I will not tell you whose.

*Dio.* To-morrow will I wear it on my helm,  
And grieve his spirit that dares not challenge it.

*Tro.* Wert thou the devil, and wor'st it on thy horn,  
It should be challeng'd.

*Cres.* Well, well, 't is done, 't is past; — and yet it is not:  
I will not keep my word.

*Dio.* Why then, farewell.  
Thou never shalt mock Diomed again.

*Cres.* You shall not go. — One cannot speak a word,  
But it straight starts you.

*Dio.* I do not like this fooling.

*Ther.* Nor I, by Pluto: but that that likes not you, pleases  
me best.

*Dio.* What! shall I come? the hour?

*Cres.* Ay, come: — O Jove! —  
Do come: — I shall be plagu'd.

*Dio.* Farewell till then.



*Cres.* Good night: I pr'ythee, come. — [*Exit DIOMEDES*  
Troilus, farewell! one eye yet looks on thee,  
But with my heart the other eye doth see.  
*Ah*, poor our sex! this fault in us I find,  
The error of our eye directs our mind.  
What error leads, must err: O! then conclude,  
Minds, sway'd by eyes, are full of turpitude. [*Exit CRESSIDA.*

*Ther.* A proof of strength she could not publish more,  
Unless she said, "my mind is now turn'd whore."

*Ulyss.* All's done, my lord.

*Tro.*

It is.

*Ulyss.*

Why stay we then?

*Tro.* To make a recordation to my soul  
Of every syllable that here was spoke.  
But if I tell how these two did co-act,  
Shall I not lie in publishing a truth?  
Sith yet there is a credence in my heart,  
An esperance so obstinately strong,  
That doth invert the attest of eyes and ears;  
As if those organs had deceptious functions,  
Created only to calumniate.  
Was Cressid here?

*Ulyss.* I cannot conjure, Trojan.

*Tro.* She was not, sure.

*Ulyss.* Most sure she was.

*Tro.* Why, my negation hath no taste of madness.

*Ulyss.* Nor mine, my lord: Cressid was here but now.

*Tro.* Let it not be believ'd for womanhood!

Think we had mothers: do not give advantage  
To stubborn critics — apt, without a theme,  
For depravation, — to square the general sex  
By Cressid's rule: rather think this not Cressid.

*Ulyss.* What hath she done, prince, that can soil our mothers?

*Tro.* Nothing at all, unless that this were she.

*Ther.* Will he swagger himself out on's own eyes?

*Tro.* This she? no; this is Diomed's Cressida.

If beauty have a soul, this is not she:  
 If souls guide vows, if vows be sanctimony,  
 If sanctimony be the gods' delight,  
 If there be rule in unity itself,  
 This is not she. O madness of discourse,  
 That cause sets up with and against itself!  
 Bi-fold authority! where reason can revolt  
 Without perdition, and loss assume all reason  
 Without revolt: this is, and is not, Cressid!  
 Within my soul there doth conduce a fight  
 Of this strange nature, that a thing inseparate  
 Divides more wider than the sky and earth;  
 And yet the spacious breadth of this division  
 Admits no orifice for a point, as subtle  
 As Arachne's broken woof, to enter.  
 Instance, O instance! strong as Pluto's gates;  
 Cressid is mine, tied with the bonds of heaven:  
 Instance, O instance! strong as heaven itself;  
 The bonds of heaven are slipp'd, dissolv'd, and loos'd;  
 And with another knot, five-finger-tied,  
 The fractions of her faith, orts of her love,  
 The fragments, scraps, the bits, and greasy reliques  
 Of her o'er-eaten faith, are given to Diomed.

*Ulyss.* May worthy Troilus be half attach'd  
 With that which here his passion doth express?

*Tro.* Ay, Greek; and that shall be divulged well  
 In characters as red as Mars his heart  
 Inflam'd with Venus: never did young man fancy  
 With so eternal and so fix'd a soul.  
 Hark, Greek: — as much as I do Cressid love,  
 So much by weight hate I her Diomed.  
 That sleeve is mine, that he'll bear on his helm:  
 Were it a casque compos'd by Vulcan's skill,  
 My sword should bite it. Not the dreadful spout,  
 Which shipmen do the hurricano call,  
 Constring'd in mass by the almighty sun,  
 Shall dizzy with more clamour Neptune's ear

In his descent, than shall my prompted sword  
Falling on Diomed.

*Ther.* He 'll tickle it for his concupy.

*Tro.* O Cressid! O false Cressid! false, false, false!  
Let all untruths stand by thy stained name,  
And they 'll seem glorious.

*Ulyss.* O! contain yourself;  
Your passion draws ears hither.

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* I have been seeking you this hour, my lord.  
Hector, by this, is arming him in Troy:  
Ajax, your guard, stays to conduct you home.

*Tro.* Have with you, prince. — My courteous lord, adieu. —  
Farewell, revolted fair! — and, Diomed,  
Stand fast, and wear a castle on thy head!

*Ulyss.* I 'll bring you to the gates.

*Tro.* Accept distracted thanks.

*[Exeunt TROILUS, ÆNEAS, and ULYSSES.]*

*Ther.* *[Coming forward.]* Would, I could meet that rogue  
Diomed. I would croak like a raven; I would bode, I would bode.  
Patroclus will give me any thing for the intelligence of this whore:  
the parrot will not do more for an almond, than he for a commodious drab. Lechery, lechery; still, wars and lechery: nothing  
else holds fashion. A burning devil take them! *[Exit.]*

### SCENE III.

Troy. Before PRIAM'S Palace.

*Enter HECTOR and ANDROMACHE.*

*And.* When was my lord so much ungently temper'd,  
To stop his ears against admonishment?  
Unarm, unarm, and do not fight to-day.

*Hect.* You train me to offend you; get you in:  
By all the everlasting gods, I 'll go.

*And.* My dreams will, sure, prove ominous to the day.

*Hect.* No more, I say.

*Enter CASSANDRA.*

*Cas.* Where is my brother Hector?

*And.* Here, sister; arm'd, and bloody in intent.  
 consort with me in loud and dear petition:  
 pursue we him on knees; for I have dream'd  
 of bloody turbulence, and this whole night  
 hath nothing been but shapes and forms of slaughter.

*Cas.* O! 't is true.

*Hect.* Ho! bid my trumpet sound!

*Cas.* No notes of sally, for the heavens, sweet brother.

*Hect.* Begone, I say: the gods have heard me swear.

*Cas.* The gods are deaf to hot and peevish vows:  
 they are polluted offerings, more abhorr'd  
 than spotted livers in the sacrifice.

*And.* O! be persuaded: do not count it holy  
 to hurt by being just: it is as lawful,  
 for us to give much count to violent thefts,  
 and rob in the behalf of charity.

*Cas.* It is the purpose that makes strong the vow;  
 that vows to every purpose must not hold.  
 Harm, sweet Hector.

*Hect.* Hold you still, I say;  
 mine honour keeps the weather of my fate:  
 life every man holds dear; but the dear man  
 holds honour far more precious—dear than life. —

*Enter TROILUS.*

Now now, young man! mean'st thou to fight to-day?

*And.* Cassandra, call my father to persuade.

*[Exit CASSANDRA.]*

*Hect.* No, 'faith, young Troilus; doff thy harness, youth;  
 I'll arm to-day i' the vein of chivalry.  
 Let grow thy sinews till their knots be strong,  
 and tempt not yet the brushes of the war.  
 I'll harm thee, go; and doubt thou not, brave boy,  
 I'll stand, to-day, for thee, and me, and Troy.

*Tro.* Brother, you have a vice of mercy in you,  
Which better fits a lion than a man.

*Hect.* What vice is that, good Troilus? chide me for

*Tro.* When many times the captive Grecians fall,  
Even in the fan and wind of your fair sword,  
You bid them rise, and live.

*Hect.* O! 't is fair play.

*Tro.* Fool's play, by heaven, I

*Hect.* How now! how now!

*Tro.* For the love of all the  
Let's leave the hermit pity with our mothers,  
And when we have our armours buckled on,  
The venom'd vengeance ride upon our swords;  
Spur them to ruthless work, rein them from ruth.

*Hect.* Fie, savage, fie!

*Tro.* Hector, then 't is wars.

*Hect.* Troilus, I would not have you fight to-day.

*Tro.* Who should withhold me?

Not fate, obedience, nor the hand of Mars  
Beckoning with fiery truncheon my retire;  
Not Priamus and Hecuba on knees,  
Their eyes o'ergalled with recourse of tears;  
Nor you, my brother, with your true sword drawn,  
Oppos'd to hinder me, should stop my way,  
But by my ruin.

*Re-enter CASSANDRA, with PRIAM.*

*Cas.* Lay hold upon him, Priam, hold him fast:  
He is thy crutch; now, if thou lose thy stay,  
Thou on him leaning, and all Troy on thee,  
Fall all together.

*Pri.* Come, Hector, come; go back.  
Thy wife hath dream'd, thy mother hath had visions,  
Cassandra doth foresee; and I myself  
Am like a prophet suddenly enrapt,  
To tell thee that this day is ominous:  
Therefore, come back.

t. Æneas is a-field;  
 lo stand engag'd to many Greeks,  
 the faith of valour, to appear  
 orning to them.

Ay, but thou shalt not go.

t. I must not break my faith.  
 ow me dutiful; therefore, dear Sir,  
 not shame respect, but give me leave  
 that course by your consent and voice,  
 you do here forbid me, royal Priam.

. O Priam! yield not to him.

t. Do not, dear father.

t. Andromache, I am offended with you  
 ne love you bear me, get you in. [Exit ANDROMACHE.

. This foolish, dreaming, superstitious girl  
 all these bodements.

. O farewell, dear Hector!  
 how thou diest! look, how thy eye turns pale!  
 how thy wounds do bleed at many vents!  
 how Troy roars! how Hecuba cries out!  
 or Andromache shrills her dolour forth!  
 , distraction, frenzy, and amazement,  
 tless antics, one another meet,  
 cry — Hector! Hector's dead! O Hector!

. Away! — Away! —

. Farewell. — Yet, soft! — Hector, I take my leave:  
 ost thyself and all our Troy deceive. [Exit.

t. You are amaz'd, my liege, at her exclaim.  
 and cheer the town: we'll forth, and fight;  
 is worth praise, and tell you them at night.

. Farewell: the gods with safety stand about thee!  
 [Exeunt severally PRIAM and HECTOR. Alarums.

. They are at it; hark! — Proud Diomed, believe,  
 to lose my arm, or win my sleeve. [Going.

Enter PANDARUS.

t. Do you hear, my lord? do you hear?

*Tro.* What now?

*Pan.* Here 's a letter come from yond' poor girl.

*Tro.* Let me read.

*Pan.* A whoreson phthisick, a whoreson rascally phthisick so troubles me, and the foolish fortune of this girl; and what one thing, what another, that I shall leave you one o' these days: and I have a rheum in mine eyes too; and such an ache in my bones, that, unless a man were cursed, I cannot tell what to think on't. — What says she there?

*Tro.* Words, words, mere words, no matter from the heart;  
[*Tearing the letter.*]

Th' effect doth operate another way. —

Go, wind to wind, there turn and change together. —

My love with words and errors still she feeds,

But edifies another with her deeds. [*Exeunt severally.*]

## SCENE IV.

Between Troy and the Grecian Camp.

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter THERSITES.*

*Ther.* Now they are clapper-clawing one another: I'll go look on. That dissembling abominable varlet, Diomed, has got that same scurvy doting foolish young knave's sleeve, of Troy there, in his helm: I would fain see them meet; that that same young Trojan ass, that loves the whore there, might send that Greekish whoremasterly villain, with the sleeve, back to the dissembling luxurious drab of a sleeveless errand. O' the other side, the policy of those crafty swearing rascals, — that stale old mouse-eaten dry cheese, Nestor, and that same dog-fox, Ulysses, — is not proved worth a blackberry: — they set me up in policy that mongrel cur, Ajax, against that dog of as bad a kind, Achilles; and now is the cur Ajax prouder than the cur Achilles, and will not arm to-day: whereupon the Grecians begin to proclaim barbarism, and policy grows into an ill opinion. Soft! here comes sleeve, and th' other.

*Enter DIOMEDES, TROILUS following.*

*Tro.* Fly not; for shouldst thou take the river Styx,  
I would swim after.

*Dio.* Thou dost miscall retire:  
 o not fly, but advantageous care  
 ithdrew me from the odds of multitude.  
 ve at thee!

*Ther.* Hold thy whore, Grecian! — now for thy whore, Tro-  
 ! — now the sleeve! now the sleeve!

[*Exeunt TROILUS and DIOMEDES, fighting.*]

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* What art thou, Greek? art thou for Hector's match?  
 thou of blood, and honour?

*Ther.* No, no; — I am a rascal; a scurvy railing knave, a  
 y filthy rogue.

*Hect.* I do believe thee: — live.

[*Exit.*]

*Ther.* God-a-mercy, that thou wilt believe me; but a plague  
 ak thy neck, for frightening me! What's become of the wenching  
 ues? I think, they have swallowed one another: I would  
 gh at that miracle; yet, in a sort, lechery eats itself. I'll seek  
 m.

[*Exit.*]

## SCENE V.

The Same.

*Enter DIOMEDES and a Servant.*

*Dio.* Go, go, my servant, take thou Troilus' horse;  
 sent the fair steed to my lady Cressid.

low, commend my service to her beauty;  
 I her, I have chastis'd the amorous Trojan,  
 I am her knight by proof.

*Serv.*

I go, my lord.

[*Exit Servant.*]

*Enter AGAMEMNON.*

*Agam.* Renew, renew! The fierce Polydamus  
 h beat down Menon: bastard Margarelon  
 h Doreus prisoner,  
 I stands colossus-wise, waving his beam,  
 n the pashed corsages of the kings  
 'rophus and Cediús: Polixenes is slain;



Amphimachus, and Thoas, deadly hurt;  
Patroclus ta'en, or slain; and Palamedes  
Sore hurt and bruised: the dreadful Sagittary  
Appals our numbers. Haste we, Diomed,  
To reinforcement, or we perish all.

*Enter NESTOR.*

*Nest.* Go, bear Patroclus' body to Achilles, —  
And bid the snail-pac'd Ajax arm for shame. —  
There is a thousand Hectors in the field:  
Now, here he fights on Galathea his horse,  
And there lacks work; anon, he's there afoot,  
And there they fly, or die, like scaled sculls  
Before the belching whale: then, is he yonder,  
And there the strawy Greeks, ripe for his edge,  
Fall down before him, like the mower's swath.  
Here, there, and every where, he leaves, and takes;  
Dexterity so obeying appetite,  
That what he will, he does; and does so much,  
That proof is call'd impossibility.

*Enter ULYSSES.*

*Ulyss.* O, courage, courage, princes! great Achilles  
Is arming, weeping, cursing, vowing vengeance.  
Patroclus' wounds have rous'd his drowsy blood,  
Together with his mangled Myrmidons,  
That noseless, handless, hack'd and chipp'd, come to him,  
Crying on Hector. Ajax hath lost a friend,  
And foams at mouth, and he is arm'd, and at it,  
Roaring for Troilus; who hath done to-day  
Mad and fantastic execution,  
Engaging and redeeming of himself,  
With such a careless force, and forceless care,  
As if that luck, in very spite of cunning,  
Bade him win all.

*Enter AJAX.*

*Ajax.* Troilus! thou coward Troilus!

*Ex*  
39

*Dio.*

Ay, there, there.

*Nest.* So, so, we draw together.*Enter* ACHILLES.*Achil.*

Where is this Hector?

Come, come, thou boy-queller! show thy face;

Know what it is to meet Achilles angry.

Hector! where 's Hector? I will none but Hector. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VI.

Another Part of the Field.

*Enter* AJAX.*Ajax.* Troilus! thou coward Troilus, show thy head!*Enter* DIOMEDES.*Dio.* Troilus, I say! where 's Troilus?*Ajax.*

What would'st thou?

*Dio.* I would correct him.*Ajax.* Were I the general, thou should'st have my office,  
Ere that correction. — Troilus, I say! what, Troilus!*Enter* TROILUS.*Tro.* O, traitor Diomed! — turn thy false face, thou traitor,  
And pay thy life thou ow'st me for my horse!*Dio.* Ha! art thou there?*Ajax.* I'll fight with him alone: stand, Diomed.*Dio.* He is my prize, I will not look upon.*Tro.* Come both, you coggling Greeks; have at you both.[*Exeunt, fighting.*]*Enter* HECTOR.*Hect.* Yea, Troilus? O! well fought, my youngest brother.*Enter* ACHILLES.*Achil.* Now do I see thee. Ha! — Have at thee, Hector.*Hect.* Pause, if thou wilt.*Achil.* I do disdain thy courtesy, proud Trojan.

Be happy that my arms are out of use:

My rest and negligence befriend thee now,  
But thou anon shalt hear of me again;  
Till when, go seek thy fortune.

[Exit.

*Hect.* Fare thee well.  
I would have been much more a fresher man,  
Had I expected thee. — How now, my brother!

*Re-enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* Ajax hath ta'en Æneas: shall it be?  
No, by the flame of yonder glorious heaven,  
He shall not carry him: I'll be taken too,  
Or bring him off. — Fate, hear me what I say!  
I reckon not though I end my life to-day.

[Exit.

*Enter one in sumptuous Armour.*

*Hect.* Stand, stand, thou Greek: thou art a goodly mark. —  
No! wilt thou not? — I like thy armour well;  
I'll frush it, and unlock the rivets all,  
But I'll be master of it. — Wilt thou not, beast, abide?  
Why then, fly on, I'll hunt thee for thy hide.

[Exeunt.

## SCENE VII.

The Same.

*Enter ACHILLES, with Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Come here about me, you my Myrmidons;  
Mark what I say. — Attend me where I wheel:  
Strike not a stroke, but keep yourselves in breath;  
And when I have the bloody Hector found,  
Empale him with your weapons round about;  
In fellest manner execute your aims.  
Follow me, Sirs, and my proceedings eye. —  
It is decreed — Hector the great must die.

[Exeunt.

## SCENE VIII.

The Same.

*Enter MENELAUS and PARIS, fighting: then, THERSITES.*

*Ther.* The cuckold and the cuckold-maker are at it. Now, all! now, dog! 'Loo, Paris, 'loo! now, my double-henned narrow! 'loo, Paris, 'loo! The bull has the game: — 'ware horns, ho!

*[Exeunt PARIS and MENELAUS.]**Enter MARGARELON.*

*Mar.* Turn, slave, and fight.

*Ther.* What art thou?

*Mar.* A bastard son of Priam's

*Ther.* I am a bastard too. I love bastards; I am a bastard egot, bastard instructed, bastard in mind, bastard in valour, in very thing illegitimate. One bear will not bite another, and therefore should one bastard? Take heed, the quarrel's most minous to us: if the son of a whore fight for a whore, he tempts judgment. Farewell, bastard.

*Mar.* The devil take thee, coward!

*[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE IX.

Another Part of the Field.

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* Most putrified core, so fair without,  
thy goodly armour thus hath cost thy life.  
How is my day's work done; I'll take good breath:  
Rest, sword; thou hast thy fill of blood and death!

*[Puts off his Helmet, and lays his Sword aside.]**Enter ACHILLES and Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Look, Hector, how the sun begins to set;  
How ugly night comes breathing at his heels:  
Even with the vail and dark'ning of the sun,  
To close the day up, Hector's life is done.

*Hect.* I am unarm'd: forego this vantage, Greek.

*Achil.* Strike, fellows, strike! this is the man I seek.

*[HECTOR falls.]*

So, Ilium, fall thou next! now, Troy, sink down;  
 Here lies thy heart, thy sinews, and thy bone. —  
 On, Myrmidons; and cry you all amain,  
 Achilles hath the mighty Hector slain. [*A Retreat sounded.*  
 Hark! a retire upon our Grecian part.

*Myr.* The Trojan trumpets sound the like, my lord.

*Achil.* The dragon wing of night o'erspreads the earth,  
 And, stickler like, the armies separates.  
 My half-supp'd sword, that frankly would have fed,  
 Pleas'd with this dainty bit, thus goes to bed. —

[*Sheaths his Sword.*

Come, tie his body to my horse's tail;  
 Along the field I will the Trojan trail.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE X.

The Same.

*Enter AGAMEMNON, AJAX, MENELAUS, NESTOR, DIOMEDES,  
 and Others, marching. Shouts within.*

*Agam.* Hark! hark! what shout is that?

*Nest.*

Peace, drums!

[*Within.*]

Achilles!

Achilles! Hector's slain! Achilles!

*Dio.* The bruit is, Hector's slain, and by Achilles.

*Ajax.* If it be so, yet bragless let it be:

Great Hector was a man as good as he.

*Agam.* March patiently along. — Let one be sent

To pray Achilles see us at our tent. —

If in his death the gods have us befriended,

Great Troy is ours, and our sharp wars are ended.

[*Exeunt, marching.*

## SCENE XI.

Another Part of the Field.

*Enter ÆNEAS and Trojan Forces.*

*Æne.* Stand, ho! yet are we masters of the field.

*Never go home: here starve we out the night.*

*Enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* Hector is slain.

*All.* Hector? — The gods forbid!

*Tro.* He's dead; and at the murderer's horse's tail,  
In beastly sort dragg'd through the shameful field. —  
Frown on, you heavens, effect your rage with speed!  
Sit, gods, upon your thrones, and smile at Troy!  
[say, at once let your brief plagues be mercy,  
And linger not our sure destructions on!

*Æne.* My lord, you do discomfort all the host.

*Tro.* You understand me not, that tell me so.  
[do not speak of flight, of fear, of death;  
But dare all imminence, that gods and men  
Address their dangers in. Hector is gone!  
Who shall tell Priam so, or Hecuba?  
Let him, that will a screech-owl eye be call'd,  
Go in to Troy, and say there — Hector's dead:  
There is a word will Priam turn to stone,  
Make wells and Niobes of the maids and wives,  
Cold statues of the youth; and, in a word,  
Scare Troy out of itself. But, march, away:  
Hector is dead; there is no more to say.  
Stay yet. — You vile abominable tents,  
Thus proudly pight upon our Phrygian plains,  
Let Titan rise as early as he dare,  
I'll through and through you! — And, thou great-siz'd coward,  
No space of earth shall sunder our two hates:  
I'll haunt thee like a wicked conscience still,  
That mouldeth goblins swift as frenzy's thoughts. —  
Strike a free march to Troy! — with comfort go:  
Hope of revenge shall hide our inward woe.

*[Exeunt ÆNEAS and Trojan Forces.]*

*As TROILUS is going out, enter, from the other side, PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* But hear you, hear you!

*Tro.* Hence, broker, lackey! ignomy and shame  
Pursue thy life, and live aye with thy name! *[Exit TROILUS]*

*Pan.* A goodly medicine for mine aching bones! — O world! world! world! thus is the poor agent despised. O, traitors and bawds, how earnestly are you set a' work, and how ill requited! why should our endeavour be so loved, and the performance so loathed? what verse for it? what instance for it? — Let me see. —

Full merrily the humble-bee doth sing,  
Till he hath lost his honey, and his sting;  
And being once subdued in armed tail,  
Sweet honey and sweet notes together fail. —

Good traders in the flesh, set this in your painted cloths.

As many as be here of Pander's fall,  
Your eyes, half out, weep out at Pandar's Hall,  
Or, if you cannot weep, yet give some groans,  
Though not for me, yet for your aching bones.  
Brethren, and sisters, of the hold-door trade,  
Some two months hence my will shall here be made:  
It should be now, but that my fear is this, —  
Some galled goose of Winchester would hiss.  
Till then I 'll sweat, and seek about for eases;  
And at that time bequeath you my diseases.

[*Exit.*]

# TITUS ANDRONICUS.

---

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

- |                                                                                       |                                                           |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>SATURNINUS</b> , Son to the late Emperor of Rome, and afterwards declared Emperor. | <b>PUBLIUS</b> , Son to Marcus the Tribune.               |
| <b>BASSIANUS</b> , Brother to Saturninus; in love with Lavinia.                       | <b>ÆMILIUS</b> , a noble Roman.                           |
| <b>TITUS ANDRONICUS</b> , a noble Roman, General against the Goths.                   | <b>ALARBUS</b> ,                                          |
| <b>MARCUS ANDRONICUS</b> , Tribune of the People; and Brother to Titus.               | <b>DEMETRIUS</b> , } Sons to Tamora.                      |
| <b>LUCIUS</b> ,                                                                       | <b>CHIRON</b> ,                                           |
| <b>QUINTUS</b> , } Sons to Titus Andronicus.                                          | <b>AARON</b> , a Moor, beloved by Tamora.                 |
| <b>MARTIUS</b> ,                                                                      | <b>A Captain</b> , Tribune, Messenger, and Clown; Romans. |
| <b>MUTIUS</b> ,                                                                       | <b>Goths and Romans.</b>                                  |
| <b>Young LUCIUS</b> , a Boy, Son to Lucius.                                           | <b>TAMORA</b> , Queen of the Goths.                       |
|                                                                                       | <b>LAVINIA</b> , Daughter to Titus Andronicus.            |
|                                                                                       | <b>A Nurse</b> , and a black Child.                       |

Kinsmen of Titus, Senators, Tribunes, Officers, Soldiers, and Attendants.

SCENE, Rome; and the Country near it.

---

## ACT I. SCENE I.

Rome. Before the Capitol.

*The Tomb of the Andronici appearing; the Tribunes and Senators aloft, as in the Senate. Enter, below, SATURNINUS and his Followers, on one side; and BASSIANUS and his Followers, on the other; with Drum and Colours.*

**Sat.** Noble patricians, patrons of my right,  
Defend the justice of my cause with arms;

IV.

401



And, countrymen, my loving followers,  
Plead my successive title with your swords.  
I am his first-born son, that was the last  
That wore the imperial diadem of Rome :  
Then, let my father's honours live in me,  
Nor wrong mine age with this indignity.

*Bas.* Romans, — friends, followers, favourers of my  
If ever Bassianus, Cæsar's son,  
Were gracious in the eyes of royal Rome,  
Keep then this passage to the Capitol;  
And suffer not dishonour to approach  
Th' imperial seat, to virtue consecrate,  
To justice, continence, and nobility,  
But let desert in pure election shine;  
And, Romans, fight for freedom in your choice.

*Enter MARCUS ANDRONICUS, aloft, with the Crown.*

*Mar.* Princes, that strive by factions and by friends,  
Ambitiously for rule and empery,  
Know, that the people of Rome, for whom we stand  
A special party, have by common voice  
In election for the Roman empery,  
Chosen Andronicus, surnamed Pius,  
For many good and great deserts to Rome :  
A nobler man, a braver warrior,  
Lives not this day within the city walls.  
He by the senate is accited home,  
From weary wars against the barbarous Goths;  
That, with his sons, a terror to our foes,  
Hath yok'd a nation strong, train'd up in arms.  
Ten years are spent since first he undertook  
This cause of Rome, and chastised with arms  
Our enemies' pride: five times he hath return'd  
Bleeding to Rome, bearing his valiant sons  
In coffins from the field;  
And now at last, laden with honour's spoils,  
*Returns the good Andronicus to Rome,*

Renowned Titus, flourishing in arms.  
 Let us entreat, — by honour of his name,  
 Whom worthily you would have now succeed,  
 And in the Capitol and senate's right,  
 Whom you pretend to honour and adore, —  
 That you withdraw you, and abate your strength:  
 Dismiss your followers, and, as suitors should,  
 Plead your deserts in peace and humbleness.

*Sat.* How fair the tribune speaks to calm my thoughts.

*Bas.* Marcus Andronicus, so I do affy  
 In thy uprightness and integrity,  
 And so I love and honour thee and thine,  
 Thy noble brother Titus, and his sons,  
 And her, to whom my thoughts are humbled all,  
 Gracious Lavinia, Rome's rich ornament,  
 That I will here dismiss my loving friends;  
 And to my fortunes, and the people's favour,  
 Commit my cause in balance to be weigh'd.

*[Exeunt the Followers of BASSIANUS.]*

*Sat.* Friends, that have been thus forward in my right,  
 I thank you all, and here dismiss you all;  
 And to the love and favour of my country  
 Commit myself, my person, and the cause.

*[Exeunt the Followers of SATURNINUS.]*

Rome, be as just and gracious unto me,  
 As I am condent and kind to thee. —  
 Open the gates, and let me in.

*Bas.* Tribunes, and me, a poor competitor.

*[SAT. and BAS. go into the Capitol, and exeunt with  
 Senators, MARCUS, &c.]*

## SCENE II.

The Same.

*Enter a Captain, and Others.*

*Cap.* Romans, make way! The good Andronicus,  
*Patron of virtue, Rome's best champion,*

Successful in the battles that he fights,  
 With honour, and with fortune, is return'd,  
 From where he circumscribed with his sword,  
 And brought to yoke, the enemies of Rome.

*Sound Drums and Trumpets, &c. Enter MARTIUS and MUTIUS:  
 after them, two Men bearing a Coffin covered with black; then  
 LUCIUS and QUINTUS. After them, TITUS ANDRONICUS; and  
 then TAMORA, with ALARBUS, CHIRON, DEMETRIUS, AARON,  
 and other Goths, prisoners; Soldiers and People, following.  
 The Bearers set down the Coffin, and TITUS speaks.*

*Tit.* Hail, Rome, victorious in thy mourning weeds!  
 Lo! as the bark that hath discharg'd her fraught  
 Returns with precious lading to the bay,  
 From whence at first she weigh'd her anchorage,  
 Cometh Andronicus, bound with laurel boughs,  
 To re-salute his country with his tears;  
 Tears of true joy for his return to Rome.  
 Thou great defender of this Capitol,  
 Stand gracious to the rites that we intend!  
 Romans, of five-and-twenty valiant sons,  
 Half of the number that king Priam had,  
 Behold the poor remains, alive, and dead!  
 These that survive let Rome reward with love;  
 These that I bring unto their latest home,  
 With burial amongst their ancestors:  
 Here Goths have given me leave to sheath my sword.  
 Titus, unkind, and careless of thine own,  
 Why suffer'st thou thy sons, unburied yet,  
 To hover on the dreadful shore of Styx? —  
 Make way to lay them by their brethren. [*The Tomb is opened.*]  
 There greet in silence, as the dead are wont,  
 And sleep in peace, slain in your country's wars!  
 O sacred receptacle of my joys,  
 Sweet cell of virtue and nobility,  
 How many sons hast thou of mine in store,  
 That thou wilt never render to me more?

*Luc.* Give us the proudest prisoner of the Goths,  
That we may hew his limbs, and on a pile  
*Ad manes fratrum* sacrifice his flesh,  
Before this earthly prison of their bones;  
That so the shadows be not unappeas'd,  
Nor we disturb'd with prodigies on earth.

*Tit.* I give him you; the noblest that survives,  
The eldest son of this distressed queen.

*Tam.* Stay, Roman brethren! — Gracious conqueror,  
Victorious Titus, rue the tears I shed,  
A mother's tears in passion for her son:  
And, if thy sons were ever dear to thee,  
O! think my son to be as dear to me.  
Sufficeth not, that we are brought to Rome,  
To beautify thy triumphs, and return,  
Captive to thee, and to thy Roman yoke;  
But must my sons be slaughter'd in the streets,  
For valiant doings in their country's cause?  
O! if to fight for king and common weal  
Were piety in thine, it is in these.  
Andronicus, stain not thy tomb with blood.  
Wilt thou draw near the nature of the gods?  
Draw near them, then, in being merciful:  
Sweet mercy is nobility's true hadge.  
Thrice-noble Titus, spare my first-born son.

*Tit.* Patient yourself, Madam, and pardon me.  
These are their brethren, whom you Goths beheld  
Alive, and dead; and for their brethren slain,  
Religiously they ask a sacrifice:  
To this your son is mark'd; and die he must,  
T' appease their groaning shadows that are gone.

*Luc.* Away, with him! and make a fire straight;  
And with our swords, upon a pile of wood,  
Let 's hew his limbs, till they be clean consum'd.

[*Eceunt LUCIUS, QUINTUS, MARTIUS, and MUTIUS,*  
*with ALARBUS.*

*Tam.* O cruel, irreligious piety!

*Chi.* Was ever Scythia half so barbarous?

*Dem.* Oppose not Scythia to ambitious Rome.

Alarbus goes to rest; and we survive  
To tremble under Titus' threatening look.  
Then, Madam, stand resolv'd; but hope withal,  
The self-same gods, that arm'd the queen of Troy  
With opportunity of sharp revenge  
Upon the Thracian tyrant in his tent,  
May favour Tamora, the queen of Goths,  
(When Goths were Goths, and Tamora was queen)  
To quit the bloody wrongs upon her foes.

*Re-enter LUCIUS, QUINTUS, MARTIUS, and MUTIUS, with their  
Swords bloody.*

*Lue.* See, lord and father, how we have perform'd  
Our Roman rites. Alarbus' limbs are lopp'd,  
And entrails feed the sacrificing fire,  
Whose smoke like incense doth perfume the sky.  
Remaineth nought, but to inter our brethren,  
And with loud 'larums welcome them to Rome.

*Tit.* Let it be so; and let Andronicus  
Make this his latest farewell to their souls.

*[Trumpets sounded, and the Coffins laid in the Tomb.]*

In peace and honour rest you here, my sons;  
Rome's readiest champions, repose you here in rest,  
Secure from worldly chances and mishaps!  
Here lurks no treason, here no envy swells,  
Here grow no damned grudges; here are no storms,  
No noise, but silence and eternal sleep.  
In peace and honour rest you here, my sons!

*Enter LAVINIA.*

*Lav.* In peace and honour live lord Titus long;  
My noble lord and father, live in fame.  
Lo! at this tomb my tributary tears  
I render, for my brethren's obsequies;  
And at thy feet I kneel, with tears of joy  
Shed on the earth for thy return to Rome:

O! bless me here with thy victorious hand,  
Whose fortunes Rome's best citizens applaud.

*Tit.* Kind Rome, that hast thus lovingly reserv'd  
The cordial of mine age to glad my heart! —  
Lavinia, live; outlive thy father's days,  
And fame's eternal date, for virtue's praise!

*Enter* MARCUS ANDRONICUS, SATURNINUS, BASSIANUS, and  
*Others.*

*Mar.* Long live lord Titus, my beloved brother,  
Gracious triumpher in the eyes of Rome!

*Tit.* Thanks, gentle tribune, noble brother Marcus.

*Mar.* And welcome, nephews, from successful wars,  
You that survive, and you that sleep in fame.  
Fair lords, your fortunes are alike in all,  
That in your country's service drew your swords;  
But safer triumph is this funeral pomp,  
That hath aspir'd to Solon's happiness,  
And triumphs over chance in honour's bed. —  
Titus Andronicus, the people of Rome,  
Whose friend in justice thou hast ever been,  
Send thee by me, their tribune and their trust,  
This palliament of white and spotless hue;  
And name thee in election for the empire,  
With these our late-deceased emperor's sons.  
Be *candidatus* then, and put it on,  
And help to set a head on headless Rome.

*Tit.* A better head her glorious body fits,  
Than his, that shakes for age and feebleness:  
What! should I don this robe, and trouble you?  
Be chosen with proclamations to-day;  
To-morrow, yield up rule, resign my life,  
And set abroad new business for you all? —  
Rome, I have been thy soldier forty years,  
And led my country's strength successfully,  
And buried one and twenty valiant sons,  
*Knighted in field, slain manfully in arms,*

In right and service of their noble country.

Give me a staff of honour for mine age,

But not a sceptre to control the world :

Upright he held it, lords, that held it last.

*Mar.* Titus, thou shalt obtain and ask the empery.

*Sat.* Proud and ambitious tribune, canst thou tell? —

*Tit.* Patience, prince Saturninus.

*Sat.* Romans, do me right. —

Patricians, draw your swords, and sheath them not

Till Saturninus be Rome's emperor. —

Andronicus, would thou wert shipp'd to hell,

Rather than rob me of the people's hearts.

*Luc.* Proud Saturnine, interrupter of the good  
That noble-minded Titus means to thee!

*Tit.* Content thee, prince: I will restore to thee  
The people's hearts, and wean them from themselves.

*Bas.* Andronicus, I do not flatter thee,  
But honour thee, and will do till I die:  
My faction if thou strengthen with thy friends,  
I will most thankful be; and thanks, to men  
Of noble minds, is honourable meed.

*Tit.* People of Rome, and people's tribunes here,  
I ask your voices, and your suffrages:  
Will you bestow them friendly on Andronicus?

*Trib.* To gratify the good Andronicus,  
And gratulate his safe return to Rome,  
The people will accept whom he admits.

*Tit.* Tribunes, I thank you; and this suit I make,  
That you create your emperor's eldest son,  
Lord Saturnine, whose virtues will, I hope,  
Reflect on Rome, as Titan's rays on earth,  
And ripen justice in this common-weal:  
Then, if you will elect by my advice,  
Crown him, and say, — "Long live our emperor!"

*Mar.* With voices and applause of every sort,  
Patricians, and plebeians, we create

Saturninus, Rome's great emperor,  
ay, — "Long live our Emperor Saturnine!"

*[A long Flourish.]*

*t.* Titus Andronicus, for thy favours done  
in our election this day,  
thee thanks in part of thy deserts,  
will with deeds requite thy gentleness:  
for an onset, Titus, to advance  
ame and honourable family,  
ia will I make my empress,  
's royal mistress, mistress of my heart,  
n the sacred Pantheon her espouse.  
ie, Andronicus, doth this motion please thee?  
*t.* It doth, my worthy lord; and in this match  
me highly honour'd of your grace:  
ere, in sight of Rome, to Saturnine, —  
and commander of our common-weal,  
ide world's emperor, — do I consecrate  
ord, my chariot, and my prisoners;  
its well worthy Rome's imperial lord:  
re them, then, the tribute that I owe,  
honour's ensigns humbled at thy feet.

*t.* Thanks, noble Titus, father of my life!  
proud I am of thee, and of thy gifts,  
shall record; and, when I do forget  
ast of these unspeakable deserts,  
ns, forget your fealty to me.

*t.* Now, Madam, are you prisoner to an emperor;

*[To TAMORA.]*

n, that for your honour and your state,  
ise you nobly, and your followers.

*t.* A goodly lady, trust me; of the hue  
would choose, were I to choose anew. —  
up, fair queen, that cloudy countenance:  
gh chance of war hath wrought this change of cheer,  
com'st not to be made a scorn in Rome:  
ly shall be thy usage every way.



Rest on my word, and let not discontent  
Daunt all your hopes: Madam, he comforts you,  
Can make you greater than the queen of Goths. —  
Lavinia, you are not displeas'd with this?

*Lav.* Not I, my lord; sith true nobility  
Warrants these words in princely courtesy.

*Sat.* Thanks, sweet Lavinia. — Romans, let us go.  
Ransomless here we set our prisoners free:  
Proclaim our honours, lords, with trump and drum.

*Bas.* Lord Titus, by your leave, this maid is mine.

[*Seizing LAVINIA.*]

*Tit.* How, Sir? Are you in earnest, then, my lord?

*Bas.* Ay, noble Titus; and resolv'd withal,  
To do myself this reason and this right.

[*The Emperor courts TAMORA in dumb show.*]

*Mar.* *Suum cuique* is our Roman justice:  
This prince in justice seizeth but his own.

*Luc.* And that he will, and shall, if Lucius live.

*Tit.* Traitors, avaunt! Where is the emperor's guard?  
Treason, my lord! Lavinia is surpriz'd.

*Sat.* Surpriz'd! By whom?

*Bas.* By him that justly may  
Bear his betroth'd from all the world away.

[*Exeunt MARCUS and BASSIANUS, with LAVINIA.*]

*Mut.* Brothers, help to convey her hence away,  
And with my sword I'll keep this door safe.

[*Exeunt LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and MARTIUS.*]

*Tit.* Follow, my lord, and I'll soon bring her back.

*Mut.* My lord, you pass not here.

*Tit.* What, villain boy!  
Barr'st me my way in Rome? [TITUS kills MUTIUS.]

*Mut.* Help, Lucius, help!

*Re-enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* My lord, you are unjust; and, more than so,  
In wrongful quarrel you have slain your son.

*Tit.* Nor thou, nor he, are any sons of mine:

My sons would never so dishonour me.  
 traitor, restore Lavinia to the emperor.

*Luc.* Dead, if you will; but not to be his wife,  
 that is another's lawful promis'd love.

[*Exit.*

*Sat.* No, Titus, no; the emperor needs her not,  
 nor her, nor thee, nor any of thy stock:  
 'I'll trust, by leisure, him that mocks me once;  
 hee never, nor thy traitorous haughty sons,  
 confederates all thus to dishonour me.  
 Was there none else in Rome to make a stale,  
 out Saturnine? Full well, Andronicus,  
 agree these deeds with that proud brag of thine,  
 that saidst, I begg'd the empire at thy hands.

*Tit.* O monstrous! what reproachful words are these?

*Sat.* But go thy ways; go, give that changing piece  
 to him that flourish'd for her with his sword.  
 A valiant son-in-law thou shalt enjoy;  
 one fit to bandy with thy lawless sons,  
 to ruffle in the commonwealth of Rome.

*Tit.* These words are razors to my wounded heart.

*Sat.* And therefore, lovely Tamora, queen of Goths,  
 that, like the stately Phœbe 'mongst her nymphs,  
 dost overshadow the gallant'st dames of Rome,  
 if thou be pleas'd with this my sudden choice,  
 behold, I choose thee, Tamora, for my bride,  
 and will create thee empress of Rome.  
 Peak, queen of Goths, dost thou applaud my choice?  
 and here I swear by all the Roman gods, —  
 with priest and holy water are so near,  
 and tapers burn so bright, and every thing  
 in readiness for Hymeneus stand, —  
 will not re-salute the streets of Rome,  
 nor climb my palace, till from forth this place  
 lead espous'd my bride along with me.

*Tam.* And here, in sight of heaven, to Rome I swear,  
 'Saturnine advance the queen of Goths,

She will a handmaid be to his desires,  
A loving nurse, a mother to his youth.

*Sat.* Ascend, fair queen, Pantheon. — Lords, accompany  
Your noble emperor, and his lovely bride,  
Sent by the heavens for prince Saturnine,  
Whose wisdom hath her fortune conquered.  
There shall we consummate our spousal rites.

*[Exeunt SATURNINUS and his Followers; TAMORA,  
and her Sons; AARON and Goths.]*

*Tit.* I am not bid to wait upon this bride.  
Titus, when wert thou wont to walk alone,  
Dishonour'd thus, and challenged of wrongs?

*Re-enter MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and MARTIUS.*

*Mar.* O, Titus, see, O, see what thou hast done!  
In a bad quarrel slain a virtuous son.

*Tit.* No, foolish tribune, no; no son of mine,  
Nor thou, nor these, confederates in the deed  
That hath dishonour'd all our family:  
Unworthy brother, and unworthy sons!

*Luc.* But let us give him burial, as becomes:  
Give Mutius burial with our brethren.

*Tit.* Traitors, away! he rests not in this tomb.  
This monument five hundred years hath stood,  
Which I have sumptuously re-edified:  
Here none but soldiers, and Rome's servitors,  
Repose in fame; none basely slain in brawls.  
Bury him where you can, he comes not here.

*Mar.* My lord, this is impiety in you.  
My nephew Mutius' deeds do plead for him:  
He must be buried with his brethren.

*Quin. Mart.* And shall, or him we will accompany.

*Tit.* And shall! What villain was it spoke that word?

*Quin.* He that would vouch it in any place but here.

*Tit.* What! would you bury him in my despite?

*Mar.* No, noble Titus; but entreat of thee

*To pardon Mutius, and to bury him.*

*Tit.* Marcus, even thou hast struck upon my crest,  
 and, with these boys, mine honour thou hast wounded:  
 foes I do repute you every one;  
 , trouble me no more, but get you gone.

*Mart.* He is not with himself: let us withdraw.

*Quin.* Not I, till Mutius' bones be buried.

[*MARCUS and the Sons of TITUS kneel.*]

*Mar.* Brother, for in that name doth nature plead.

*Quin.* Father, and in that name doth nature speak.

*Tit.* Speak thou no more, if all the rest will speed.

*Mar.* Renowned Titus, more than half my soul, —

*Luc.* Dear father, soul and substance of us all, —

*Mar.* Suffer thy brother Marcus to inter  
 a noble nephew here in virtue's nest,  
 that died in honour and Lavinia's cause.  
 Thou art a Roman, be not barbarous:  
 the Greeks upon advice did bury Ajax,  
 that slew himself, and wise Laertes' son  
 did graciously plead for his funerals.  
 Not young Mutius, then, that was thy joy,  
 that barr'd his entrance here.

*Tit.* Rise, Marcus, rise. —  
 the dismall'st day is this, that e'er I saw,  
 to be dishonour'd by my sons in Rome! —  
 Tell, bury him, and bury me the next.

[*MUTIUS is put into the Tomb.*]

*Luc.* There lie thy bones, sweet Mutius, with thy friends,  
 till we with trophies do adorn thy tomb!

*All.* No man shed tears for noble Mutius;  
 he lives in fame that died in virtue's cause.

*Mar.* My lord, — to step out of these dreary dumps, —  
 now comes it that the subtle queen of Goths  
 of a sudden thus advanc'd in Rome?

*Tit.* I know not, Marcus, but I know it is;  
 whether by device or no, the heavens can tell.  
 I see not, then, beholding to the man

That brought her for this high good turn so far?  
Yes, and will nobly him remunerate.

*Flourish. Re-enter, at one side, SATURNINUS, attended;  
MORA, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON, and AARON: at the other  
BASSIANUS, LAVINIA, and Others.*

*Sat.* So Bassianus, you have play'd your prize:  
God give you joy, Sir, of your gallant bride.

*Bas.* And you of yours, my lord. I say no more,  
Nor wish no less; and so I take my leave.

*Sat.* Traitor, if Rome have law, or we have power,  
Thou and thy faction shall repent this rape.

*Bas.* Rape, call you it, my lord, to seize my own,  
My true-betrothed love, and now my wife?  
But let the laws of Rome determine all;  
Mean while, I am possess'd of that is mine.

*Sat.* 'T is good, Sir: you are very short with us;  
But, if we live, we'll be as sharp with you.

*Bas.* My lord, what I have done, as best I may,  
Answer I must, and shall do with my life:  
Only thus much I give your grace to know.  
By all the duties that I owe to Rome,  
This noble gentleman, lord Titus here,  
Is in opinion, and in honour, wrong'd;  
That in the rescue of Lavinia  
With his own hand did slay his youngest son,  
In zeal to you, and highly mov'd to wrath,  
To be controll'd in that he frankly gave.  
Receive him, then, to favour, Saturnine,  
That hath express'd himself, in all his deeds,  
A father, and a friend, to thee, and Rome.

*Tit.* Prince Bassianus, leave to plead my deeds:  
'T is thou, and those, that have dishonour'd me.  
Rome and the righteous heavens be my judge,  
How I have lov'd and honour'd Saturnine.

*Tam.* My worthy lord, if ever Tamora  
Were gracious in those princely eyes of thine,

Then hear me speak indifferently for all;  
And at my suit, sweet, pardon what is past.

*Sat.* What, Madam! be dishonour'd openly,  
And basely put it up without revenge?

*Tam.* Not so, my lord: the gods of Rome forefend,  
I should be author to dishonour you!

But, on mine honour, dare I undertake  
For good lord Titus' innocence in all,  
Whose fury, not dissembled, speaks his griefs.  
Then, at my suit look graciously on him;  
Lose not so noble a friend on vain suppose,  
Nor with sour looks afflict his gentle heart. —

[*Aside to SAT.*] My lord, be rul'd by me, be won at last;

Dissemble all your griefs and discontents:

You are but newly planted in your throne;

Lest, then, the people, and patricians too,

Upon a just survey, take Titus' part,

And so supplant you for ingratitude,

Which Rome reputes to be a heinous sin,

Yield at entreats, and then let me alone.

I'll find a day to massacre them all,

And raze their faction, and their family,

The cruel father, and his traitorous sons,

To whom I sued for my dear son's life;

And make them know what 't is to let a queen

Kneel in the streets, and beg for grace in vain. —

[*Aloud.*] Come, come, sweet emperor, — come, Andronicus, —

Take up this good old man, and cheer the heart

That dies in tempest of thy angry frown.

*Sat.* Rise, Titus, rise: my empress hath prevail'd.

*Tit.* I thank your majesty, and her, my lord.

These words, these looks, infuse new life in me.

*Tam.* Titus, I am incorporate in Rome,

A Roman now adopted happily,

And must advise the emperor for his good.

This day all quarrels die, Andronicus; —

And let it be mine honour, good my lord,

That I have reconcil'd your friends and you. —  
For you, prince Bassianus, I have pass'd  
My word and promise to the emperor,  
That you will be more mild and tractable. —  
And fear not, lords, — and you, Lavinia. —  
By my advice, all humbled on your knees,  
You shall ask pardon of his majesty.

*Luc.* We do; and vow to heaven, and to his highness,  
That what we did was mildly, as we might,  
Tendering our sister's honour, and our own.

*Mar.* That on mine honour here I do protest.

*Sat.* Away, and talk not: trouble us no more. —

*Tam.* Nay, nay, sweet emperor, we must all be friends.  
The tribune and his nephews kneel for grace:  
I will not be denied. Sweet heart, look back.

*Sat.* Marcus, for thy sake, and thy brother's here,  
And at my lovely Tamora's entreats,  
I do remit these young men's heinous faults.  
Stand up.

Lavinia, though you left me like a churl,  
I found a friend; and sure as death I swore,  
I would not part a bachelor from the priest.  
Come; if the emperor's court can feast two brides,  
You are my guest, Lavinia, and your friends. —  
This day shall be a love-day, Tamora.

*Tit.* To-morrow, an it please your majesty,  
To hunt the panther and the hart with me,  
With horn and hound we'll give your grace *bonjour*.

*Sat.* Be it so, Titus, and gramercy too.

[*Trumpets. Exit*

## ACT II. SCENE I.

The Same. Before the Palace.

*Enter AARON.*

*Aar.* Now climbeth Tamora Olympus' top,  
Safe out of fortune's shot; and sits aloft,

ecure of thunder's crack, or lightning flash,  
 Advanc'd above pale envy's threat'ning reach.  
 As when the golden sun salutes the morn,  
 And having gilt the ocean with his beams,  
 Gallops the zodiac in his glistering coach,  
 And overlooks the highest-peering hills;  
 So Tamora. —

Upon her wit doth earthly honour wait,  
 And virtue stoops and trembles at her frown.  
 Then, Aaron, arm thy heart, and fit thy thoughts,  
 To mount aloft with thy imperial mistress;  
 And mount her pitch, whom thou in triumph long  
 Hast prisoner held, fetter'd in amorous chains,  
 And faster bound to Aaron's charming eyes,  
 Than is Prometheus tied to Caucasus.  
 Away with slavish weeds, and servile thoughts!  
 I will be bright, and shine in pearl and gold,  
 To wait upon this new-made empress.  
 To wait, said I? to wanton with this queen,  
 This goddess, this Semiramis, this nymph,  
 This syren, that will charm Rome's Saturnine,  
 And see his shipwreck, and his commonweal's.  
 Holla! what storm is this?

*Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON, braving.*

*Dem.* Chiron, thy years want wit, thy wit wants edge  
 And manners, to intrude where I am grac'd,  
 And may, for aught thou know'st, affected be.

*Chi.* Demetrius, thou dost over-ween in all,  
 And so in this, to bear me down with braves.  
 'T is not the difference of a year, or two,  
 Makes me less gracious, or thee more fortunate:  
 I am as able, and as fit, as thou,  
 To serve, and to deserve my mistress' grace;  
 And that my sword upon thee shall approve,  
 And plead my passions for Lavinia's love.

*Aar.* Clubs, clubs! these lovers will not keep the peace.



*Dem.* Why, boy, although our mother, unadvis'd,  
Gave you a dancing-rapier by your side,  
Are you so desperate grown, to threat your friends?  
Go to; have your lath glued within your sheath,  
Till you know better how to handle it.

*Chi.* Mean while, Sir, with the little skill I have,  
Full well shalt thou perceive how much I dare.

*Dem.* Ay, boy; grow ye so brave? *[They draw.]*

*Aar.* Why, how now, lords!  
So near the emperor's palace dare you draw,  
And maintain such a quarrel openly?  
Full well I wot the ground of all this grudge:  
I would not for a million of gold,  
The cause were known to them it most concerns;  
Nor would your noble mother for much more  
Be so dishonour'd in the court of Rome.  
For shame! put up.

*Dem.* Not I; till I have sheath'd  
My rapier in his bosom, and, withal,  
Thrust those reproachful speeches down his throat,  
That he hath breath'd in my dishonour here.

*Chi.* For that I am prepar'd and full resolv'd,  
Foul-spoken coward, that thunder'st with thy tongue,  
And with thy weapon nothing dar'st perform.

*Aar.* Away, I say!  
Now by the gods that warlike Goths adore,  
This petty brabble will undo us all. —  
Why, lords, — and think you not how dangerous  
It is to jet upon a prince's right?  
What! is Lavinia then become so loose,  
Or Bassianus so degenerate,  
That for her love such quarrels may be broach'd,  
Without controlment, justice, or revenge?  
Young lords, beware! — an should the empress know  
This discord's ground, the music would not please.

*Chi.* I care not, I, knew she and all the world:  
*I love Lavinia more than all the world.*

*Dem.* Youngling, learn thou to make some meaner choice.  
Lavinia is thine elder brother's hope.

*Aar.* Why, are ye mad? or know ye not, in Rome  
How furious and impatient they be,  
And cannot brook competitors in love?  
I tell you, lords, you do but plot your deaths  
By this device.

*Chi.* Aaron, a thousand deaths  
Would I propose, to achieve her whom I love.

*Aar.* To achieve her! — How?

*Dem.* Why mak'st thou it so strange?  
She is a woman, therefore may be woo'd;  
She is a woman, therefore may be won;  
She is Lavinia, therefore must be lov'd.  
What, man! more water glideth by the mill  
Than wots the miller of; and easy it is  
Of a cut loaf to steal a shive, we know:  
Though Bassianus be the emperor's brother,  
Better than he have worn Vulcan's badge.

*Aar.* Ay, and as good as Saturninus may. [*Aside.*]

*Dem.* Then, why should he despair, that knows to court it  
With words, fair looks, and liberality?  
What! hast thou not full often struck a doe,  
And borne her cleanly by the keeper's nose?

*Aar.* Why then, it seems, some certain snatch or so  
Would serve your turns.

*Chi.* Ay, so the turn were serv'd.

*Dem.* Aaron, thou hast hit it.

*Aar.* Would you had hit it too;  
Then should not we be tir'd with this ado.  
Why, hark ye, hark ye, — and are you such fools,  
To square for this? Would it offend you, then,  
That both should speed?

*Chi.* Faith, not me.

*Dem.* Nor me, so I were one.

*Aar.* For shame! be friends, and join for that you jar.  
'T is policy and stratagem must do

That you affect; and so must you resolve,  
That what you cannot as you would achieve,  
You must, perforce, accomplish as you may.  
Take this of me: Lucrece was not more chaste  
Than this Lavinia, Bassianus' love.  
A speedier course than lingering languishment  
Must we pursue, and I have found the path.  
My lords, a solemn hunting is in hand;  
There will the lovely Roman ladies troop:  
The forest walks are wide and spacious,  
And many unfrequented plots there are,  
Fitted by kind for rape and villainy.  
Single you thither, then, this dainty doe,  
And strike her home by force, if not by words:  
This way, or not at all, stand you in hope.  
Come, come; our empress, with her sacred wit,  
To villainy and vengeance consecrate,  
Will we acquaint with all that we intend;  
And she shall file our engines with advice,  
That will not suffer you to square yourselves,  
But to your wishes' height advance you both.  
The emperor's court is like the house of fame,  
The palace full of tongues, of eyes, and ears:  
The woods are ruthless, dreadful, deaf, and dull;  
There speak, and strike, brave boys, and take your turns:  
There serve your lust, shadow'd from heaven's eye,  
And revel in Lavinia's treasury.

*Chi.* Thy counsel, lad, smells of no cowardice.

*Dem.* *Sit fas aut nefas*, till I find the stream

To cool this heat, a charm to calm these fits,  
*Per Styga, per manes vehor.*

[*Exeun*]

## SCENE II.

A Forest near Rome. Horns, and cry of Hounds heard.

*Enter* TITUS ANDRONICUS, *with Hunters, &c.* MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, *and* MARTIUS.

*Tit.* The hunt is up, the morn is bright and grey,  
The fields are fragrant, and the woods are green.  
Uncouple here, and let us make a bay,  
And wake the emperor and his lovely bride,  
And rouse the prince, and ring a hunter's peal,  
That all the court may echo with the noise.  
Sons, let it be your charge, as it is ours,  
To attend the emperor's person carefully:  
I have been troubled in my sleep this night,  
But dawning day new comfort hath inspir'd.

*[Horns wind a peal.*

*Enter* SATURNINUS, TAMORA, BASSIANUS, LAVINIA, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON, *and Attendants.*

*Tit.* Many good morrows to your majesty: —  
Madam, to you as many and as good. —  
I promised your grace a hunter's peal.

*Sat.* And you have rung it lustily, my lords,  
Somewhat too early for new-married ladies.

*Bas.* Lavinia, how say you?

*Lav.* I say, no;  
I have been broad awake two hours and more.

*Sat.* Come on, then: horse and chariots let us have,  
And to our sport. — Madam, now shall ye see  
Our Roman hunting.

*[To TAMORA.*

*Mar.* I have dogs, my lord,  
Will rouse the proudest panther in the chase,  
And climb the highest promontory top.

*Tit.* And I have horse will follow where the game  
Makes way, and run like swallows o'er the plain.

*Dem.* Chiron, we hunt not, we, with horse nor hound;  
But hope to pluck a dainty doe to ground.

*[Exeunt.*

## SCENE III.

A desert Part of the Forest.

*Enter AARON, with a Bag of Gold.*

*Aar.* He, that had wit, would think that I had none,  
To bury so much gold under a tree,  
And never after to inherit it.  
Let him that thinks of me so abjectly,  
Know that this gold must coin a stratagem,  
Which, cunningly effected, will beget  
A very excellent piece of villainy:  
And so repose, sweet gold, for their unrest,

*[Hides the Gold]*

That have their alms out of the empress' chest.

*Enter TAMORA.*

*Tam.* My lovely Aaron, wherefore look'st thou sad,  
When every thing doth make a gleeful boast?  
The birds chaunt melody on every bush;  
The snake lies rolled in the cheerful sun;  
The green leaves quiver with the cooling wind,  
And make a checquer'd shadow on the ground.  
Under their sweet shade, Aaron, let us sit,  
And, whilst the babbling echo mocks the hounds,  
Replying shrilly to the well-tun'd horns,  
As if a double hunt were heard at once,  
Let us sit down, and mark their yelling noise:  
And — after conflict, such as was suppos'd  
The wandering prince and Dido once enjoy'd.  
When with a happy storm they were surpris'd,  
And curtain'd with a counsel-keeping cave, —  
We may, each wreathed in the other's arms,  
Our pastimes done, possess a golden slumber;  
Whiles hounds, and horns, and sweet melodious birds,  
Be unto us, as is a nurse's song  
Of lullaby to bring her babe asleep.

*Aar.* Madam, though Venus govern your desires,  
 Saturn is dominator over mine.

What signifies my deadly-standing eye,  
 My silence, and my cloudy melancholy?  
 My fleece of woolly hair that now uncurls,  
 Even as an adder, when she doth unroll  
 To do some fatal execution?

No, Madam, these are no venereal signs:  
 Vengeance is in my heart, death in my hand,  
 Blood and revenge are hammering in my head.  
 Hark, Tamora, the empress of my soul,  
 Which never hopes more heaven than rests in thee,  
 This is the day of doom for Bassianus;  
 His Philomel must lose her tongue to-day:  
 Thy sons make pillage of her chastity,  
 And wash their hands in Bassianus' blood.  
 Seest thou this letter? take it up I pray thee,  
 And give the king this fatal-plotted scroll. —  
 Now question me no more; we are espied:  
 Here comes a parcel of our hopeful booty,  
 Which dreads not yet their lives' destruction.

*Tam.* Ah, my sweet Moor, sweeter to me than life!

*Aar.* No more, great empress. Bassianus comes:  
 Be cross with him; and I'll go fetch thy sons  
 To back thy quarrels, whatso'er they be.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter BASSIANUS and LAVINIA.*

*Bas.* Whom have we here? Rome's royal empress,  
 Unfurnish'd of her well-beseeming troop?  
 Or is it Dian, habited like her;  
 Who hath abandoned her holy groves,  
 To see the general hunting in this forest?

*Tam.* Saucy controller of my private steps!  
 Had I the power, that, some say, Dian had,  
 Thy temples should be planted presently  
 With horns, as was Actæon's; and the hounds

Should drive upon thy new-transformed limbs,  
Unmannerly intruder as thou art!

*Lav.* Under your patience, gentle empress,  
'T is thought you have a goodly gift in horning;  
And to be doubted, that your Moor and you  
Are singled forth to try experiments.  
Jove shield your husband from his hounds to-day!  
'T is pity, they should take him for a stag.

*Bas.* Believe me, queen, your swarth Cimmerian  
Doth make your honour of his body's hue,  
Spotted, detested, and abominable.  
Why are you sequester'd from all your train?  
Dismounted from your snow-white goodly steed,  
And wander'd hither to an obscure plot,  
Accompanied but with a barbarous Moor,  
If foul desire had not conducted you?

*Lav.* And being intercepted in your sport,  
Great reason that my noble lord be rated  
For sauciness! — I pray you, let us hence,  
And let her 'joy her raven-colour'd love;  
This valley fits the purpose passing well.

*Bas.* The king, my brother, shall have notice of this.

*Lav.* Ay, for these slips have made him noted long,  
Good king! to be so mightily abus'd.

*Tam.* Why have I patience to endure all this?

*Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON.*

*Dem.* How now, dear sovereign, and our gracious mother  
Why doth your highness look so pale and wan?

*Tam.* Have I not reason, think you, to look pale?  
These two have 'tic'd me hither to this place,  
A barren detested vale, you see, it is:  
The trees, though summer, yet forlorn and lean,  
O'ercome with moss, and baleful misletoe.  
Here never shines the sun; here nothing breeds,  
Unless the nightly owl, or fatal raven.  
And, when they show'd me this abhorred pit,

They told me, here, at dead time of the night,  
 A thousand fiends, a thousand hissing snakes,  
 Ten thousand swelling toads, as many urchins,  
 Would make such fearful and confused cries,  
 As any mortal body, hearing it,  
 Should straight fall mad, or else die suddenly.  
 No sooner had they told this hellish tale,  
 But straight they told me, they would bind me here  
 Unto the body of a dismal yew,  
 And leave me to this miserable death:  
 And then they call'd me, foul adulteress,  
 Lascivious Goth, and all the bitterest terms  
 That ever ear did hear to such effect;  
 And, had you not by wondrous fortune come,  
 This vengeance on me had they executed.  
 Revenge it, as you love your mother's life,  
 Or be ye not henceforth call'd my children.

*Dem.* This is a witness that I am thy son.

[*Stabs BASSIANUS.*

*Chi.* And this for me, struck home to show my strength.

[*Stabbing him likewise.*

*Lav.* Ay, come, Semiramis! — nay, barbarous Tamora;  
 For no name fits thy nature but thy own.

*Tam.* Give me thy poniard: you shall know, my boys,  
 Your mother's hand shall right your mother's wrong.

*Dem.* Stay, Madam, here is more belongs to her:  
 First, thrash the corn, then after burn the straw.  
 This minion stood upon her chastity,  
 Upon her nuptial vow, her loyalty,  
 And with that painted hope braves your mightiness:  
 And shall she carry this unto her grave?

*Chi.* An if she do, I would I were an eunuch.  
 Drag hence her husband to some secret hole,  
 And make his dead trunk pillow to our lust.

*Tam.* But when ye have the honey ye desire,  
 Let not this wasp outlive us both to sting.

*Chi.* I warrant you, Madam, we will make that sure. —



Come, mistress, now perforce we will enjoy  
That nice preserved honesty of yours.

*Lav.* O Tamora! thou bear'st a woman's face, —

*Tam.* I will not hear her speak: away with her!

*Lav.* Sweet lords, entreat her hear me but a word.

*Dem.* Listen, fair Madam: let it be your glory  
To see her tears; but be your heart to them,  
As unrelenting flint to drops of rain.

*Lav.* When did the tiger's young ones teach the dam?  
O! do not learn her wrath; she taught it thee.  
The milk, thou suck'dst from her, did turn to marble;  
Even at thy teat thou hadst thy tyranny.  
Yet every mother breeds not sons-alike:  
Do thou entreat her show a woman pity. [To CHIRON.

*Chi.* What! would'st thou have me prove myself a bastard?

*Lav.* 'T is true; the raven doth not hatch a lark:  
Yet have I heard, O, could I find it now!  
The lion, mov'd with pity, did endure  
To have his princely paws par'd all away.  
Some say that ravens foster forlorn children,  
The whilst their own birds famish in their nests:  
O! be to me, though thy hard heart say no,  
Nothing so kind, but something pitiful.

*Tam.* I know not what it means: Away with her!

*Lav.* O! let me teach thee: for my father's sake,  
That gave thee life, when well he might have slain thee,  
Be not obdurate. Open thy deaf ears.

*Tam.* Hadst thou in person ne'er offended me,  
Even for his sake am I pitiless. —  
Remember, boys, I pour'd forth tears in vain,  
To save your brother from the sacrifice;  
But fierce Andronicus would not relent.  
Therefore, away with her, and use her as you will:  
The worse to her, the better lov'd of me.

*Lav.* O Tamora! be call'd a gentle queen,  
And with thine own hands kill me in this place;

For 't is not life that I have begg'd so long:  
Poor I was slain when Bassianus died.

**Tam.** What begg'st thou then? fond woman, let me go.

*Lav.* 'T is present death I beg; and one thing more,  
That womanhood denies my tongue to tell.  
O! keep me from their worse than killing lust,  
And tumble me into some loathsome pit,  
Where never man's eye may behold my body:  
Do this, and be a charitable murderer.

*Tam.* So should I rob my sweet sons of their fee:  
No; let them satisfy their lust on thee.

*Dem.* Away! for thou hast stay'd us here too long.

*Lav.* No grace? no womanhood? Ah, beastly creature!  
The blot and enemy to our general name!  
Confusion fall —

Upon whose leaves are drops of new-shed blood,  
As fresh as morning's dew distill'd on flowers?

A very fatal place it seems to me: —

Speak, brother, hast thou hurt thee with the fall?

*Mart.* O, brother! with the dismall'st object hurt,  
That ever eye with sight made heart lament.

*Aar.* [*Aside.*] Now will I fetch the king to find them here;  
That he thereby may give a likely guess,  
How these were they that made away his brother. [*Exit AARON.*]

*Mart.* Why dost not comfort me, and help me out  
From this unhallow'd and blood-stained hole?

*Quin.* I am surprised with an uncouth fear;  
A chilling sweat o'er-runs my trembling joints:  
My heart suspects more than mine eye can see.

*Mart.* To prove thou hast a true-divining heart,  
Aaron and thou look down into this den,  
And see a fearful sight of blood and death.

*Quin.* Aaron is gone; and my compassionate heart  
Will not permit mine eyes once to behold  
The thing whereat it trembles by surmise.  
O! tell me how it is; for ne'er till now  
Was I a child, to fear I know not what.

*Mart.* Lord Bassianus lies embrewed here,  
All on a heap, like to a slaughter'd lamb,  
In this detested, dark, blood-drinking pit.

*Quin.* If it be dark, how dost thou know 't is he?

*Mart.* Upon his bloody finger he doth wear  
A precious ring, that lightens all the hole,  
Which, like a taper in some monument,  
Doth shine upon the dead man's earthy cheeks,  
And shows the ragged entrails of the pit:  
So pale did shine the moon on Pyramus,  
When he by night lay bath'd in maiden blood.  
O brother! help me with thy fainting hand, —  
If fear hath made thee faint, as me it hath, —  
Out of this fell devouring receptacle,  
As hateful as Cocytus' misty mouth.

*Quin.* Reach me thy hand, that I may help thee out;  
Or, wanting strength to do thee so much good,  
I may be pluck'd into the swallowing womb  
Of this deep pit, poor Bassianus' grave.  
I have no strength to pluck thee to the brink.

*Mart.* Nor I no strength to climb without thy help.

*Quin.* Thy hand once more: I will not loose again,  
Till thou art here aloft, or I below.

Thou canst not come to me; I come to thee.

[*Falls in.*]

*Enter SATURNINUS and AARON.*

*Sat.* Along with me: — I'll see what hole is here;  
And what he is that now is leap'd into it.  
Say, who art thou, that lately didst descend  
Into this gaping hollow of the earth?

*Mart.* The unhappy son of old Andronicus,  
Brought hither in a most unlucky hour,  
To find thy brother Bassianus dead.

*Sat.* My brother dead! I know, thou dost but jest:  
He and his lady both are at the lodge,  
Upon the north side of this pleasant chase;  
'T is not an hour since I left him there.

*Mart.* We know not where you left him all alive,  
But, out alas! here have we found him dead.

*Enter TAMORA, with Attendants: TITUS ANDRONICUS, and  
LUCIUS.*

*Tam.* Where is my lord, the king?

*Sat.* Here, Tamora; though griev'd with killing grief.

*Tam.* Where is thy brother Bassianus?

*Sat.* Now to the bottom dost thou search my wound:  
Poor Bassianus here lies murdered.

*Tam.* Then, all too late I bring this fatal writ,

[*Giving a Letter.*]

The complot of this timeless tragedy;  
And wonder greatly, that man's face can fold  
In pleasing smiles such murderous tyranny.

*Sat.* [*Reads.*] "An if we miss to meet him handsomely,  
Sweet huntsman, Bassianus 't is, we mean, —  
Do thou so much as dig the grave for him.  
Thou know'st our meaning: look for thy reward  
Among the nettles at the elder tree,  
Which overshades the mouth of that same pit,  
Where we decreed to bury Bassianus.  
Do this, and purchase us thy lasting friends."  
O, Tamora! was ever heard the like?  
This is the pit, and this the elder-tree.  
Look, Sirs, if you can find the huntsman out,  
That should have murder'd Bassianus here.

*Aar.* My gracious lord, here is the bag of gold.

[*Showing*

*Sat.* Two of thy whelps, [*To TITUS*] fell curs of bloody k  
Have here bereft my brother of his life. —  
Sirs, drag them from the pit unto the prison:  
There let them bide, until we have devis'd  
Some never-heard-of torturing pain for them.

*Tam.* What! are they in this pit? O wondrous thing!  
How easily murder is discovered!

*Tit.* High emperor, upon my feeble knee  
I beg this boon with tears not lightly shed;  
That this fell fault of my accursed sons,  
Accursed, if the fault be prov'd in them, —

*Sat.* If it be prov'd! you see, it is apparent. —  
Who found this letter? Tamora, was it you?

*Tam.* Andronicus himself did take it up.

*Tit.* I did, my lord: yet let me be their bail;  
For by my father's reverend tomb, I vow,  
They shall be ready at your highness' will,  
To answer their suspicion with their lives.

*Sat.* Thou shalt not bail them: see, thou follow me.  
Some bring the murder'd body, some the murderers:  
Let them not speak a word, the guilt is plain;  
For, by my soul, were there worse end than death,  
That end upon them should be executed.

*Tam.* Andronicus, I will entreat the king:  
Fear not thy sons, they shall do well enough.

*Tit.* Come, Lucius, come; stay not to talk with them.

*[Exeunt severally.]*

## SCENE V.

The Same.

*Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON, with LAVINIA, ravished; her  
Hands cut off, and her Tongue cut out.*

*Dem.* So, now go tell, an if thy tongue can speak,  
Who 't was that cut thy tongue, and ravish'd thee.

*Chi.* Write down thy mind, bewray thy meaning so;  
And, if thy stumps will let thee, play the scribe.

*Dem.* See, how with signs and tokens she can scrowl.

*Chi.* Go home, call for sweet water, wash thy hands.

*Dem.* She hath no tongue to call, nor hands to wash;  
And so let's leave her to her silent walks.

*Chi.* An 't were my case, I should go hang myself.

*Dem.* If thou hadst hands to help thee knit the cord.

*[Exeunt DEMETRIUS and CHIRON.]*

*Wind Horns. Enter MARCUS, from hunting.*

*Mar.* Who's this, — my niece, that flies away so fast?  
Cousin, a word: where is your husband? —  
If I do dream, 'would all my wealth would wake me!  
If I do wake, some planet strike me down,  
That I may slumber in eternal sleep! —  
Speak, gentle niece, what stern ungentle hands  
Have lopp'd, and hew'd, and made thy body bare  
Of her two branches; those sweet ornaments,  
Whose circling shadows kings have sought to sleep in,  
And might not gain so great a happiness,  
As half thy love? Why dost not speak to me? —  
Alas! a crimson river of warm blood,  
Like to a bubbling fountain stirr'd with wind,  
Doth rise and fall between thy rosed lips,

Coming and going with thy honey breath.  
But, sure, some Tereus hath deflowered thee,  
And, lest thou should'st detect him, cut thy tongue.  
Ah! now thou turn'st away thy face for shame;  
And, notwithstanding all this loss of blood, —  
As from a conduit with three issuing spouts, —  
Yet do thy cheeks look red, as Titan's face  
Blushing to be encounter'd with a cloud.  
Shall I speak for thee? shall I say, 't is so?  
O! that I knew thy heart; and knew the beast,  
That I might rail at him to ease my mind.  
Sorrow concealed, like an oven stopp'd,  
Doth burn the heart to cinders where it is.  
Fair Philomela, she but lost her tongue,  
And in a tedious sampler sew'd her mind;  
But, lovely niece, that mean is cut from thee:  
A craftier Tereus, cousin, hast thou met,  
And he hath cut those pretty fingers off,  
That could have better sew'd than Philomel.  
O! had the monster seen those lily hands  
Tremble, like aspen leaves, upon a lute,  
And make the silken strings delight to kiss them,  
He would not then have touch'd them for his life;  
Or, had he heard the heavenly harmony,  
Which that sweet tongue hath made,  
He would have dropp'd his knife, and fell asleep,  
As Cerberus at the Thracian poet's feet.  
Come; let us go, and make thy father blind;  
For such a sight will blind a father's eye.  
One hour's storm will drown the fragrant meads;  
What will whole months of tears thy father's eyes?  
Do not draw back, for we will mourn with thee:  
O, could our mourning ease thy misery!

[Exit

## ACT III. SCENE I.

Rome. A Street.

*ter Senators, Tribunes, and Officers of Justice, with MARTIUS and QUINTUS, bound, passing on to the Place of Execution; TITUS going before, pleading.*

*Tit.* Hear me, grave fathers! noble Tribunes, stay!  
pity of mine age, whose youth was spent  
dangerous wars, whilst you securely slept;  
all my blood in Rome's great quarrel shed;  
all the frosty nights that I have watch'd;  
d for these bitter tears, which now you see  
ling the aged wrinkles in my cheeks;  
pitiful to my condemned sons,  
ose souls are not corrupted as 't is thought.  
two and twenty sons I never wept,  
ause they died in honour's lofty bed:  
these, these, tribunes, in the dust I write

*[Throwing himself on the ground.*

heart's deep languor, and my soul's sad tears.  
my tears stanch the earth's dry appetite;  
sons' sweet blood will make it shame and blush.

*[Exeunt Senators, Tribunes, &c., with the Prisoners.*

arth! I will befriend thee more with rain,  
at shall distil from these two ancient urns,  
an youthful April shall with all his showers:  
summer's drought, I 'll drop upon thee still;  
winter, with warm tears I 'll melt the snow,  
d keep eternal spring-time on thy face,  
thou refuse to drink my dear sons' blood.

*Enter LUCIUS, with his Sword drawn.*

reverend tribunes! O, gentle, aged men!  
bind my sons, reverse the doom of death;  
d let me say, that never wept before,  
tears are now prevailing orators.

V.



*Luc.* O, noble father! you lament in vain :  
The tribunes hear you not, no man is by,  
And you recount your sorrows to a stone.

*Tit.* Ah, Lucius! for thy brothers let me plead. —  
Grave tribunes, once more I entreat of you.

*Luc.* My gracious lord, no tribune hears you speak.

*Tit.* Why, 't is no matter, man: if they did hear,  
They would not mark me; or if they did mark,  
They would not pity me, yet plead I must,  
And bootless unto them.

Therefore, I tell my sorrows to the stones;  
Who, though they cannot answer my distress,  
Yet in some sort they are better than the tribunes,  
For that they will not intercept my tale.

[*Ris*

When I do weep, they humbly at my feet  
Receive my tears, and seem to weep with me;  
And were they but attired in grave weeds,  
Rome could afford no tribune like to these.  
A stone is soft as wax, tribunes more hard than stones;  
A stone is silent, and offendeth not,  
And tribunes with their tongues doom men to death.  
But wherefore stand'st thou with thy weapon drawn?

*Luc.* To rescue my two brothers from their death;  
For which attempt the judges have pronounc'd  
My everlasting doom of banishment.

*Tit.* O happy man! they have befriended thee.  
Why, foolish Lucius, dost thou not perceive,  
That Rome is but a wilderness of tigers?  
Tigers must prey; and Rome affords no prey,  
But me and mine: how happy art thou, then,  
From these devourers to be banished?  
But who comes with our brother Marcus here?

*Enter* MARCUS and LAVINIA.

*Mar.* Titus, prepare thy aged eyes to weep;  
Or, if not so, thy noble heart to break:  
*I bring consuming sorrow to thine age.*

*Tit.* Will it consume me? let me see it, then.

*Mar.* This was thy daughter.

*Tit.* Why, Marcus, so she is.

*Luc.* Ah me! this object kills me.

*Tit.* Faint-hearted boy, arise, and look upon her. —

Speak, Lavinia, what accursed hand  
Hath made thee handless in thy father's sight?  
What fool hath added water to the sea,  
Or brought a faggot to bright-burning Troy?  
My grief was at the height before thou cam'st,  
And now, like Nilus, it disdaineth bounds. —  
Give me a sword, I'll chop off my hands too,  
For they have fought for Rome, and all in vain,  
And they have nurs'd this woe, in feeding life;  
In bootless prayer have they been held up,  
And they have serv'd me to effectless use:  
Now, all the service I require of them  
Is, that the one will help to cut the other. —  
'T is well, Lavinia, that thou hast no hands,  
For hands to do Rome service are but vain.

*Luc.* Speak, gentle sister, who hath martyr'd thee?

*Mar.* O! that delightful engine of her thoughts,  
That blabb'd them with such pleasing eloquence,  
Is torn from forth that pretty hollow cage,  
Where, like a sweet melodious bird, it sung  
Sweet varied notes, enchanting every ear.

*Luc.* O! say thou for her, who hath done this deed?

*Mar.* O! thus I found her straying in the park,  
Seeking to hide herself, as doth the deer,  
That hath receiv'd some unrecuring wound.

*Tit.* It was my deer; and he that wounded her  
Hath hurt me more, than had he kill'd me dead:  
For now I stand as one upon a rock,  
Environ'd with a wilderness of sea;  
Who marks the waxing tide grow wave by wave,  
Expecting ever when some envious surge  
Will in his brinish bowels swallow him.

This way to death my wretched sons are gone,  
Here stands my other son, a banish'd man,  
And here my brother, weeping at my woes;  
But that which gives my soul the greatest spurn,  
Is dear Lavinia, dearer than my soul. —  
Had I but seen thy picture in this plight,  
It would have maddened me; what shall I do  
Now I behold thy lively body so?  
Thou hast no hands to wipe away thy tears,  
Nor tongue to tell me who hath martyr'd thee:  
Thy husband he is dead; and for his death,  
Thy brothers are condemn'd, and dead by this.  
Look, Marcus; ah! son Lucius, look on her:  
When I did name her brothers, then fresh tears  
Stood on her cheeks, as doth the honey dew  
Upon a gather'd lily almost wither'd.

*Mar.* Perchance, she weeps because they kill'd  
band;

Perchance, because she knows them innocent.

*Tit.* If they did kill thy husband, then be joyful,  
Because the law hath ta'en revenge on them. —  
No, no, they would not do so foul a deed;  
Witness the sorrow that their sister makes. —  
Gentle Lavinia, let me kiss thy lips,  
Or make some sign how I may do thee ease.  
Shall thy good uncle, and thy brother Lucius,  
And thou, and I, sit round about some fountain,  
Looking all downwards, to behold our cheeks  
How they are stain'd, like meadows yet not dry,  
With miry slime left on them by a flood?  
And in the fountain shall we gaze so long,  
Till the fresh taste be taken from that clearness,  
And made a brine-pit with our bitter tears?  
Or shall we cut away our hands, like thine!  
Or shall we bite our tongues, and in dumb shows  
Pass the remainder of our hateful days?  
What shall we do? let us, that have our tongues,

Plot some device of farther misery,  
To make us wonder'd at in time to come.

*Luc.* Sweet father, cease your tears; for at your grief,  
See, how my wretched sister sobs and weeps.

*Mar.* Patience, dear niece. — Good Titus, dry thine eyes.

*Tit.* Ah, Marcus, Marcus! brother, well I wot,  
Thy napkin cannot drink a tear of mine,  
For thou, poor man, hast drown'd it with thine own.

*Luc.* Ah, my Lavinia! I will wipe thy cheeks.

*Tit.* Mark, Marcus, mark! I understand her signs.  
Had she a tongue to speak, now would she say  
That to her brother which I said to thee:  
His napkin, with his true tears all bewet,  
Can do no service on her sorrowful cheeks.  
O! what a sympathy of woe is this;  
As far from help as limbo is from bliss.

*Enter AARON.*

*Aar.* Titus Andronicus, my lord the emperor  
Sends thee this word, — that, if thou love thy sons,  
Let Marcus, Lucius, or thyself, old Titus,  
Or any one of you, chop off your hand,  
And send it to the king: he for the same,  
Will send thee hither both thy sons alive,  
And that shall be the ransom for their fault.

*Tit.* O, gracious emperor! O, gentle Aaron!  
Did ever raven sing so like a lark,  
That gives sweet tidings of the sun's uprise?  
With all my heart, I'll send the emperor my hand.  
Good Aaron, wilt thou help to chop it off?

*Luc.* Stay, father! for that noble hand of thine,  
That hath thrown down so many enemies,  
Shall not be sent: my hand will serve the turn.  
My youth can better spare my blood than you,  
And therefore mine shall save my brothers' lives.

*Mar.* Which of your hands hath not defended Rome,  
And rear'd aloft the bloody battle-axe,

Writing destruction on the enemy's castle?

O! none of both but are of high desert.

My hand hath been but idle; let it serve

To ransom my two nephews from their death,

Then, have I kept it to a worthy end.

*Aar.* Nay, come agree, whose hand shall go along,

For fear they die before their pardon come.

*Mar.* My hand shall go.

*Luc.* By heaven, it shall not go.

*Tit.* Sirs, strive no more: such wither'd herbs as these  
Are meet for plucking up, and therefore mine.

*Luc.* Sweet father, if I shall be thought thy son,  
Let me redeem my brothers both from death.

*Mar.* And, for our father's sake, and mother's care,  
Now let me show a brother's love to thee.

*Tit.* Agree between you; I will spare my hand.

*Luc.* Then I'll go fetch an axe.

*Mar.* But I will use the axe.

[*Exeunt LUCIUS and MARC*

*Tit.* Come hither, Aaron; I'll deceive them both:  
Lend me thy hand, and I will give thee mine.

*Aar.* If that be call'd deceit, I will be honest,  
And never, whilst I live, deceive men so:—  
But I'll deceive you in another sort,  
And that you'll say, ere half an hour pass.

[*As*

[*He cuts off TITUS's Ha*

*Re-enter LUCIUS and MARCUS.*

*Tit.* Now, stay your strife: what shall be, is despatch'd  
Good Aaron, give his majesty my hand:  
Tell him, it was a hand that warded him  
From thousand dangers. Bid him bury it:  
More hath it merited; that let it have.  
As for my sons, say, I account of them  
As jewels purchas'd at an easy price;  
And yet dear too, because I bought mine own.

*Aar.* I go, Andronicus; and for thy hand,

Look by and by to have thy sons with thee.

[*Aside.*] Their heads, I mean. — O, how this villainy

Doth fat me with the very thoughts of it!

Let fools do good, and fair men call for grace,

Aaron will have his soul black like his face.

[*Exit.*

*Tit.* O! here I lift this one hand up to heaven,

And bow this feeble ruin to the earth:

If any power pities wretched tears,

To that I call. — What! wilt thou kneel with me? [To LAVINIA.

Do then, dear heart; for heaven shall hear our prayers,

Or with our sighs we'll breathe the welkin dim,

And stain the sun with fog, as sometime clouds

When they do hug him in their melting bosoms.

*Mar.* O! brother, speak with possibilities,

And do not break into these deep extremes.

*Tit.* Is not my sorrow deep, having no bottom?

Then, be my passions bottomless with them.

*Mar.* But yet let reason govern thy lament.

*Tit.* If there were reason for these miseries,

Then into limits could I bind my woes.

When heaven doth weep, doth not the earth o'erflow?

If the winds rage, doth not the sea wax mad,

Threat'ning the welkin with his big-swoln face?

And wilt thou have a reason for this coil?

I am the sea; hark, how her sighs do blow!

She is the weeping welkin, I the earth:

Then, must my sea be moved with her sighs;

Then, must my earth with her continual tears

Become a deluge, overflow'd and drown'd.

For why? my bowels cannot hide her woes,

But like a drunkard must I vomit them.

Then, give me leave, for losers will have leave

To ease their stomachs with their bitter tongues.

*Enter a Messenger, with Two Heads and a Hand.*

*Mess.* Worthy Andronicus, ill art thou repaid

For that good hand thou sent'st the emperor.

Here are the heads of thy two noble sons;  
And here 's thy hand, in scorn to thee sent back:  
Thy griefs their sports, thy resolution mock'd,  
That woe is me to think upon thy woes,  
More than remembrance of my father's death.

[Exit.

*Mar.* Now, let hot *Ætna* cool in Sicily,  
And be my heart an ever-burning hell!  
These miseries are more than may be borne.  
To weep with them that weep doth ease some deal,  
But sorrow flouted at is double death.

*Luc.* Ah, that this sight should make so deep a wound,  
And yet detested life not shrink thereat!  
That ever death should let life bear his name,  
Where life hath no more interest but to breathe!

[*LAVINIA kisses him.*

*Mar.* Alas, poor heart! that kiss is comfortless,  
As frozen water to a starved snake.

*Tit.* When will this fearful slumber have an end?

*Mar.* Now, farewell, flattery: die, *Andronicus*.  
Thou dost not slumber: see, thy two sons' heads;  
Thy warlike hand; thy mangled daughter here;  
Thy other banish'd son, with this dear sight  
Struck pale and bloodless; and thy brother, I,  
Even like a stony image, cold and numb.  
Ah! now no more will I control my griefs.  
Rend off thy silver hair, thy other hand  
Gnawing with thy teeth; and be this dismal sight  
The closing up of our most wretched eyes!  
Now is a time to storm; why art thou still?

*Tit.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Mar.* Why dost thou laugh? it fits not with this hour.

*Tit.* Why, I have not another tear to shed:  
Besides, this sorrow is an enemy,  
And would usurp upon my watery eyes,  
And make them blind with tributary tears;  
Then, which way shall I find revenge's cave?  
For these two heads do seem to speak to me,

And threat me, I shall never come to bliss,  
 Till all these mischiefs be return'd again,  
 Even in their throats that have committed them.  
 Come, let me see what task I have to do. —  
 You heavy people, circle me about,  
 That I may turn me to each one of you,  
 And swear unto my soul to right your wrongs. —  
 The vow is made. — Come, brother, take a head;  
 And in this hand the other will I bear:  
 Lavinia, thou shalt be employed in these things;  
 Bear thou my hand, sweet wench, between thy teeth.  
 As for thee, boy, go, get thee from my sight:  
 Thou art an exile, and thou must not stay.  
 Hie to the Goths, and raise an army there;  
 And, if you love me, as I think you do,  
 Let's kiss and part, for we have much to do.

[*Exeunt* TITUS, MARCUS, and LAVINIA.]

*Luc.* Farewell, Andronicus, my noble father;  
 The woeful'st man that ever liv'd in Rome.  
 Farewell, proud Rome: till Lucius come again,  
 He leaves his pledges dearer than his life.  
 Farewell, Lavinia, my noble sister;  
 O, would thou wert as thou 'tofore hast been!  
 But now nor Lucius, nor Lavinia lives,  
 But in oblivion, and hateful griefs.  
 If Lucius live, he will requite your wrongs,  
 And make proud Saturnine, and his empress,  
 Beg at the gates, like Tarquin and his queen.  
 Now will I to the Goths, and raise a power,  
 To be reveng'd on Rome and Saturnine.

[*Exit.*]

## SCENE II.

A Room in TITUS's House. A Banquet set out.

*Enter* TITUS, MARCUS, LAVINIA, and young LUCIUS, a Boy.

*Tit.* So, so, now sit; and look, you eat no more  
 Than will preserve just so much strength in us



As will revenge these bitter woes of ours.  
Marcus, unknot that sorrow-wreathen knot:  
Thy niece and I, poor creatures, want our hands,  
And cannot passionate our tenfold grief  
With folded arms. This poor right hand of mine  
Is left to tyrannize upon my breast;  
And when my heart, all mad with misery,  
Beats in this hollow prison of my flesh,  
Then, thus I thump it down. —

Thou map of woe, that thus dost talk in signs, [To LAVINIA.  
When thy poor heart beats with outrageous beating,  
Thou canst not strike it thus to make it still.  
Wound it with sighing, girl, kill it with groans;  
Or get some little knife between thy teeth,  
And just against thy heart make thou a hole;  
That all the tears that thy poor eyes let fall,  
May run into that sink, and soaking in,  
Drown the lamenting fool in sea-salt tears.

*Mar.* Fie, brother, fie! teach her not thus to lay  
Such violent hands upon her tender life.

*Tit.* How now! has sorrow made thee dote already?  
Why, Marcus, no man should be mad but I.  
What violent hands can she lay on her life?  
Ah! wherefore dost thou urge the name of hands?  
To bid Æneas tell the tale twice o'er,  
How Troy was burnt, and he made miserable?  
O! handle not the theme, to talk of hands,  
Lest we remember still, that we have none.  
Fie, fie! how frantically I square my talk!  
As if we should forget we had no hands,  
If Marcus did not name the word of hands. —  
Come, let's fall to; and, gentle girl, eat this. —  
Here is no drink. Hark, Marcus, what she says;  
I can interpret all her martyr'd signs:  
She says, she drinks no other drink but tears,  
Brew'd with her sorrow, mesh'd upon her cheeks. —  
*Speechless complainer, I will learn thy thought;*

thy dumb action will I be as perfect,  
 begging hermits in their holy prayers:  
 thou shalt not sigh, nor hold thy stumps to heaven,  
 nor wink, nor nod, nor kneel, nor make a sign,  
 that I of these will wrest an alphabet,  
 and by still practice learn to know thy meaning.

*Boy.* Good grandsire, leave these bitter deep laments:  
 keep my aunt merry with some pleasing tale.

*Mar.* Alas! the tender boy, in passion mov'd,  
 hath weep to see his grandsire's heaviness.

*Tit.* Peace, tender sapling; thou art made of tears,  
 and tears will quickly melt thy life away. —

[*MARCUS strikes the Dish with a Knife.*]

What dost thou strike at, Marcus, with thy knife?

*Mar.* At that that I have kill'd, my lord — a fly.

*Tit.* Out on thee, murderer! thou kill'st my heart;

our eyes are cloy'd with view of tyranny:  
 blood of death, done on the innocent,  
 comes not Titus' brother. Get thee gone;  
 no, thou art not for my company.

*Mar.* Alas! my lord, I have but kill'd a fly.

*Tit.* But how, if that fly had a father and mother,  
 how would he hang his slender gilded wings,  
 and buzz lamenting doings in the air?  
 or harmless fly!

He sits with his pretty buzzing melody,  
 here to make us merry; and thou hast kill'd him.

*Mar.* Pardon me, Sir: it was a black ill-favour'd fly,  
 due to the empress' Moor; therefore, I kill'd him.

*Tit.* O, O, O!

Canst thou pardon me for reprehending thee,  
 when thou hast done a charitable deed.

With my knife, I will insult on him;  
 flattering myself, as if it were the Moor  
 that came hither purposely to poison me. —

There 's for thyself, and that 's for Tamora. Ah, sirrah! —  
 I think we are not brought so low,

But that between us we can kill a fly,  
That comes in likeness of a coal-black Moor.

*Mar.* Alas, poor man! grief has so wrought on him,  
He takes false shadows for true substances.

*Tit.* Come, take away. — Lavinia, go with me:

I'll to thy closet; and go read with thee  
Sad stories, chanced in the times of old. —

Come, boy, and go with me: thy sight is young,

And thou shalt read, when mine begins to dazzle. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV. SCENE I.

The Same. Before TITUS's House.

*Enter TITUS and MARCUS. Then enter young LUCIUS, LAVINIA running after him.*

*Boy.* Help, grandsire, help! my aunt Lavinia  
Follows me every where, I know not why. —  
Good uncle Marcus, see how swift she comes!  
Alas! sweet aunt, I know not what you mean.

*Mar.* Stand by me, Lucius: do not fear thine aunt.

*Tit.* She loves thee, boy, too well to do thee harm.

*Boy.* Ay, when my father was in Rome, she did.

*Mar.* What means my niece Lavinia by these signs?

*Tit.* Fear her not, Lucius: — somewhat doth she mean.  
See, Lucius, see, how much she makes of thee:  
Somewhither would she have thee go with her.  
Ah, boy! Cornelia never with more care  
Read to her sons, than she hath read to thee,  
Sweet poetry, and Tully's Orator.  
Canst thou not guess wherefore she plies thee thus?

*Boy.* My lord, I know not, I, nor can I guess,  
Unless some fit, or frenzy do possess her;  
For I have heard my grandsire say full oft,  
Extremity of griefs would make men mad;  
And I have read that Hecuba of Troy  
Ran mad through sorrow: that made me to fear;

Although, my lord, I know, my noble aunt  
Loves me as dear as e'er my mother did,  
And would not, but in fury, fright my youth;  
Which made me down to throw my books, and fly,  
Causeless, perhaps. But pardon me, sweet aunt;  
And, Madam, if my uncle Marcus go,  
I will most willingly attend your ladyship.

*Mar.* Lucius, I will.

[*LAVINIA turns over the books which LUCIUS had let fall.*]

*Tit.* How now, Lavinia! — Marcus, what means this?  
Some book there is that she desires to see. —  
Which is it, girl, of these? — Open them, hoy. —  
But thou art deeper read, and better skill'd;  
Come, and take choice of all my library,  
And so beguile thy sorrow, till the heavens  
Reveal the damn'd contriver of this deed. —  
What book?

Why lifts she up her arms in sequence thus?

*Mar.* I think, she means, that there was more than one  
Confederate in the fact. — Ay, more there was;  
Or else to heaven she heaves them to revenge.

*Tit.* Lucius, what book is that she tosseth so?

*Boy.* Grandsire, 't is Ovid's *Metamorphosis*:  
My mother gav't me.

*Mar.* For love of her that 's gone,  
Perhaps, she cull'd it from among the rest.

*Tit.* Soft! so busily she turns the leaves!  
Help her: what would she find? — Lavinia, shall I read?  
This is the tragic tale of Philomel,  
And treats of Tereus' treason, and his rape;  
And rape, I fear, was root of thine annoy.

*Mar.* See, brother, see! note, how she quotes the leaves.

*Tit.* Lavinia, wert thou thus surpriz'd, sweet girl,  
Ravish'd and wrong'd, as Philomela was,  
Forc'd in the ruthless, vast, and gloomy woods? —  
See, see! —

Ay, such a place there is, where we did hunt,  
 (O, had we never, never, hunted there!)  
 Pattern'd by that the poet here describes,  
 By nature made for murders, and for rapes.

*Mar.* O! why should nature build so foul a den,  
 Unless the gods delight in tragedies?

*Tit.* Give signs, sweet girl, for here are none but friends  
 What Roman lord it was durst do the deed:  
 Or slunk not Saturnine, as Tarquin erst,  
 That left the camp to sin in Lucrece' bed?

*Mar.* Sit down, sweet niece: — brother, sit down by me  
 Apollo, Pallas, Jove, or Mercury,  
 Inspire me, that I may this treason find! —  
 My lord, look here; — look here, Lavinia:  
 This sandy plot is plain; guide, if thou canst,  
 This after me. [*He writes his Name with his Staff, and  
 it with Feet and Mouth.*]

I have writ my name  
 Without the help of any hand at all.  
 Curs'd be that heart, that forc'd us to this shift! —  
 Write thou, good niece; and here display, at last,  
 What God will have discover'd for revenge.  
 Heaven guide thy pen to print thy sorrows plain,  
 That we may know the traitors, and the truth!

[*She takes the Staff in her Mouth, and guides it  
 her Stumps, and writes.*]

*Tit.* O! do you read, my lord, what she hath writ?  
*Stuprum — Chiron — Demetrius.*

*Mar.* What, what! — the lustful sons of Tamora  
 Performers of this heinous, bloody deed?

*Tit.* *Magni dominator poli,  
 Tam lentus audis scelera? tam lentus vides?*

*Mar.* O! calm thee, gentle lord, although, I know,  
 There is enough written upon this earth,  
 To stir a mutiny in the mildest thoughts,  
 And arm the minds of infants to exclams.  
*My lord, kneel down with me; Lavinia, kneel,*

And kneel, sweet boy, the Roman Hector's hope,  
 And swear with me, — as with the woful feere,  
 And father, of that chaste dishonour'd dame,  
 Lord Junius Brutus sware for Lucrece' rape, —  
 That we will prosecute, by good advice,  
 Mortal revenge upon these traitorous Goths,  
 And see their blood, or die with this reproach.

*Tit.* 'T is sure enough, an you knew how;  
 But if you hurt these bear-whelps, then beware:  
 The dam will wake, and if she wind you once,  
 She's with the lion deeply still in league,  
 And lulls him whilst she playeth on her back;  
 And when he sleeps will she do what she list.  
 You're a young huntsman: Marcus, let it alone;  
 And, come, I will go get a leaf of brass,  
 And with a gad of steel will write these words,  
 And lay it by. The angry Northern wind  
 Will blow these sands, like Sybil's leaves, abroad,  
 And where's your lesson then? — Boy, what say you?

*Boy.* I say, my lord, that if I were a man,  
 Their mother's bed-chamber should not be safe  
 For these bad bondmen to the yoke of Rome.

*Mar.* Ay, that's my boy! thy father hath full oft  
 For his ungrateful country done the like.

*Boy.* And, uncle, so will I, and if I live.

*Tit.* Come, go with me into mine armoury;  
 Lucius, I'll fit thee: and withal, my boy  
 Shall carry from me to the empress' sons  
 Presents, that I intend to sent them both.  
 Come, come; thou'lt do thy message, wilt thou not?

*Boy.* Ay, with my dagger in their bosoms, grandsire.

*Tit.* No, boy, not so; I'll teach thee another course.  
 Lavinia, come. — Marcus, look to my house:  
 Lucius and I'll go brave it at the court;  
 Ay, marry, will we, Sir; and we'll be waited on.

[*Exeunt* TITUS, LAVINIA, and Boy.]

*Mar.* O heavens! can you hear a good man groan,

And not relent, or not compassion him?  
 Marcus, attend him in his ecstasy,  
 That hath more scars of sorrow in his heart,  
 Than foe-men's marks upon his batter'd shield;  
 But yet so just, that he will not revenge. —  
 Revenge the heavens for old Andronicus!

[Exit.

## SCENE II.

The Same. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter AARON, DEMETRIUS, and CHIRON, at one Door; at another Door, young LUCIUS, and an Attendant, with a Bundle of Weapons, and Verses writ upon them.*

*Chi.* Demetrius, here 's the son of Lucius;  
 He hath some message to deliver us.

*Aar.* Ay, some mad message from his mad grandfather.

*Boy.* My lords, with all the humbleness I may,  
 I greet your honours from Andronicus; —  
 [*Aside.*] And pray the Roman gods, confound you both.

*Dem.* Gramercy, lovely Lucius. What 's the news?

*Boy.* [*Aside.*] That you are both decipher'd, that 's the news,  
 For villains mark'd with rape. [*To them.*] May it please you,  
 My grandsire, well advis'd, hath sent by me  
 The goodliest weapons of his armoury,  
 To gratify your honourable youth,  
 The hope of Rome; for so he bade me say,  
 And so I do, and with his gifts present  
 Your lordships, that whenever you have need,  
 You may be armed and appointed well.  
 And so I leave you both, [*Aside.*] like bloody villains.

[Exit Boy and Attendant.

*Dem.* What 's here? A scroll, and written round about?  
 Let 's see;

*Integer vilæ, scelerisque purus,  
 Non eget Mauri jaculis, nec arcu.*

*Chi.* O! 't is a verse in Horace. I know it well:  
 I read it in the grammar long ago.

*Aar.* Ay, just! — a verse in Horace; — right, you have it.  
*ide.]* Now, what a thing it is to be an ass!

There's no sound jest! the old man hath found their guilt,  
 I sends them weapons wrapp'd about with lines,  
 It wound, beyond their feeling, to the quick;  
 Were our witty empress well a-foot,  
 I would applaud Andronicus' conceit:  
 Let her rest in her unrest awhile. —

*them.]* And now, young lords, was't not a happy star  
 Us to Rome, strangers, and more than so,  
 Slaves, to be advanced to this height?  
 Did me good, before the palace gate  
 Brave the tribune in his brother's hearing.

*Dem.* But me more good, to see so great a lord  
 Ely insinuate, and send us gifts.

*Aar.* Had he not reason, lord Demetrius?  
 You not use his daughter very friendly?

*Dem.* I would, we had a thousand Roman dames  
 Such a bay, by turn to serve our lust.

*Chi.* A charitable wish, and full of love.

*Aar.* Here lacks but your mother for to say amen.

*Chi.* And that would she for twenty thousand more.

*Dem.* Come, let us go, and pray to all the gods  
 Our beloved mother in her pains.

*Aar.* Pray to the devils; the gods have given us over.

*[Trumpets sound.]*

*Dem.* Why do the emperor's trumpets flourish thus?

*Chi.* Belike, for joy the emperor hath a son.

*Dem.* Soft! who comes here?

*Enter a Nurse, with a Black-a-moor Child in her Arms.*

*Nur.* Good morrow, lords. O! tell me, did you see  
 On the Moor.

*Aar.* Well, more, or less, or ne'er a whit at all,  
 Of Aaron is; and what with Aaron now?

*Nur.* O gentle Aaron! we are all undone.  
 No help, or woe betide thee evermore!



*Aar.* Why, what a caterwauling dost thou keep.  
What dost thou wrap and fumble in thine arms?

*Nur.* O! that which I would hide from heaven's eye,  
Our empress' shame, and stately Rome's disgrace. —  
She is deliver'd, lords; she is deliver'd.

*Aar.* To whom?

I mean she 's brought to bed.

*Aar.*

Well, God

Give her good rest! What hath he sent her?

*Nur.*

A devil.

*Aar.* Why, then she 's the devil's dam: a joyful issue.

*Nur.* A joyless, dismal, black, and sorrowful issue.  
Here is the babe, as loathsome as a toad  
Amongst the fairest breeders of our clime.  
The empress sends it thee, thy stamp, thy seal,  
And bids thee christen it with thy dagger's point.

*Aar.* Zounds, ye whore! is black so base a hue? —  
Sweet blowse, you are a beauteous blossom, sure.

*Dem.* Villain, what hast thou done?

*Aar.* That which thou canst not undo.

*Chi.* Thou hast undone our mother.

*Aar.* Villain, I have done thy mother.

*Dem.* And therein, hellish dog, thou hast undone.  
Woe to her chance, and damn'd her loathed choice!  
Accurs'd the offspring of so foul a fiend!

*Chi.* It shall not live.

*Aar.*

It shall not die.

*Nur.* Aaron, it must: the mother wills it so.

*Aar.* What! must it, nurse? then let no man but I,  
Do execution on my flesh and blood.

*Dem.* I 'll broach the tadpole on my rapier's point.  
Nurse, give it me; my sword shall soon despatch it.

*Aar.* Sooner this sword shall plow thy bowels up.

[*Takes the Child from the Nurse, and draws.*]

Stay, murderous villains! will you kill your brother?  
Now, by the burning tapers of the sky,  
That shone so brightly when this boy was got,

He dies upon my scimitar's sharp point,  
 That touches this my first-born son and heir.  
 I tell you, younglings, not Enceladus,  
 With all his threatening band of Typhon's brood,  
 Nor great Alcides, nor the god of war,  
 Shall seize this prey out of his father's hands.  
 What, what, ye sanguine, shallow-hearted boys!  
 Ye white-lim'd walls! ye alehouse painted signs!  
 Coal-black is better than another hue,  
 In that it scorns to bear another hue;  
 For all the water in the ocean  
 Can never turn the swan's black legs to white,  
 Although she lave them hourly in the flood.  
 Tell the empress from me, I am of age  
 To keep mine own; excuse it how she can.

*Dem.* Wilt thou betray thy noble mistress thus?

*Aar.* My mistress is my mistress; this, myself;  
 The vigour, and the picture of my youth:  
 This, before all the world, do I prefer;  
 This, maugre all the world, will I keep safe,  
 Or some of you shall smoke for it in Rome.

*Dem.* By this our mother is for ever shamed.

*Chi.* Rome will despise her for this foul escape.

*Nur.* The emperor in his rage will doom her death.

*Chi.* I blush to think upon this ignomy.

*Aar.* Why, there's the privilege your beauty bears:  
 Fie, treacherous hue! that will betray with blushing  
 The close enacts and counsels of the heart:  
 Here's a young lad fram'd of another leer.  
 Look, how the black slave smiles upon the father,  
 As who should say, "Old lad, I am thine own."  
 He is your brother, lords, sensibly fed  
 Of that self-blood that first gave life to you;  
 And, from that womb, where you imprison'd were,  
 He is enfranchised and come to light:  
 Nay, he is your brother by the surer side,  
 Although my seal be stamped in his face.

*Nur.* Aaron, what shall I say unto the empress?

*Dem.* Advise thee, Aaron, what is to be done,  
And we will all subscribe to thy advice:  
Save thou the child, so we may all be safe.

*Aar.* Then sit we down, and let us all consult.  
My son and I will have the wind of you:  
Keep there; now talk at pleasure of your safety.

[*They sit.*]

*Dem.* How many women saw this child of his?

*Aar.* Why, so, brave lords: when we join in league,  
I am a lamb; but if you brave the Moor,  
The chafed boar, the mountain lioness,  
The ocean swells not so as Aaron storms. —  
But say again, how many saw the child?

*Nur.* Cornelia the midwife, and myself;  
And no one else, but the deliver'd empress.

*Aar.* The empress, the midwife, and yourself:  
Two may keep counsel, when the third's away.  
Go to the empress; tell her, this I said. —

[*Stabbing her: she screams.*]

Weke, weke! — so cries a pig, prepared to the spit.

*Dem.* What mean'st thou, Aaron? Wherefore did'st thou this?

*Aar.* O lord! Sir, 't is a deed of policy.  
Shall she live to betray this guilt of ours,  
A long-tongu'd babbling gossip? no, lords, no.  
And now be it known to you my full intent.  
Not far, one Muliteus lives, my countryman;  
His wife but yesternight was brought to bed.  
His child is like to her, fair as you are:  
Go pack with him, and give the mother gold,  
And tell them both the circumstance of all;  
And how by this their child shall be advanc'd;  
And be received for the emperor's heir,  
And substituted in the place of mine;  
To calm this tempest whirling in the court,  
And let the emperor dandle him for his own.  
*Hark ye, lords; ye see, I have given her physic,*

[*Pointing to the Nurse.*]

And you must needs bestow her funeral;  
 The fields are near, and you are gallant grooms.  
 This done, see that you take no longer days,  
 But send the midwife presently to me:  
 The midwife, and the nurse, well made away,  
 Then, let the ladies tattle what they please.

*Chi.* Aaron, I see, thou wilt not trust the air  
 With secrets.

*Dem.* For this care of Tamora,  
 Herself and hers are highly bound to thee.

*[Exeunt DEM. and CHI. bearing off the Nurse.]*

*Aar.* Now to the Goths, as swift as swallow flies;  
 There to dispose this treasure in mine arms,  
 And secretly to greet the empress' friends. —  
 Come on, you thick-lipp'd slave; I'll bear you hence,  
 For it is you that puts us to our shifts:  
 I'll make you feed on berries and on roots,  
 And feed on curds and whey, and suck the goat,  
 And cabin in a cave; and bring you up  
 To be a warrior, and command a camp. *[Exit with the Child.]*

### SCENE III.

The Same. A public Place.

*Enter TITUS, bearing Arrows, with Letters on the ends of them;  
 with him MARCUS, young LUCIUS, and other Gentlemen, with  
 Bows.*

*Tit.* Come, Marcus, come. — Kinsmen, this is the way. —  
 Sir boy, now let me see your archery:  
 Look ye draw home enough, and 't is there straight.  
*Terras Astræa reliquit:*  
 Be you remember'd Marcus, she's gone, she's fled.  
 Sirs, take you to your tools. You, cousins, shall  
 Go sound the ocean, and cast your nets;  
 Happily you may catch her in the sea,  
 Yet there's as little justice as at land. —  
 No; Publius and Sempronius, you must do it;

'T is you must dig with mattock , and with spade ,  
And pierce the inmost centre of the earth :  
Then , when you come to Pluto's region ,  
I pray you , deliver him this petition ;  
Tell him , it is for justice , and for aid ,  
And that it comes from old Andronicus ,  
Shaken with sorrows in ungrateful Rome. —  
Ah , Rome ! — Well , well ; I made thee miserable ,  
What time I threw the people's suffrages  
On him that thus doth tyrannize o'er me. —  
Go , get you gone ; and pray be careful all ,  
And leave you not a man of war unsearch'd :  
This wicked emperor may have shipp'd her hence ,  
And , kinsmen , then we may go pipe for justice.

*Mar.* O , Publius ! is not this a heavy case ,  
To see thy noble uncle thus distract ?

*Pub.* Therefore , my lord , it highly us concerns ,  
By day and night t' attend him carefully ;  
And feed his humour kindly as we may ,  
Till time beget some careful remedy.

*Mar.* Kinsmen , his sorrows are past remedy.  
Join with the Goths ; and with revengeful war  
Take wreak on Rome for this ingratitude ,  
And vengeance on the traitor Saturnine.

*Tit.* Publius , how now ! how now , my masters ! What !  
Have you met with her ?

*Pub.* No , my good lord ; but Pluto sends you word ,  
If you will have revenge from hell , you shall.  
Marry , for Justice , she is so employ'd ,  
He thinks with Jove in heaven , or somewhere else ,  
So that perforce you must needs stay a time.

*Tit.* He doth me wrong to feed me with delays.  
I'll dive into the burning lake below ,  
And pull her out of Acheron by the heels. —  
Marcus , we are but shrubs , no cedars we ;  
No big-bon'd men , fram'd of the Cyclops' size ,  
But metal , Marcus , steel to the very back ;

Yet wrung with wrongs, more than our backs can bear:  
 And, sith there 's no justice in earth nor hell,  
 We will solicit heaven, and move the gods,  
 To send down justice for to wreak our wrongs.  
 Come, to this gear. You are a good archer, Marcus.

[*He gives them the Arrows.*]

*Ad Jovem*, that 's for you: — here, *ad Apollinem*: —

*Ad Martem*, that 's for myself: —

Here, boy, to Pallas: — here, to Mercury:

So Saturn, Caius, not to Saturnine;

You were as good to shoot against the wind. —

To it, boy: Marcus, loose, when I bid.

Of my word, I have written to effect;

There 's not a god left unsolicited.

*Mar.* Kinsmen, shoot all your shafts into the court:  
 We will afflict the emperor in his pride.

*Tit.* Now, masters, draw. [*They shoot.*] O, well said, Lucius!  
 Good boy, in Virgo's lap: give it Pallas.

*Mar.* My lord, I aim a mile beyond the moon:  
 Your letter is with Jupiter by this.

*Tit.* Ha! Publius, Publius, what hast thou done?  
 See, see! thou hast shot off one of Taurus' horns.

*Mar.* This was the sport, my lord: when Publius shot,  
 The bull, being gall'd, gave Aries such a knock  
 That down fell both the ram's horns in the court;  
 And who should find them but the empress' villain.  
 She laugh'd, and told the Moor, he should not choose  
 But give them to his master for a present.

*Tit.* Why, there it goes: God give his lordship joy.

*Enter the Clown, with a Basket and Two Pigeons.*

News! news from heaven! Marcus, the post is come.  
 Sirrah, what tidings? have you any letters?  
 Shall I have justice? what says Jupiter?

*Clo.* Ho! the gibbet-maker? he says, that he hath taken  
 them down again, for the man must not be hanged till the next  
 week.

*Tit.* But what says Jupiter, I ask thee?

*Clo.* Alas, Sir! I know not Jupiter: I never drank with him in all my life.

*Tit.* Why, villain, art not thou the carrier?

*Clo.* Ay, of my pigeons, Sir; nothing else.

*Tit.* Why, didst thou not come from heaven?

*Clo.* From heaven? alas, Sir! I never came there. God forbid, I should be so bold to press to heaven in my young days. Why, I am going with my pigeons to the tribunal plebs, to take up a matter of brawl betwixt my uncle and one of the imperial's men.

*Mar.* Why, Sir, that is as fit as can be, to serve for your oration; and let him deliver the pigeons to the emperor from you.

*Tit.* Tell me, can you deliver an oration to the emperor with a grace?

*Clo.* Nay, truly, Sir, I could never say grace in all my life.

*Tit.* Sirrah, come hither. Make no more ado,

But give your pigeons to the emperor:

By me thou shalt have justice at his hands.

Hold, hold: — mean while, here's money for thy charges.

Give me pen and ink. —

Sirrah, can you with a grace deliver a supplication?

*Clo.* Ay, Sir.

*Tit.* Then here is a supplication for you. And when you come to him, at the first approach, you must kneel; then kiss his foot; then deliver up your pigeons, and then look for your reward. I'll be at hand, Sir; see you do it bravely.

*Clo.* I warrant you, Sir; let me alone.

*Tit.* Sirrah, hast thou a knife? Come, let me see it. —

Here, Marcus, fold it in the oration,

For thou hast made it like an humble suppliant. —

And when thou hast given it to the emperor,

Knock at my door, and tell me what he says.

*Clo.* God be with you, Sir: I will.

*Tit.* Come, Marcus, let us go. — Publius, follow me.

(*Exeunt.*)

## SCENE IV.

The Same. Before the Palace.

*Enter SATURNINUS, TAMORA, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON, Lords and Others: SATURNINUS with the Arrows in his Hand that TITUS shot.*

*Sat.* Why, lords, what wrongs are these! Was ever seen  
An emperor of Rome thus overborne,  
Troubled, confronted thus; and, for the extent  
Of equal justice, us'd in such contempt?  
My lords, you know, as do the mighty gods,  
However these disturbers of our peace  
Buzz in the people's ears) there nought hath pass'd,  
But even with law, against the wilful sons  
Of old Andronicus. And what an if  
His sorrows have so overwhelm'd his wits,  
Shall we be thus afflicted in his wrecks,  
His fits, his frenzy, and his bitterness?  
And now he writes to heaven for his redress:  
See, here 's to Jove, and this to Mercury;  
This to Apollo; this to the god of war;  
Sweet scrolls to fly about the streets of Rome!  
What 's this but libelling against the senate,  
And blazoning our injustice every where?  
A goodly humour, is it not, my lords?  
As who would say, in Rome no justice were.  
But if I live, his feigned ecstasies  
Shall be no shelter to these outrages;  
But he and his shall know, that justice lives  
In Saturninus' health; whom, if she sleep,  
He 'll so awake, as she in fury shall  
Cut off the proud'st conspirator that lives.

*Tam.* My gracious lord, my lovely Saturnine,  
Lord of my life, commander of my thoughts,  
Calm thee, and bear the faults of Titus' age,  
Th' effects of sorrow for his valiant sons,  
Whose loss hath pierc'd him deep, and scarr'd his heart;



And rather comfort his distressed plight,  
 Than prosecute the meanest, or the best,  
 For these contempts. [*Aside.*] Why, thus it shall become  
 High-witted Tamora to gloze with all:  
 But, Titus, I have touch'd thee to the quick;  
 Thy life-blood out. If Aaron now be wise,  
 Then is all safe, the anchor's in the port. —

*Enter Clown.*

How now, good fellow! would'st thou speak with us?

*Clo.* Yes, forsooth, an your mistership be imperial.

*Tam.* Empress I am, but yonder sits the emperor.

*Clo.* 'T is he. — God, and saint Stephen, give you good den.  
 I have brought you a letter, and a couple of pigeons here.

[*SATURNINUS reads the Letter.*]

*Sat.* Go, take him away, and hang him presently.

*Clo.* How much money must I have?

*Tam.* Come, sirrah; you must be hang'd.

*Clo.* Hang'd! By'r lady, then I have brought up a neck to a  
 fair end. [*Exit, guarded.*]

*Sat.* Despiteful and intolerable wrongs!  
 Shall I endure this monstrous villainy?  
 I know from whence this same device proceeds.  
 May this be borne? — as if his traitorous sons,  
 That died by law for murder of our brother,  
 Have by my means been butcher'd wrongfully. —  
 Go, drag the villain hither by the hair:  
 Nor age, nor honour, shall shape privilege. —  
 For this proud mock, I'll be thy slaughter-man;  
 Sly frantic wretch, that holp'st to make me great,  
 In hope thyself should govern Rome and me.

*Enter ÆMILIUS.*

What news with thee, Æmilius?

*Æmil.* Arm, my lords! Rome never had more cause.  
 The Goths have gather'd head, and with a power  
 Of high-resolved men, bent to the spoil,  
 They hither march again, under conduct

Of Lucius, son to old Andronicus;  
Who threats, in course of this revenge, to do  
As much as ever Coriolanus did.

*Sat.* Is warlike Lucius general of the Goths?  
These tidings nip me; and I hang the head  
As flowers with frost, or grass beat down with storms.  
Ay, now begin our sorrows to approach.  
'Tis he the common people love so much:  
Myself hath often heard them say,  
When I have walked like a private man,  
That Lucius' banishment was wrongfully,  
And they have wish'd that Lucius were their emperor.

*Tam.* Why should you fear? is not our city strong?

*Sat.* Ay, but the citizens favour Lucius,  
And will revolt from me to succour him.

*Tam.* King, be thy thoughts imperious, like thy name.  
Is the sun dimm'd, that gnats do fly in it?  
The eagle suffers little birds to sing,  
And is not careful what they mean thereby;  
Knowing that with the shadow of his wings,  
He can at pleasure stint their melody:  
Even so may'st thou the giddy men of Rome.  
Then cheer thy spirit; for know, thou emperor,  
I will enchant the old Andronicus,  
With words more sweet, and yet more dangerous,  
Than baits to fish, or honey-stalks to sheep,  
When as the one is wounded with the bait,  
The other rotted with delicious feed.

*Sat.* But he will not entreat his son for us.

*Tam.* If Tamora entreat him, then he will;  
For I can smooth, and fill his aged ear  
With golden promises, that were his heart  
Almost impregnable, his old ears deaf,  
Yet should both ear and heart obey my tongue. —  
Go thou before, be our ambassador:  
Say that the emperor requests a parley

[To *Emilius*.

Of warlike Lucius, and appoint the meeting,  
Even at his father's house, the old Andronicus.

*Sat.* Æmilius, do this message honourably:  
And if he stand in hostage for his safety,  
Bid him demand what pledge will please him best.

*Æmil.* Your bidding shall I do effectually. [*Exit ÆMILIUS.*]

*Tam.* Now will I to that old Andronicus,  
And temper him with all the art I have,  
To pluck proud Lucius from the warlike Goths.  
And now, sweet emperor, be blithe again,  
And bury all thy fear in my devices.

*Sat.* Then go successfully, and plead to him. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V. SCENE I.

Plains near Rome.

*Enter LUCIUS, and an Army of Goths, with Drum and Colours.*

*Luc.* Approved warriors, and my faithful friends,  
I have received letters from great Rome,  
Which signify what hate they bear their emperor,  
And how desirous of our sight they are.  
Therefore, great lords, be, as your titles witness,  
Imperious, and impatient of your wrongs;  
And, wherein Rome hath done you any scath,  
Let him make treble satisfaction.

*1 Goth.* Brave slip, sprung from the great Andronicus,  
Whose name was once our terror, now our comfort;  
Whose high exploits, and honourable deeds,  
Ingrateful Rome requites with foul contempt,  
Be bold in us: we'll follow where thou lead'st,  
Like stinging bees in hottest summer's day,  
Led by their master to the flower'd fields,  
And be aveng'd on cursed Tamora.

*Goths.* And, as he saith, so say we all with him.

*Luc.* I humbly thank him, and I thank you all.  
*But who comes here, led by a lusty Goth?*

*Enter a Goth, leading AARON, with his Child in his Arms.*

**2 Goth.** Renowned Lucius, from our troops I stray'd,  
To gaze upon a ruinous monastery;  
And as I earnestly did fix mine eye  
Upon the wasted building, suddenly  
I heard a child cry underneath a wall.  
I made unto the noise; when soon I heard  
The crying babe controll'd with this discourse: —  
“Peace, tawny slave; half me, and half thy dam!  
Did not thy hue bewray whose brat thou art,  
Had nature lent thee but thy mother's look,  
Villain, thou might'st have been an emperor:  
But where the bull and cow are both milk-white,  
They never do beget a coal-black calf.  
Peace, villain, peace!” — even thus he rates the babe, —  
“For I must bear thee to a trusty Goth;  
Who, when he knows thou art the empress' babe,  
Will hold thee dearly for thy mother's sake.”  
With this, my weapon drawn, I rush'd upon him,  
Surpris'd him suddenly, and brought him hither,  
To use as you think needful of the man.

**Luc.** O worthy Goth! this is the incarnate devil,  
That robb'd Andronicus of his good hand:  
This is the pearl that pleas'd your empress' eye,  
And here 's the base fruit of his burning lust. —  
Say, wall-ey'd slave, whither wouldst thou convey  
This growing image of thy fiend-like face?  
Why dost not speak? What! deaf? not a word?  
A halter, soldiers! hang him on this tree,  
And by his side his fruit of bastardy.

**Aar.** Touch not the boy; he is of royal blood.

**Luc.** Too like the sire for ever being good. —  
First, hang the child, that he may see it sprawl;  
A sight to vex the father's soul withal.

**Aar.** Get me a ladder. — Lucius, save the child;  
And bear it from me to the empress.

If thou do this, I'll show thee wond'rous things,  
That highly may advantage thee to hear:  
If thou wilt not, befall what may befall,  
I'll speak no more; but vengeance rot you all!

*Luc.* Say on; and if it please me which thou speak'st,  
Thy child shall live, and I will see it nourish'd.

*Aar.* An if it please thee? why, assure thee, Lucius,  
'T will vex thy soul to hear what I shall speak;  
For I must talk of murders, rapes, and massacres,  
Acts of black night, abominable deeds,  
Complots of mischief, treason, villainies  
Ruthful to hear, yet piteously perform'd:  
And this shall all be buried in my death,  
Unless thou swear to me, my child shall live.

*Luc.* Tell on thy mind: I say, thy child shall live.

*Aar.* Swear that he shall, and then I will begin.

*Luc.* Whom should I swear by? thou believ'st no god:  
That granted, how canst thou believe an oath?

*Aar.* What if I do not, as, indeed, I do not;  
Yet, for I know thou art religious,  
And hast a thing within thee, called conscience,  
With twenty popish tricks and ceremonies,  
Which I have seen thee careful to observe,  
Therefore I urge thy oath: — for that, I know,  
An idiot holds his bauble for a god,  
And keeps the oath, which by that god he swears,  
To that I'll urge him. — Therefore, thou shalt vow  
By that same god, what god soe'er it be,  
That thou ador'st and hast in reverence,  
To save my boy, to nourish, and bring him up,  
Or else I will discover nought to thee.

*Luc.* Even by my god, I swear to thee, I will.

*Aar.* First, know thou, I begot him on the empress.

*Luc.* O most insatiate, luxurious woman!

*Aar.* Tut! Lucius, this was but a deed of charity,  
To that which thou shalt hear of me anon.

'T was her two sons that murder'd Bassianus.

They cut thy sister's tongue, and ravish'd her,  
And cut her hands, and trimm'd her as thou saw'st.

*Luc.* O, detestable villain! call'st thou that trimming?

*Aar.* Why, she was wash'd, and cut, and trimm'd; and  
't was

Trim sport for them that had the doing of it.

*Luc.* O, barbarous, beastly villains, like thyself!

*Aar.* Indeed, I was their tutor to instruct them.

That codding spirit had they from their mother,

As sure a card as ever won the set:

That bloody mind, I think they learn'd of me,

As true a dog as ever fought at head.

Well, let my deeds be witness of my worth.

I train'd thy brethren to that guileful hole,

Where the dead corpse of Bassianus lay;

I wrote the letter that thy father found,

And hid the gold, within the letter mentioned,

Confederate with the queen, and her two sons;

And what not done, that thou hast cause to rue,

Wherein I had no stroke of mischief in it?

I play'd the cheater for thy father's hand,

And, when I had it, drew myself apart,

And almost broke my heart with extreme laughter.

I pry'd me through the crevice of a wall,

When for his hand, he had his two sons' heads;

Beheld his tears, and laugh'd so heartily,

That both mine eyes were rainy like to his:

And when I told the empress of this sport,

She swooned almost at my pleasing tale,

And for my tidings gave me twenty kisses.

*Goth.* What! canst thou say all this, and never blush?

*Aar.* Ay, like a black dog, as the saying is.

*Luc.* Art thou not sorry for these heinous deeds?

*Aar.* Ay, that I had not done a thousand more.

Even now I curse the day, (and yet, I think,

Few come within the compass of my curse)

Wherein I did not some notorious ill:

As kill a man, or else devise his death;  
Ravish a maid, or plot the way to do it;  
Accuse some innocent, and forswear myself;  
Set deadly enmity between two friends;  
Make poor men's cattle break their necks;  
Set fire on barns and hay-stacks in the night,  
And bid the owners quench them with their tears.  
Oft have I digg'd up dead men from their graves,  
And set them upright at their dear friends' doors,  
Even when their sorrows almost were forgot;  
And on their skins, as on the bark of trees,  
Have with my knife carved in Roman letters,  
"Let not your sorrow die, though I am dead."  
Tut! I have done a thousand dreadful things,  
As willingly as one would kill a fly;  
And nothing grieves me heartily indeed,  
But that I cannot do ten thousand more.

*Luc.* Bring down the devil, for he must not die  
So sweet a death as hanging, presently.

*Aar.* If there be devils, would I were a devil,  
To live and burn in everlasting fire,  
So I might have your company in hell,  
But to torment you with my bitter tongue!

*Luc.* Sirs, stop his mouth, and let him speak no more.

*Enter a Goth.*

*Goth.* My lord, there is a messenger from Rome,  
Desires to be admitted to your presence.

*Luc.* Let him come near.

*Enter ÆMILIUS.*

Welcome, Æmilius! what 's the news from Rome?

*Æmil.* Lord Lucius, and you princes of the Goths,  
The Roman emperor greets you all by me:  
And, for he understands you are in arms,  
He craves a parley at your father's house,  
Willing you to demand your hostages,  
And they shall be immediately deliver'd.

1 *Goth.* What says our general?

*Luc.* Æmilius, let the emperor give his pledges  
Unto my father and my uncle Marcus,  
And we will come. — March! away!

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

Rome. Before TITUS's House.

*Enter TAMORA, DEMETRIUS, and CHIRON, disguised.*

*Tam.* Thus, in this strange and sad habiliment,  
I will encounter with Andronicus,  
And say, I am Revenge, sent from below,  
To join with him, and right his heinous wrongs. —  
Knock at his study, where, they say, he keeps,  
To ruminate strange plots of dire revenge:  
Tell him, Revenge is come to join with him,  
And work confusion on his enemies.

[*They knock.*]

*TITUS opens his study door.*

*Tit.* Who doth molest my contemplation?  
Is it your trick, to make me ope the door,  
That so my sad decrees may fly away,  
And all my study be to no effect?  
You are deceiv'd; for what I mean to do,  
See here, in bloody lines I have set down,  
And what is written shall be executed.

*Tam.* Titus, I am come to talk with thee.

*Tit.* No; not a word. How can I grace my talk,  
Wanting a hand to give it action?  
Thou hast the odds of me; therefore no more.

*Tam.* If thou didst know me, thou would'st talk with me.

*Tit.* I am not mad; I know thee well enough:  
Witness this wretched stump, witness these crimson lines;  
Witness these trenches made by grief and care;  
Witness the tiring day, and heavy night;  
Witness all sorrow, that I know thee well

IV.



For our proud empress, mighty Tamora.  
Is not thy coming for my other hand?

*Tam.* Know, thou sad man, I am not Tamora:  
She is thy enemy, and I thy friend.  
I am Revenge; sent from th' infernal kingdom,  
To ease the gnawing vulture of thy mind,  
By working wreakful vengeance on thy foes.  
Come down, and welcome me to this world's light;  
Confer with me of murder and of death.  
There 's not a hollow cave, or lurking-place,  
No vast obscurity, or misty vale,  
Where bloody murder, or detested rape,  
Can couch for fear, but I will find them out;  
And in their ears tell them my dreadful name,  
Revenge, which makes the foul offender quake.

*Tit.* Art thou Revenge? and art thou sent to me,  
To be a torment to mine enemies?

*Tam.* I am; therefore come down, and welcome me.

*Tit.* Do me some service, ere I come to thee.  
Lo! by thy side where Rape, and Murder, stand;  
Now, give some 'surance that thou art Revenge:  
Stab them, or tear them on thy chariot wheels,  
And then I 'll come, and be thy waggoner,  
And whirl along with thee about the globes.  
Provide thee two proper palfries, black as jet,  
To hale thy vengeful waggon swift away,  
And find out murderers in their guilty caves:  
And when thy car is loaden with their heads,  
I will dismount, and by the waggon wheel  
Trot like a servile footman all day long,  
Even from Hyperion's rising in the east,  
Until his very downfall in the sea:  
And day by day I 'll do this heavy task,  
So thou destroy Rapine and Murder there.

*Tam.* These are my ministers, and come with me.

*Tit.* Are they thy ministers? what are they call'd?

*Tam.* Rape, and Murder; therefore called so,  
'Cause they take vengeance of such kind of men.

*Tit.* Good lord! how like the empress' sons they are;  
And you, the empress: but we worldly men  
Have miserable, mad, mistaking eyes.  
O sweet Revenge! now do I come to thee;  
And, if one arm's embracement will content thee,  
I will embrace thee in it by and by.

[*Exit Titus.*]

*Tam.* This closing with him fits his lunacy.  
Whate'er I forge, to feed his brain-sick fits,  
Do you uphold and maintain in your speeches,  
For now he firmly takes me for Revenge;  
And being credulous in this mad thought,  
I'll make him send for Lucius, his son,  
And, whilst I at a banquet hold him sure,  
I'll find some cunning practice out of hand,  
To scatter and disperse the giddy Goths,  
Or, at the least, make them his enemies.  
See! here he comes, and I must ply my theme.

*Enter Titus.*

*Tit.* Long have I been forlorn, and all for thee.  
Welcome, dread fury, to my woeful house. —  
Rapine, and Murder, you are welcome too. —  
How like the empress and her sons you are!  
Well are you fitted, had you but a Moor: —  
Could not all hell afford you such a devil?  
For, well I wot, the empress never wags,  
But in her company there is a Moor;  
And would you represent our queen aright,  
It were convenient you had such a devil.  
But welcome, as you are. What shall we do?

*Tam.* What would'st thou have us do, Andronicus?

*Dem.* Show me a murderer, I'll deal with him.

*Chi.* Show me a villain that hath done a rape,  
And I am sent to be reveng'd on him.

*Tam.* Show me a thousand that have done thee wrong,  
And I will be revenged on them all.

*Tit.* Look round about the wicked streets of Rome,  
And when thou find'st a man that's like thyself,  
Good Murder, stab him: he's a murderer. —  
Go thou with him; and when it is thy hap  
To find another that is like to thee,  
Good Rapine, stab him: he is a ravisher. —  
Go thou with them; and in the emperor's court  
There is a queen, attended by a Moor:  
Well may'st thou know her by thine own proportion,  
For up and down she doth resemble thee.  
I pray thee, do on them some violent death,  
They have been violent to me and mine.

*Tam.* Well hast thou lesson'd us: this shall we do.  
But would it please thee, good Andronicus,  
To send for Lucius, thy thrice valiant son,  
Who leads towards Rome a band of warlike Goths,  
And bid him come and banquet at thy house,  
When he is here, even at thy solemn feast,  
I will bring in the empress and her sons,  
The emperor himself, and all thy foes,  
And at thy mercy shall they stoop and kneel,  
And on them shalt thou ease thy angry heart.  
What says Andronicus to this device?

*Tit.* Marcus, my brother! — 't is sad Titus calls.

*Enter MARCUS.*

Go, gentle Marcus, to thy nephew Lucius;  
Thou shalt inquire him out among the Goths:  
Bid him repair to me, and bring with him  
Some of the chiefest princes of the Goths;  
Bid him encamp his soldiers where they are.  
Tell him, the emperor, and the empress too,  
Feast at my house, and he shall feast with them.  
This do thou for my love, and so let him,  
As he regards his aged father's life.

*Mar.* This will I do, and soon return again.

[*Exit.*

*Tam.* Now will I hence about thy business,  
and take my ministers along with me.

*Tit.* Nay, nay, let Rape and Murder stay with me,  
or else I'll call my brother back again,  
and cleave to no revenge but Lucius.

*Tam.* [*Aside to them.*] What say you, boys? will you abide  
with him,  
whiles I go tell my lord the emperor,  
how I have govern'd our determin'd jest?  
yield to his humour; smooth and speak him fair,  
and tarry with him, till I turn again.

*Tit.* [*Aside.*] I know them all, though they suppose me mad;  
and will o'er-reach them in their own devices,  
pair of cursed hell-hounds, and their dam.

*Dem.* Madam, depart at pleasure; leave us here.

*Tam.* Farewell, Andronicus: Revenge now goes  
to lay a complot to betray thy foes.

*Tit.* I know thou dost; and, sweet Revenge, farewell.

*Chi.* Tell us, old man, how shall we be employ'd?

*Tit.* Tut! I have work enough for you to do. —  
Publius, come hither, Caius, and Valentine!

*Enter PUBLIUS, and Others.*

*Pub.* What's your will?

*Tit.* Know you these two?

*Pub.* The empress' sons  
take them; Chiron, Demetrius.

*Tit.* Fie, Publius, fie! thou art too much deceiv'd;  
he one is Murder, Rape is the other's name:  
and therefore bind them, gentle Publius;  
Caius, and Valentine, lay hands on them.  
Hast thou heard me wish for such an hour,  
and now I find it: therefore, bind them sure;  
and stop their mouths, if they begin to cry.

[*Exit TITUS.* — PUBLIUS, &c. seize CHIRON, and  
DEMETRIUS.

*Chi.* Villains, forbear! we are the empress' sons.

*Pub.* And therefore do we what we are commanded. —  
Stop close their mouths; let them not speak a word.  
Is he sure bound? look, that you bind them fast.

*Re-enter TITUS ANDRONICUS, with LAVINIA; she bearing a Bason, and he a Knife.*

*Tit.* Come, come, Lavinia; look, thy foes are bound.  
Sirs, stop their mouths; let them not speak to me,  
But let them hear what fearful words I utter. —  
O villains! Chiron and Demetrius,  
Here stands the spring whom you have stain'd with mud;  
This goodly summer with your winter mix'd.  
You kill'd her husband, and for that vile fault  
Two of her brothers were condemn'd to death,  
My hand cut off, and made a merry jest:  
Both her sweet hands, her tongue, and that more dear  
Than hands or tongue, her spotless chastity,  
Inhuman traitors, you constrain'd and forc'd.  
What would you say, if I should let you speak?  
Villains, for shame you could not beg for grace.  
Hark, wretches, how I mean to martyr you.  
This one hand yet is left to cut your throats,  
Whilst that Lavinia 'tween her stumps doth hold  
The bason, that receives your guilty blood.  
You know, your mother means to feast with me,  
And calls herself Revenge, and thinks me mad. —  
Hark, villains! I will grind your bones to dust,  
And with your blood and it, I'll make a paste;  
And of the paste a coffin I will rear,  
And make two pasties of your shameful heads;  
And bid that strumpet, your unhallow'd dam,  
Like to the earth, swallow her own increase.  
This is the feast that I have bid her to,  
And this the banquet she shall surfeit on;  
For worse than Philomel you us'd my daughter,

and worse than Progne I will be reveng'd.  
and now prepare your throats. — Lavinia come,

*[He cuts their Throats.]*

Receive the blood : and when that they are dead,  
Let me go grind their bones to powder small,  
And with this hateful liquor temper it;  
And in that paste let their vile heads be bak'd. —  
Come, come, be every one officious  
To make this banquet; which I wish may prove  
More stern and bloody than the Centaurs' feast.  
So, now bring them in, for I will play the cook,  
And see them ready 'gainst their mother comes.

*[Exeunt, bearing the dead Bodies.]*

### SCENE III.

The Same. A Pavillion, with Tables, &c.

*Enter LUCIUS, MARCUS, and Goths; with AARON, Prisoner.*

*Luc.* Uncle Marcus, since 't is my father's mind,  
That I repair to Rome, I am content.

*1 Goth.* And ours, with thine, befall what fortune will.

*Luc.* Good uncle, take you in this barbarous Moor,  
This ravenous tiger, this accursed devil.  
Let him receive no sustenance; fetter him,  
Till he be brought unto the empress face,  
For testimony of her foul proceedings.  
And see the ambush of our friends be strong:  
I fear the emperor means no good to us.

*Aar.* Some devil whisper curses in mine ear,  
And prompt me, that my tongue may utter forth  
The venomous malice of my swelling heart!

*Luc.* Away, inhuman dog! unhallow'd slave! —  
Sirs, help our uncle to convey him in. —

*[Exeunt Goths with AARON. Trumpets sound.]*

*The trumpets show the emperor is at hand.*

*Enter SATURNINUS and TAMORA, with Tribunes, Senators, and Others.*

*Sat.* What! hath the firmament more suns than one?

*Luc.* What boots it thee, to call thyself a sun?

*Mar.* Rome's emperor, and nephew, break the parle;  
These quarrels must be quietly debated.  
The feast is ready, which the careful Titus  
Hath ordain'd to an honourable end,  
For peace, for love, for league, and good to Rome:  
Please you, therefore, draw nigh, and take your places.

*Sat.* Marcus, we will.

*[Hautboys sound. The Company sit down at Table.]*

*Enter TITUS, dressed like a Cook, LAVINIA, veiled, young LUCIUS, and Others. TITUS places the Dishes on the Table.*

*Tit.* Welcome, my gracious lord; welcome, dread queen;  
Welcome, ye warlike Goths; welcome, Lucius;  
And welcome, all. Although the cheer be poor,  
'T will fill your stomachs: please you eat of it.

*Sat.* Why art thou thus attir'd, Andronicus?

*Tit.* Because I would be sure to have all well,  
To entertain your highness, and your empress.

*Tam.* We are beholding to you, good Andronicus.

*Tit.* An if your highness knew my heart, you were.  
My lord the emperor, resolve me this:  
Was it well done of rash Virginius,  
To slay his daughter with his own right hand,  
Because she was enforc'd, stain'd, and deflour'd?

*Sat.* It was, Andronicus.

*Tit.* Your reason, mighty lord!

*Sat.* Because the girl should not survive her shame,  
And by her presence still renew his sorrows.

*Tit.* A reason mighty, strong, and effectual;  
A pattern, precedent, and lively warrant,

For me, most wretched, to perform the like. —  
Die, die, Lavinia, and thy shame with thee;

[*He kills LAVINIA.*]

And with thy shame thy father's sorrow die!

*Sat.* What hast thou done? unnatural and unkind!

*Tit.* Kill'd her, for whom my tears have made me blind.

I am as woful as Virginius was.

And have a thousand times more cause than he

To do this outrage; — and it is now done.

*Sat.* What! was she ravish'd? tell who did the deed.

*Tit.* Will 't please you eat? will 't please your highness feed?

*Tam.* Why hast thou slain thine only daughter thus?

*Tit.* Not I; 't was Chiron, and Demetrius:

They ravish'd her, and cut away her tongue,

And they, 't was they, that did her all this wrong.

*Sat.* Go, fetch them hither to us presently.

*Tit.* Why, there they are both, baked in that pie;

Whereof their mother daintily hath fed,

Eating the flesh that she herself hath bred.

'T is true, 't is true; witness my knife's sharp point.

[*Killing TAMORA.*]

*Sat.* Die, frantic wretch, for this accursed deed.

[*Killing TITUS.*]

*Luc.* Can the son's eye behold his father bleed?

There's meed for meed, death for a deadly deed.

[*Killing SATURNINUS. A great Tumult. The People in confusion disperse. MARCUS, LUCIUS, and their Partisans, ascend the Steps before TITUS's House.*]

*Mar.* You sad-fac'd men, people and sons of Rome,

By uproar sever'd, like a flight of fowl

Scatter'd by winds and high tempestuous gusts,

O! let me teach you how to knit again

This scatter'd corn into one mutual sheaf,

These broken limbs again into one body.

*Roman Lord.* Lest Rome herself be bane unto herself,  
And she, whom mighty kingdoms court'sy to,



Like a forlorn and desperate cast-away,  
Do shameful execution on herself.  
But if my frosty signs and chaps of age,  
Grave witnesses of true experience,  
Cannot induce you to attend my words, —  
Speak, Rome's dear friend; as erst our ancestor,  
When with his solemn tongue he did discourse,  
To love-sick Dido's sad attending ear,  
The story of that baleful burning night,  
When subtle Greeks surpris'd king Priam's Troy.  
Tell us, what Sinon hath bewitch'd our ears,  
Or who hath brought the fatal engine in,  
That gives our Troy, our Rome, the civil wound. —  
My heart is not compact of flint, nor steel,  
Nor can I utter all our bitter grief;  
But floods of tears will drown my oratory,  
And break my very utterance, even i' the time  
When it should move you to attend me most,  
Lending your kind commiseration.  
Here is a captain, let him tell the tale;  
Your hearts will throb and weep to hear him speak.

*Luc.* Then, noble auditory, be it known to you,  
That cursed Chiron and Demetrius  
Were they that murdered our emperor's brother;  
And they it was that ravished our sister.  
For their fell faults our brothers were beheaded,  
Our father's tears despis'd, and basely cozen'd  
Of that true hand, that fought Rome's quarrel out,  
And sent her enemies unto the grave.  
Lastly, myself unkindly banished,  
The gates shut on me, and turn'd weeping out,  
To beg relief among Rome's enemies;  
Who drown'd their enmity in my true tears,  
And op'd their arms to embrace me as a friend:  
And I am the turn'd-forth, be it known to you,  
That have preserv'd her welfare in my blood;  
And from her bosom took the enemy's point,

Sheathing the steel in my adventurous body.  
 Alas! you know, I am no vaunter, I;  
 My scars can witness, dumb although they are,  
 That my report is just, and full of truth.  
 But, soft! methinks, I do digress too much,  
 Citing my worthless praise. O! pardon me;  
 For when no friends are by men praise themselves.

*Mar.* Now is my turn to speak. Behold this child;  
 Of this was Tamora delivered;  
 The issue of an irreligious Moor,  
 Chief architect and plotter of these woes.  
 The villain is alive in Titus' house,  
 And, as he is, to witness this is true.  
 Now judge, what cause had Titus to revenge  
 These wrongs, unspeakable, past patience,  
 Or more than any living man could bear.  
 Now you have heard the truth, what say you, Romans?  
 Have we done aught amiss? Show us wherein,  
 And from the place where you behold us now,  
 The poor remainder of Andronici  
 Will, hand in hand, all headlong cast us down,  
 And on the ragged stones beat forth our brains,  
 And make a mutual closure of our house.  
 Speak, Romans, speak! and, if you say, we shall,  
 Lo! hand in hand, Lucius and I will fall.

*Æmil.* Come, come, thou reverend man of Rome,  
 And bring our emperor gently in thy hand,  
 Lucius our emperor; for, well I know,  
 The common voice do cry, it shall be so.

*Mar.* Lucius, all hail! Rome's royal emperor. —

LUCIUS, &c. descend.

Go, go into old Titus' sorrowful house, [To an Attendant.  
 And hither hale that misbelieving Moor,  
 To be adjudg'd some direful slaughtering death,  
 As punishment for his most wicked life. —  
*Lucius, all hail! Rome's gracious governor.*

*Luc.* Thanks, gentle Romans: may I govern so,  
To heal Rome's harms, and wipe away her woe!  
But, gentle people, give me aim awhile, —  
For nature puts me to a heavy task. —  
Stand all aloof; — but, uncle, draw you near,  
To shed obsequious tears upon this trunk. —  
O! take this warm kiss on thy pale cold lips, [*Kisses Titus.*  
These sorrowful drops upon thy blood-stain'd face,  
The last true duties of thy noble son!

*Mar.* Tear for tear, and loving kiss for kiss,  
Thy brother Marcus tenders on thy lips:  
O! were the sum of these that I should pay  
Countless and infinite, yet would I pay them.

*Luc.* Come hither, boy: come, come, and learn of us  
To melt in showers. Thy grandsire lov'd thee well;  
Many a time he danc'd thee on his knee,  
Sung thee asleep, his loving breast thy pillow;  
Many a matter hath he told to thee,  
Meet and agreeing with thine infancy:  
In that respect, then, like a loving child,  
Shed yet some small drops from thy tender spring,  
Because kind nature doth require it so:  
Friends should associate friends in grief and woe.  
Bid him farewell; commit him to the grave;  
Do him that kindness, and take leave of him.

*Boy.* O grandsire, grandsire! even with all my heart  
Would I were dead, so you did live again. —  
O lord! I cannot speak to him for weeping;  
My tears will choke me, if I ope my mouth.

*Enter Attendants, with AARON.*

*1 Rom.* You sad Andronici, have done with woes.  
Give sentence on this execrable wretch,  
That hath been breeder of these dire events.

*Luc.* Set him breast-deep in earth, and famish him;  
There let him stand, and rave and cry for food:  
If any one relieves, or pities him,

For the offence he dies. This is our doom ;  
Some stay to see him fasten'd in the earth.

*Aar.* O! why should wrath be mute, and fury dumb ?  
I am no baby, I, that with base prayers  
I should repent the evils I have done.  
Ten thousand worse than ever yet I did  
Would I perform, if I might have my will :  
If one good deed in all my life I did ,  
I do repent it from my very soul.

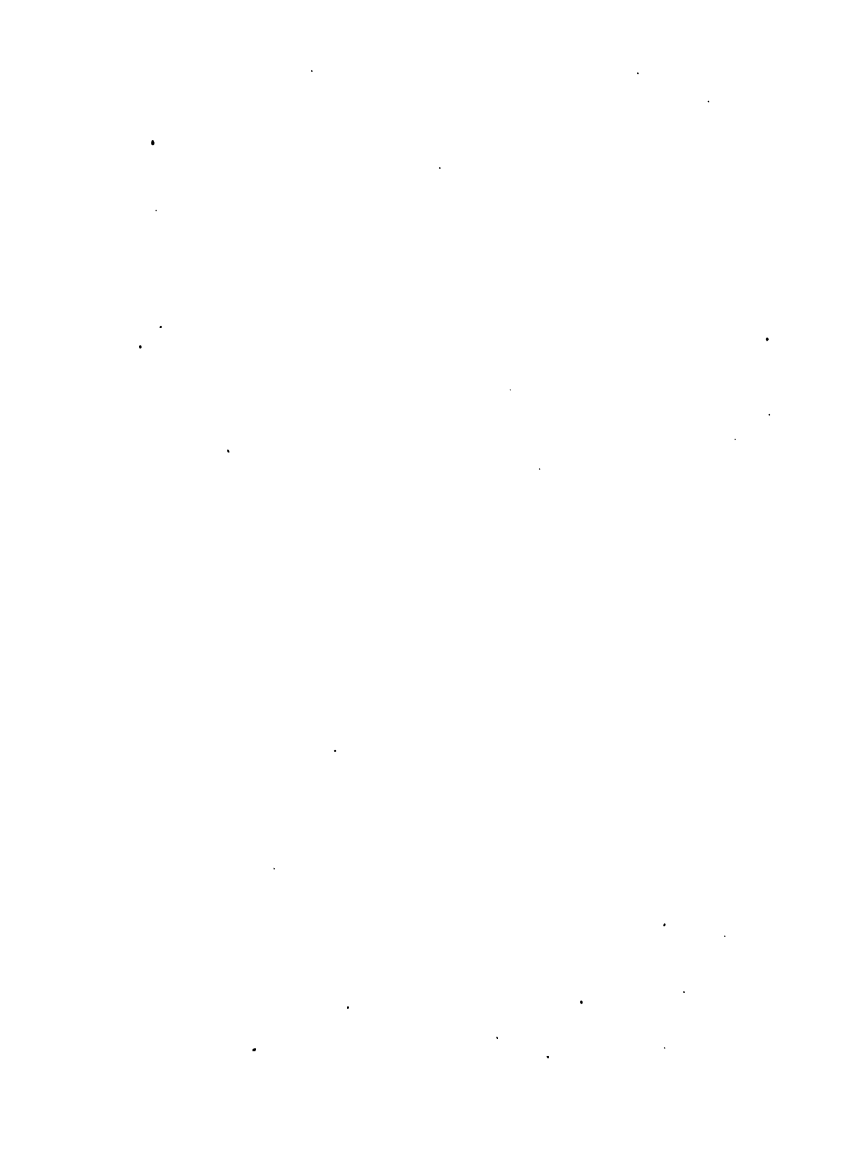
*Luc.* Some loving friends convey the emperor hence ,  
And give him burial in his father's grave.  
My father, and Lavinia, shall forthwith  
Be closed in our household's monument.  
As for that heinous tiger, Tamora ,  
No funeral rite, nor man in mournful weeds ,  
No mournful bell shall ring her burial ;  
But throw her forth to beasts, and birds of prey.  
Her life was beast-like, and devoid of pity ;  
And, being so, shall have like want of pity.  
See justice done on Aaron, that damn'd Moor,  
By whom our heavy haps had their beginning :  
Then, afterwards, to order well the state ,  
That like events may ne'er it ruin.

[*Exeunt.*

---

PRINTED BY BERNHARD TAUCHNITZ.

---











NOV 18 1947



